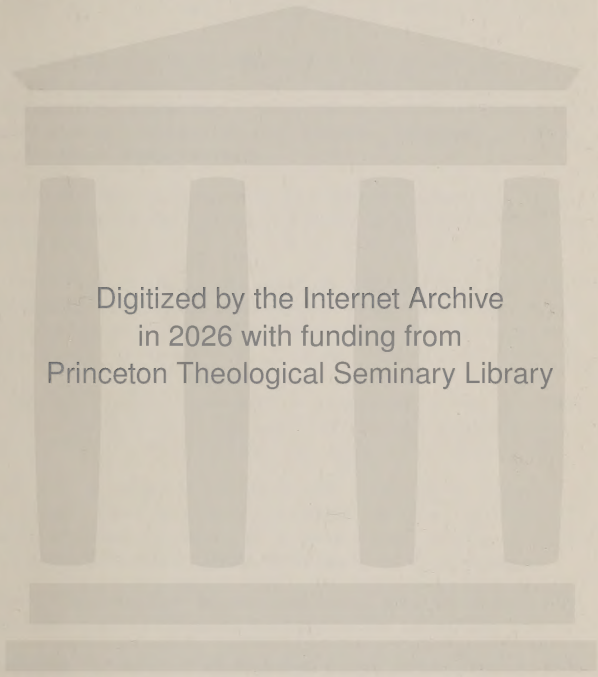
LIBRARY OF PRINCETON
JUN 15 1971
THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
PB2121
.R88


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026 with funding from
Princeton Theological Seminary Library

https://archive.org/details/grammarofwelshla00rowl_0

RECOMMENDATIONS.

"Mr. ROWLAND'S Grammar is not only based on the most approved systems, but, as a manual, is the most important, useful, and satisfactory work that has been penned upon the subject."—*Carnarvon and Denbigh Herald.*

"The author may safely be complimented as having produced a volume well worthy of the age we live in, and of the estimation in which he is held by his countrymen generally. . . . We have little doubt but that it will soon be reckoned amongst the best recognised authorities of Welsh Literature."—*North Wales Chronicle.*

"Decidedly the best Grammar of modern Cymraeg extant, and reflects very great credit upon the learned and judicious author."—*Rev. John Williams Ab Ithel.*

"The best Welsh Grammar, arranged after the model of the Greek and Latin Grammars that have more recently appeared in Germany, and therefore much more complete and precise in the doctrine of words than the earlier Welsh Grammars."—*F. J. Mone, Director des Archivs zu Carlsruhe.*

"Mr. ROWLAND'S Welsh Grammar is always one of my travelling companions. I think it one of the most valuable modern contributions to Welsh Literature."—*A. J. Johnes, Esq., Judge of the County Court.*

"I wish also to construct an Elementary Grammar in Breton. I intend to write on this subject to Mr. ROWLAND, to ask his permission to translate his excellent Grammar, or at least a great portion of it."—*Charles de Gaulle (Barz Bro C'hall), Secretary to the Breuriez Breiz.*

"There was no Grammar worthy of the name or of the British Language until Mr. ROWLAND brought forth his."—*Dr. Rudolf Siegfried.*

"Y mae Mr. ROWLAND wedi cychwyn yn yr iawn gyfeiriad. Nid Grammadeg o'r iaith Seisnig wedi ei gyfieithu a'i draws-gymmhwyso at y Gymraeg yw ei lyfr; ond Grammadeg o'r iaith Gymraeg yn ei holl deithi a'i dulliau priodol ei hun, er ei fod wedi ei ysgrifenu yn Seisneg. Ceir yma holl esgyrn yr iaith, nid yn unig ar wahan, ond hefyd yn eu perthynas â'u gilydd; a theflir goleuni ar y cymmalau bychain sydd yn cyssylltu yr aelodau â'u gilydd."—*Y Traethodydd.*

"Os nad ydym yn camsynied yn fawr, mae tyngedfen y Grammadeg Cymreig hwn i ddyfod yn safon grammadegol yr iaith Gymraeg."—*Yr Haul.*

By the same Author.

Price 4*s.* 6*d.*,

WELSH EXERCISES,

ADAPTED TO THE

THIRD AND FOURTH EDITIONS OF ROWLAND'S GRAMMAR,

WITH COPIOUS EXPLANATORY NOTES.

"We have no doubt that this Exercise-Book will soon take its place as a standard Text-book on the subject in question, as the Author's Grammar has already done."—*Oswestry Advertiser.*

"We are pleased to find that this Work, which is the first of the kind in the Welsh Language, is a worthy sequel to the Grammar; and Mr. Rowland can be safely congratulated upon having brought a thorough knowledge of the rules of one of the most ancient and most interesting branches of the Celtic within the reach and powers of an ordinary English scholar."—*North Wales Chronicle.*

WREXHAM: HUGHES & SON.

BALA: E. A. SAUNDERSON. LONDON: D. NUTT, 270 STRAND.

Price 3*s.* 6*d.*,

PRACTICAL SERMONS,

IN WELSH.

"Yr wyf newydd ddarllen Cyfrol o Bregethau Ymarferol gan y Parch. T. Rowland, Periglor Pennant-Melangell. Nis gall ein Gweinidogion ieuainc wneyd gwell gwaith na phrynu copi yn ddioed. Mewn ystwyth-der iaith, cywirdeb cystrawen, symledd ymadrodd, a gloewder meddwl, bydd y gyfrol yn deilwng o'u hystyriaeth fanylaf, a'u hefelychiad mwyaf diwyd."—PEREDUR, yn y "Dywysogaeth," Awst 27fed.

WREXHAM: HUGHES & SON.

BALA: E. A. SAUNDERSON.

LIBRARY OF PRINCETON
JUN 15 1971
THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

A GRAMMAR

OF

THE WELSH LANGUAGE,

BASED ON THE MOST APPROVED SYSTEMS,

With Copious Examples

FROM SOME OF THE MOST CORRECT WELSH WRITERS.

BY

THOMAS ROWLAND,

RECTOR OF PENNANT-MELANGELL (VIA OSWESTRY), MONTGOMERYSHIRE.

Fourth Edition, Greatly Enlarged and Improved.

WREXHAM:
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY HUGHES & SON.
LONDON: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, & CO.;
D. NUTT, 270 STRAND, W.C.

PRINCETON
THEOLOGICAL

PREFACE TO THE FOURTH EDITION.

GREAT care and labour have been bestowed on the present edition.

The verbs have been rewritten, and the tenses conjugated much more fully and with greater precision than in previous editions.

Many rules have been added in different parts of the Work—some new, and others taken out of the Author's WELSH EXERCISES.

Some hundreds of the Examples have been translated into English, which will be of great assistance in understanding the rules under which the Examples are placed.

Under the Syntax of Prepositions a copious alphabetical list has been added of verbs and other parts of speech which are followed by particular prepositions, with examples and translations into English.

Instead of reprinting the "Questions given to the Candidates for the Powis Exhibition," it was thought proper to frame new questions and adapt them to the Grammar, so that the Student may examine himself, and find answers in the Grammar to all the questions given.

At the end an Index has been added, which, though somewhat copious, is not so full as we could have wished, for want of time: the Third Edition being completely out of print, the Publishers were desirous that the new edition should appear with as little delay as possible.

The whole Work has been carefully revised, and there are not many pages which have not been added to, or otherwise improved; so that we hesitate not to say that the present edition is much less imperfect than the third.

In case any persons, in writing on this branch of literature, should be induced to copy from the pages of this Work, it is but just to hope they will acknowledge whence they have taken their quotations.

PENNANT-MELANGELL, *June* 23, 1876.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THIS Work was undertaken with the view of facilitating the study of the Welsh Language, and of lessening the difficulties that have been wholly passed over in silence by preceding grammarians. It is sometimes asked, whether it is possible to lay down rules that would guide a stranger in acquiring a grammatical and accurate knowledge of the Welsh Language; and some are inclined to answer in the negative. But surely those who have studied the language carefully will feel no hesitation in stating that it is possible to gain as perfect a knowledge of the Welsh as of any other tongue. It is admitted that its idioms and peculiarities are many; but still they are capable of explanation, and are reducible to very plain and definite rules.

This Grammar, or rather this attempt to lay down a foundation of a Grammar of the Welsh Language, was commenced about three years ago; and it has been continued, as other employments afforded opportunities, from that time up to the present. But those who are acquainted with the state and contents of our existing Grammars will, I doubt not, at once confess that a longer period of uninterrupted study is necessary to bring out a work that could pretend to the accuracy and completeness of the Latin and Greek Grammars.

In its preparation, such Welsh Grammars were consulted as were likely to render the greatest aid, as those of *Dr. Davies* and *Dr. W. O. Pughe;* but in "Syntax," the greatest amount of assistance was obtained from the very learned and accurate Essay of the *Rev. T. J. Hughes*, who, at the *Aberffraw Eisteddfod*, obtained the prize offered by the *Lord Bishop of St. David's*, and the *Rev. Charles Williams, of Holyhead.* This Essay, independently of its intrinsic worth, merits great praise, as being the first

regular attempt to explain the principles of Welsh Syntax. In giving definitions of points belonging to universal Grammar, and in exhibiting correspondence of idiom between the Welsh and the Latin and Greek languages, much help was also derived from *Zumpt*, *Key*, *Arnold*, *Matthiæ*, and *Kühner*.

All will allow that a Welsh Grammar, superior to any of those that have been hitherto published, is very much needed; but whether the present Work surpasses its predecessors, must be determined by the reader. It will be seen, there is no doubt, that many deficiencies exist in this production, and that its shortcomings are numerous. However, should a second edition be called for, it is hoped that these deficiencies may be amended, mistakes rectified, and many observations added which have now been omitted, owing partly to want of *time*, and partly to want of *knowledge*. And with this view it would be deemed a kindness if Welsh critics would, either publicly or privately, favour me with hints, emendations, and remarks, so that I may be enabled to send forth a second edition more systematic, more perfect, and more complete.

It is my duty to state that I am under very great obligations to the *Rev. Thomas Briscoe, B.D., Vice-Principal and Tutor of Jesus College, Oxford*, for the kind assistance he has rendered me, both in looking over the Work before it was sent to the Printer, and in correcting the proof-sheets while passing through the press. Were it not for him, and the *Rev. William Briscoe, M.A., Fellow of Jesus College*, it is doubtful whether the book would ever have been published; and if the reader derives any benefit from the Grammar, he, no doubt, will join me in acknowledging our gratitude to these two gentlemen.

THOMAS ROWLAND.

BALA, *Aug.* 8, 1853.

PROPERTY OF
PRINCETON
THEOLOGICAL

CONTENTS.

PART I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

	PAGE
The Alphabet and sounds of the letters	1
Classification of the letters	4
Inflection of vowels	5
Diphthongs	6
Mutations of Consonants	7
Syntactical mutations	7
Etymological mutations	9
Accentuation of words	10
Accent on the penult	10
Accent on the ultima	11
Accent on the antepenult	14
Quantity of words	14
Monosyllables	15
Penults	15
Syllables and words	16
Primitive words	17
Compound words	17
Derivative words	18
Spelling	18
Words to be spelt according to their etymology	19
The prefixes *an*, *di*, *dy*; *cy*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*; *as*, *es*, *ys*, &c.	20
The use of the aspirate *h*	22
The use of the preposition *yn*	23
Nn and *mm*	23
Nc and *ngc*	24
Ff and *ph*	24
Eu and *au*	24
Words of doubtful origin	24
Words cognate with those of other languages	25

PART II.

ETYMOLOGY.

	PAGE
Classification of words	26
Substantives (or nouns)	26
Number of nouns	26
Formation of the plural	27
Formation of the singular from the plural	33
Gender of nouns	34
Cases of nouns	39
Adjectives	40
Terminations of adjectives	40
Gender of adjectives	40
Formed (*a*) by inflection of vowels	40
(*b*) by mutation of consonants	41
Number of adjectives	42
Degrees of comparison	43
Numerals	46
Personal pronouns	48
Reflective pronouns	49
Reciprocal pronouns	50
Demonstrative pronouns	50
Relative pronouns	52
Interrogative pronouns	52
Possessive pronouns	52
Indefinite pronouns	53
Verbs	55
Formation of the moods	55
Infinitive mood	56
Infinitive endings	56
Finite moods	57
Definition of the moods	61
Tenses of verbs	61
Present tense	61
Imperfect	62
Perfect	62
Pluperfect	62
Future	63

PAGE

Future perfect 63
Progressive state 63
Participles 63
Conjugation of the verb *Bod* 65
Auxiliary verbs 72
Conjugation of a regular verb 75
Terminations of the inflected form 75
Dysgu 76
Active voice 76
Participles active 84
Passive voice 85
Participles passive 93
Irregular verbs 94
Myned 94
Dyfod and dawed 96
Gwneyd, gwneuthur, or gwnelyd 98
Gwybod 99
Adnabod and adwaen 101
Cael or caffael 103
Compound verbs of *Bod* 105
Ysgwyd, dwyn, dianc, chwerthin, rhoi, &c. . . . 105
Defective verbs 106
Medd; eb; piau; hwde; moes; byw, and marw . . 106
Y mae genyf, "I have" 109
The Article 111
Adverbs 111
Adverbs of quality 112
of number 113
of order 113
of place 113
of showing 113
of time 114
of quantity 114
of doubting 114
of negation 114
of affirmation 115
of interrogation 115
of comparison 115
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs 115
Conjunctions 116
Copulative; disjunctive; suppositive; concessive; causal; of motive or purpose; of effect or result; explanatory; temporal; comparative; adversative; illative . . 116

PAGE

Prepositions 117
Simple prepositions 117
Prepositions proper 118
Substantive prepositions 119
Compound prepositions 119
Compounds ending with a preposition . . . 119
Compounds ending with a substantive . . . 120
Pronominal prepositions 121
Interjections 123
Prefixes 123
Affixes 128
Noun terminations 128
Abstract 129
Agent 129
Diminutive 130
Promiscuous 130
Adjective terminations 132
Verb terminations (see pp. 56, 75, 85).

PART III.

SYNTAX.

The Article 135
Article before proper names 139
Nouns (or Substantives) 139
Apposition 139
"*Yn* apposition" 140
Nominative case 141
Genitive case 142
Accusative case 145
Vocative case 146
Proper names 147
Adjectives 148
Agreement in Gender 148
Agreement in Number 148
Position 149
Government 150
Accusative after adjectives 152
Comparison 152

PAGE

Numerals 154
Cardinal 154
Ordinal 157
Personal pronouns 157
Connected with verbs 158
Auxiliary pronouns 160
The pronoun *Hi* 160
Connected with nouns 160
Connected with prepositions 161
Apposition and government 161
Fy, *hun*, &c., myself 161
Possessive pronouns 162
Mau and *tau* 162
Eiddof, *eiddot*, &c., mine, thine 162
Government 163
Demonstrative pronouns 164
Hyn, *hyny*, &c. 165
Indefinite pronouns 166
Verbs 172
Agreement 172
Position 173
Government 176
Auxiliary affirmative particles before verbs . . . 178
Possessive pronouns before verbs 178
Before Transitive verbs 178
Before Intransitive and Passive verbs . . . 180
Infinitive Passive 180
Subjunctive mood 181
The verb *Bod* 183
Difference between *sydd*, *mae*, *yw*, and *oes* . . 183
Sydd 184
Mae 185
Oes 187
Yw or *ydyw* 187
Synopsis of *sydd*, *mae*, *oes*, and *yw* 189
Agreement 190
Apposition verbs 191
"*Yn* apposition" 191
Government and position of *yn* 192
Omission of *yn* 193
Infinitive mood 194
Observation on "*i*" before the Infin. . . . 195
Government of the Infinitive 197

PAGE
Participles 197
The difference between *yn*, *gan*, and *dan* . . . 198
Adverbs 199
Position 199
Adverbs of negation 200
Adverbs of comparison 203
Adverbs of quality 203
Adverbs of doubting 204
Adverbs of showing 204
Auxiliary affirmative adverbs 205
The auxiliary *a* 205
The auxiliaries *y*, *yr*, *yd*, and *ydd* 207
Conjunctions 209
Prepositions 211
Mewn and *yn* 211
Different functions of *yn* 213
A (*ag*), *gan*, and *gyda* (*gydag*) 213
At and *i* 213
Tua or *tuag* and *tuag at* 214
Erbyn, *yn erbyn*, *i . . . erbyn* 214
Er and *erys* or *er's* 214
Cer, *ger*; *cerfydd*, *gerfydd*, &c. 214
Tan, *dan*; *traws*, *draws*, &c. 214
Time and distance of place 215
Compound prepositions 215
O, *oddi ar*, *oddi wrth* 215
Gan and *oddi wrth* 216
Rhag and *oddi wrth* 216
Compound prepositions ending with a substantive . . 216
Pronominal prepositions 217
Prepositions after words 218
Interjections 229

CLAUSES.

Transitive clause 230
Infinitive mood followed by its subject 231
Infinitive with subject connected by "o" . . . 232
Infinitive with subject governed by a preposition . . 233

PAGE

Passive voice 235
Y, yr, mai, and *taw* with finite moods 236
Cause clause 239
Infinitive mood followed by its subject 239
Infinitive with subject governed by "*o*" . . . 240
Infinitive with subject governed by the preposition "*i*" . 240
Passive voice 241
Y, yr, mai, and *taw* with finite moods 241
Explanatory cause clause 242
Concessive clause 242
Infinitive followed by its subject 243
Infinitive with subject connected by "*o*" . . . 243
Infinitive with subject governed by the preposition "*i*" . 244
Passive voice 244
Y, yr, mai, and *taw* with finite moods 244
Time clause 245
Construed with finite verbs 245
Construed with finite or infinite verbs 246
Motive clause 247
Subjunctive mood 247
Infinitive mood 248
Effect clause 249
Interrogative clause 250
Predicative questions 250
Answers to predicative questions 251
Nominal questions 253
Wish clause 255
Supposition and Inference clauses 256
Fact supposition 256
Contingent supposition 257
Non-fact supposition 258
Relative clause 260
Simple and indefinite 260
Agreement 261
Position 262
Omission of antecedent 262
Omission of relative 263
Possessive case 264
Negative particles 265
Absolute clause 265
Apposition clause 265

SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS.

PAGE

Radical and *middle* sounds 268
Nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs 268
Intervenient phrase 273
Prepositions 273
Adverbs and conjunctions 273
Interjections 276
Governing words omitted 276
Nasal sound 276
Aspirate sound 278
Vowels aspirated 278

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF WORDS AND PARTICLES . . . 279

EXAMINATION QUESTIONS 288

INDEX 297

EXPLANATION OF MARKS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

Accus. accusative.
Aff. affirm. affirmative.
Asp. aspirate.
Aux. auxiliary.
C. contr. contracted.
Cf. (=confer) compare.
Coll. colloquial.
Def. definite.
E.g. (=exempli gratiâ) for example.
Fr. from.
F. fem. feminine.
F. n. footnote.
Fut. future.
Gr. Greek.
I.e. (=id est) that is.
Imper. imperative.
Imperf. imperfect.
Impers. impersonal.
Indic. indicative.
Indef. indefinite.
Infin. infinitive.
Interr. interrogative.
Irreg. irregular.
L. Latin.
M. mid. middle.
M. mas. masculine.
N. neuter.
N. nas. nasal.
N. W. North Wales.
Nom. nominative.
Pl. plural.
Poss. possessive.
Pr. pres. present.
Pron. pronoun.
Perf. perfect.
Plup. pluperfect.
Pers. personal.
Prep. preposition.
Q. V. (quod vide) which see.
R. root or radical.
Rad. radical.
S. W. South Wales.
S. sing. singular.
Subj. subjunctive.
Vb. verb.
§ section.
= equal to; literal translation.
☞ particular attention.

WELSH GRAMMAR.

PART I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

1. The Welsh Alphabet consists of thirty-one letters:— A a, B b, C c, Ch ch, D d, Dd dd, E e, F f, Ff ff, G g, Ng ng, Ngh ngh, H h, I i, L l, Ll ll, M m, Mh mh, N n, Nh nh, O o, P p, Ph ph, R r, Rh rh, S s, T t, Th th, U u, W w, Y y.

SOUNDS OF THE LETTERS.

2. A is pronounced, when short, like *a* in *man, mat;* when long, like *a* in *far, psalm.*

B = *be,* as in English.

C = *èk,* like *k* in English. It is never soft like *c* in *city.*

Ch[1] = *èχ* (the *c* aspirated) like *ch* of the Dutch in *nacht,* but more guttural than *ch* in the Scottish *loch.*

D = *de,* like the English *d* in *deed, do.*

Dd = *èth* (soft) like *th* in *with, thee;* never like *th* in *thought.*

E = *a,* when short, like *e* in *hen, met;* when long, like *a* in *cane, mare.*

F = *èv,* like the English *v.*

---

[1] *Ch,* followed by *w,* is frequently a radical letter: *chwaer,* sister; *chwerthin,* to laugh.

Ff = *èf*, like the English *f* in *fair, for.*

G = *èg*, like the English *g* in *get, dog:* never soft like *g* in *giant.*

Ng = *èng*, like *ng* of the English in *long, length.*

Ngh has the sound of *ng* with a very strong breathing. "Its power may be made out in the name Nottingham, by suspending the breath on the letter *i*, instead of the proper division." Notti-*ngh*am.

H = *haitch* or *he*, has the same sound as *h* of the English in *horrid, hand;* but is never silent like *h* in *hour.*

I = *e*, when short, very like *i* in *pin;* when long, like *ee* in *fleet.*

L = *èl*, like the English *l.*

Ll = *èll*, has no sound in any language corresponding to it. The Spanish *ll*[1] and the Italian *gl* are somewhat like it.

M = *èm*, as in English.

Mh has the sound of *m* with a very strong breathing. "Its power may be found by uniting the sound of *m*, in the word *am*, to *h*, in the word *here*, by a quick pronunciation of the phrase *I am here.*" I a *m*here.

N = *èn*, as in English.

Nh has the sound of *n* with a very strong breathing. "Its power is perceivable in the word *inherent.*"

O = *o*, when short, like *o* in *not, got;* when long, somewhat similar to *o* in *bone, note.*

P = *pe*, as in English.

Ph = *èph*, *ùph* or *phe*, like the English *f* in *fair*, or *ph* in *philosopher.*

R = *èr*, something like the English *r* in *rough.*

Rh like the Greek ῥ; as in ῥήτωρ.

S = *ès*, like *s* in *sin, same:* never like *s* in *praise, choose.*

T = *te*, like the English *t* in *to, fat.*

Th = *èth* (hard) like *th* in *thin, thick;* never like *th* in *thou.*

U = *ë*, when short, somewhat similar to *i* in *this, live*, or *u* in *busy;* when long, somewhat similar to *e* in *me.*

---

[1] Johnes, in his "Philological Proofs," &c., says, "The aspirated *ll* of the Spaniards is very like the Welsh *ll*, and is most probably a relic of Celtic pronunciation."

W = *oo*, when short, like *oo* in *good;* when long, like *oo* in *boom.*

Y has two sounds. Its primary sound is like that of *u* in *fur, run,* or *e* in *her, stern;* its secondary sound is like that of the Welsh *u.* Both sounds are exemplified in *myfyr* and *hyny.*

3. The *secondary* sound of *y* occurs—

a. In monosyllables; as, *llym,* sharp, *tyn,* tight, *hyn,* this.

(*a*) But the following words are exceptions, having the *primary* sound: *dy,* thy, *dyd* and *dyt,* hold! *fy* (obs. *my*), my, *myn,* by, in swearing, *y,* the, that, and expletive adv., *yd* and *ydd,* expletive adv., *ym,* my and in, *yn,* in, &c., *yng,* in, *yr*=y, *ys,* truly, *yth,* thy, and the expletive *y* joined to pronouns, as *y'm, y'th, y'i, y'n, y'ch, y'u.*

b. In the last syllable of words of more than one syllable; as, ysgrifen*ydd,* writer, er*fyn,* to beg. ☞ If a syllable is added, the *primary* sound is resumed; as, ysgrifen*ydd*ion, writers, er*fyn*iau, petitions.[1]

c. If *w* and *y* are pronounced separately in monosyllables (as in the words *mŵyn* = mw-yn, *bŵyd* = bw-yd, *cŵyn* = cw-yn, *gŵyl* = gw-yl), *y* has the *secondary* sound in the derivatives and compounds of such words; as, *mwynhau,* enjoy, *bwyta,* eat, *cwyno,* complain, *gwylnos,* wake-night.

(*a*) But if *w* and *y* are pronounced conjointly (as, *chwŷn, chwŷrn, chwŷs*), *y* has its *primary* sound in derivatives and compounds; as, *chwynu, chwyrnu, chwysu.* To this there are several exceptions; such as *gwyneb, gwynfyd, diwygiad, &c.*

d. In the prefix *cyd,* and sometimes in *cyn;* as *cyd*eistedd, *cyd*fyned, *cyn*oesoedd; and in adjectives and adverbs prefixed to other words; as, *syn*fyfyrio, *hyll*dremio, *cryf*arfog.

(*a*) These are by some written with a hyphen, *syn-fyfyrio, cryf-arfog,* which may be regarded as indicating that *y* in the prefixed word is to have the same sound as when the word stands unconnected.

4. In other circumstances this letter has its *proper* or *primary* sound; as, *cyntaf, syndod, cyfiawnder.*

Exceptions: *teyrnas* and its derivatives; the derivatives of *rhyw, gwyw,* and *byw* (except *bywyd,* &c.); and some other words.

5. Thus all the letters of the Welsh alphabet, except *y,* have only one sound respectively; and in all their combinations this sound is preserved

---

[1] But when a syllable ends with *y,* and the next syllable begins with a vowel, the primary sound is not resumed: *gwely,* a bed, *gwelyau,* beds; *lletty,* a lodging, *llettya,* to lodge.—(Rowland's "Welsh Exercises," §. 1.)

without any change, or without its becoming quiescent. Such diphthongs as *ae*, *oe*, (e.g. *daeth*, *oen*,) are often pronounced as if written *au* and *ou*; but a correct reader will give them their proper sound. Therefore, as *Dr Pughe* says, "the sounds of the *letters* must be considered as the perfect standard of the pronunciation of the Welsh language, and the criterion of correct speaking."

6. *J*, *k*, *q*, *v*, *x*, and *z*, occur in foreign names. Many writers, however, will not admit them into our language, but write all foreign words with our own characters. Thus, Job = *Iob*; Ezeciel = *Eseciel*; Quinctilian = *Cwinctilian*; Virgil = *Fyrgil* (or *Fyrsil*); Alexander = *Alecsander*; Zadoc = *Sadoc*.

7. *Ch*, *dd*, *ff*, *ll*, *ng*, *ph*, *th*, &c., though double letters, represent but one simple sound.

8. Several attempts have been made from the time of *Dr. John David Rhys*, who lived some three hundred years ago, to that of *Dr. William Owen Pughe*, to render the established Orthography more simple, and in accordance with the genius and peculiarities of the language; but all their labours have proved in vain.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE LETTERS.

9. Letters are divided into *vowels* and *consonants*.

10. Seven of the letters are vowels: *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, *w*, *y*: *a*, *e*, *o*, *w*, *y*, are mutable: *i*,[1] *u*, immutable.

(*a*) *I* and *w* are sometimes consonants (§§ 396-398).

11. Consonants are divided into *radical* (or *initial*), and *derivative* (or *non-initial*).

12. The radical consonants are those which begin words in their original state. The derivative consonants are such as are mutations of some of the radical, and which cannot stand at the head of any Welsh words in their original state. They are always influenced by some preceding word; and when this word is taken away, they reassume their radical form. Thus, words must be looked for in the Dictionary either under the *vowels* or the *radical consonants*.[2]

13. The radical consonants are again divided into *immutable* and *mutable*.

14. The immutable consonants are *ch* (followed by *w*),

---

[1] *I* in *brith*, speckled, fem. *braith*, is probably an exception. *Sais*, Englishman, is sometimes written *Saeson* in the pl.

[2] But the words *fal*, *fel*, *felly*, *fe*, *fo*, *fy*, which are either contractions or mutations of words beginning with vowels or radical consonants, are to be looked for under *f*.

Such words as *lefain*, *lamp*, *lwmp*, *lôn*, which are not originally Welsh, must be looked for under *l*.

ff, h, n, s. These never undergo any change whatever, but remain steady and immoveable under all circumstances.

15. The mutables are nine: *c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh.* These are changed into other letters of the same organ, when preceded by certain governing words. *C, p, t,* undergo *three* changes; *g, b, d, two;* and *ll, m, rh, one.*

16. The derivative consonants are *b, ch, d, dd, f, g, ng ngh, l, m, mh, n, nh, ph, r,* and *th,* which are modifications of the *mutable* consonants.

(*a*) The letters, *b, d, g, m, n,* are both *radical* and the *derivatives* of *p, t, c, b, d.* They are radical in

*B*ys, *finger.*	*G*wraig, *wife.*	*N*ain, *grandmother.*
*D*afad, *sheep.*	*M*odryb, *aunt.*	

But they are modifications of *p, t, c, b, d,* in

Dy *b*en (rad. *p*en).	Dy *g*ar (rad. *c*ar).	*Fy n*afad (rad. *d*afad).
Dy *d*ad (rad. *t*ad).	Fy *m*ys (rad. *b*ys).	

17. Consonants are also divided according to the organs of speech chiefly employed in uttering them.

α.	*B, f, ff, m, mh, p, ph,* are	*labials.*
β.	*D, dd, n, nh, t, th, s,*	*linguals* (or *dentals*).
γ.	*C, ch, g, ng, ngh, h,*	*gutturals.*
δ.	*Ll, l, rh, r,*	*palatals.*

INFLECTIONS OF VOWELS.

18. The vowels which admit of being changed into other vowels are, *a, e, o, w, y.* They are changed (*a*) to distinguish number; as *dafad,* sheep, pl. *defaid;* (*b*) to distinguish gender; as *llwm,* bare, fem. *llom;* (*c*) to form the 3rd pers. sing. fut. of verbs; as *safaf,* I will stand, 3d pers. *saif,* he will stand; (*d*) to render words more euphonious; as *dwfr,* water, *dyfroedd.*

A	is changed into	*ai;*	as dafad, *a sheep,* defaid, *sheep.*
		e;	as glân, *clean,* glendid, *cleanliness.*
		ei;	as bardd, *a bard,* beirdd, *bards.*
		y;	as cadarn, *strong,* cedyrn, *strong,* pl.
E	into	*i;*	as draen, *thorn,* drain, *thorns.*
		u;	as maes, *field,* meusydd, *fields.*
		y;	as pabell, *tent,* pebyll, *tents.*
O	into	*y;*	as porth, *porch,* pyrth, *porches.*
W	into	*o;*	as trwm, *heavy,* trom, *heavy,* fem.
		y;	as pwn, *pack,* pynau, *packs.*
Y	into	*e;*	as brych, *speckled,* brech, *speckled,* fem.

DIPHTHONGS.

19. *Dr. Davies* divides the diphthongs into *proper* and *improper*.

20. The *proper* diphthongs are the following:

ae	alaeth, *grief.*	eu	breuddwyd, *dream.*	oian, *to listen.*	
ai	henaint, *old age.*	ew	llew, *lion.*	ow	*alas!*
au	aur, *gold.*	ey	teyrn, *king.*	uw	Duw, *God.*
aw	llaw, *hand.*	iw	lliw, *colour.*	wy	pwy, *who?*
ei	heneiddio, *to grow old.*	oe	oed, *age.*	yw	rhyw, *sort.*

21. The *improper* diphthongs are the following:

I before a vowel.

ia	iâd, *pate.*	io	Iôr, *Lord.*
ie	ierthi, *goads.*	iy	iyrchell, *young roe.*

W before a vowel.

wa	gwâg, *empty.*	wo	gwobr, *reward.*
we	chwêch, *six.*	wu	gwull, *flowers.*
wi	gwîn, *wine.*		

I before a diphthong.

iae	cyffelybiaeth, *similitude.*	iei	ieithydd, *linguist.*
iai	anghyfiaith, *of a strange tongue.*	ieu	ieuaf, *youngest.*
iau	lliwiau, *colours.*	iew	iewan, *scream.*
iaw	cyfiawn, *just.*	ioe	erioed, *ever.*

W before a diphthong.

wae	chwaer, *sister.*	weu	gweunydd, *meadows.*
wai	gwain, *sheath.*	wew	gwew, *pungency.*
wau	gwaudd, *daughter-in-law.*	wiw	gwiw, *worthy.*
waw	gwawd, *irony.*	wyw	gwyw, *withered.*
wei	gweini, *to serve.*		

22. **Inflections.** *Ae* is changed into *ei* and *eu:* as,

Maen, *stone*, pl. *meini.* Maes, *field*, pl. meusydd.

Ai and *ei* are in a few instances changed into *a:* as,

Gwraig, *woman*, pl. gwragedd.	Lleidr, *thief*, pl. lladron.
Dail, *leaves of a book*, sing. dalen.	Neidr, *snake*, pl. nadroedd.
Chwain, *fleas*, sing. chwanen.	Deigr, *tear*, pl. dagrau.

Aw is very frequently changed into *o:* as,

Mawl, *praise*, vb. moli.	Caws, *cheese*, sing. cosyn.
Prawf, *proof*, vb. profi.	Brawd, *brother*, pl. brodyr.
Tlawd, *poor*, pl. tlodion.	Llawr, *floor*, pl. lloriau.

(*a*) *Aw* is sometimes changed into *ew* and *ow*. Cawr, *giant*, pl. cewri. Cawg, *basin*, pl. cowgiau. But the change of *aw* into *ow* is disapproved of by many critics, who maintain that the diphthong should either be changed into *o*, or remain in its radical form. Thus the derivative of *llidiawg*, angry, should be either llidiogrwydd or llidiawgrwydd.

Oe is in a few instances changed into *wy* and *ae:* as,

Croen, *skin*, pl. crŵyn. Oen, *lamb*, pl. ŵyn. Troed, *foot*, pl. traed.

MUTATIONS OF CONSONANTS.

23. "The principle of *literal mutation*, as a regular system, is peculiar to the Celtic dialects; though the effect of such an aptitude in some of the letters to change their sound, is seen to pervade all languages. But it regulates some of the primary forms of construction in these tongues, as well with respect to syntax as to the composition of words."[1]

24. The mutable consonants, or the consonants capable of assuming other forms of modifications, are the following: *C, P, T, G, B, D, Ll, M, Rh.* These are divided into three *classes*, or, as *Dr. Davies* calls them, *declensions*, with three letters in each.

25. The *first class* comprises **c, p, t**: the *second*, **g, b, d**: the *third*, **ll, m, rh.**

26. When these letters are in their original or unchanged forms, they are said to be in the *radical* sound; but when they are changed into other letters, owing to the influence that the word or syllable, which *immediately precedes*, has over them, they are said to be in the *middle* (or soft), the *nasal*, or the *aspirate* sound. Take, for instance, the word *câr*, a friend.

Rad.	*Mid.*	*Nasal.*	*Asp.*
Câr, *a friend.*	dy *g*âr.	fy *ngh*âr.	ei *ch*âr.

27. These various alterations in the form of the nine mutables take place, (1) *In syntax*, which may be called *syntactical mutation;* (2) *In the composition of words*, which may be called *etymological mutation.*

28. **Syntactical mutation.** To treat of the changes which

[1] *See* Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 13.

consonants undergo in Syntax, belongs properly to that division of Grammar; but as this subject is one of peculiar importance, and must frequently be mentioned before we come to treat of Syntax, it is expedient to acquaint the student with its leading principles as early as possible. Persons, who are not acquainted with the Welsh language from their infancy, always complain that they are puzzled with the continual changes of the consonants. This may appear to them a greater difficulty, inasmuch as the languages with which they may be conversant have nothing analogous. This constitutes the most peculiar characteristic of the British tongue; and it is said that very few languages, except its sister dialects, have anything in common with it. "In the changes and variations of these mutables lies a great part of the art and mystery of this very peculiar tongue, the most curious, perhaps, and the most delicate for its structure of any language in the world."[1] It must not be supposed, however, that this difficulty is insurmountable; the mutations are made systematically, and they are all reducible to definite rules, which will be found interspersed throughout the present work, with a synopsis of the whole at the end.

29. The changes are made for two purposes; *first*, to distinguish words, to show their various relations and connections, and to fix and ascertain their proper meaning;"[2] *secondly*, "to distinguish the sound, to ease the pronunciation, and to render it smooth and harmonious."[3]

30. This principle is not confined to those parts of speech denominated "declinable," as the term "declension," used by *Dr. Davies*, would lead the classical scholar to suppose; but it extends also to some of those which, by grammarians, are termed "indeclinable." Thus the conjunction *pan*, when preceded by *a*, takes the aspirate sound. "*A phan* ddaeth efe," *and when he came.*

31. The following table exhibits the changes of which each letter is susceptible:—

Observation. — The pronouns, which stand at the head of the table, govern the sounds over which they are respectively placed. They will

[1] Dr. T. Llewelyn's Remarks, &c., p. 58. [2] *Ib.*, p. 67. [3] *Ib.*, p. 66.

aid a person well acquainted with the language to find out the names of the different sounds, but are of no assistance to a stranger, whose ear does not immediately direct him to ascertain the vocal mutations.

		Radical.[1] *Eu*, their.	*Middle.* *Dy*, thy.	*Nasal.* *Fy*, my.	*Aspirate.* *Ei*, her.
1 Class.	C	Câr, *a friend*	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	P	Pen, *a head*	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	T	Tâd, *a father*	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2 Class.	G	Gŵr, *a man*	—ŵr [2]	Ngŵr	
	B	Bara, *bread*	Fara	Mara	
	D	Duw, *God*	Dduw	Nuw	
3 Class.	Ll	Llaw, *a hand*	Law		[3]
	M	Mam, *a mother*	Fam		
	Rh	Rhaw, *a spade*	Raw		

32. Thus the *first class* is susceptible of the three changes; the *middle, nasal,* and *aspirate.* The *second class* of two; the *middle* and *nasal.* The *third class* of one only; the *middle.*

33. ☞ The radical sound supplies the aspirate of the *second class,* and the nasal and aspirate of the *third.* (Ei *g*wr; fy *ll*aw; ei *ll*aw.)

(*a*) The words *ni, na,* and *oni* form an exception. These are followed by the *asp.* of the 1st class, and the *mid.* of the 2d and 3d. (See *Synoptical View,* at the end.)

34. **Etymological mutation.**—The mutable consonants are susceptible of changes in composition of words. With few exceptions, their mutations are the same as those in syntax, and the principle by which they are changed into other letters is the same. Thus in the word *anfuddiol,* compounded of *an* and *buddiol, b* is changed into *f,* because it is governed by the preceding particle *an.*

(*a*) Sometimes the last letter of the preceding syllable is influenced by the following syllable.

---

[1] Radicalis, mollis, liquida, aspirata.—Dr. Davies. Radical, soft, aspirate, light.—Dr. Pughe. Radical, vocal, nasal, aspirate.—Spurrell.

[2] Omission of the initial letter is the sign of the middle sound of *G.*

[3] Some few writers, following the corrupt pronunciation of certain parts of S. W., change *m* into *mh* and *n* into *nh* after the fem. pron. *ei,* her. Ei *mh*am, *her mother.* Ei *nh*ain, *her grandmother.*

The letters *g*, *b*, *d*, are sometimes changed into *c*, *p*, *t*, if a syllable follows; as

Teby*g*, *like*, teby*c*ach. Gwly*b*, *wet*, gwly*p*ach. Tlaw*d*, *poor*, tlo*t*ach.

P and *t* are sometimes respectively changed into *m* and *n*; as,

Pum*p*, pum*m*ed.	Tym*p*, tym*m*or.
Dan*t*, dan*n*edd.	Meddian*t*, meddian*n*au.

(*b*) The letter *ff* occurs in some words where we should expect *f*; as,

Coffâu (cof-hau), *to call to mind.*
Cyffylog (cy-byl), *a woodcock.*
Cyffwrdd (cyf-hwrdd), *to touch.*
Cyffelyb (cy-mal), *like.*

35. Letters are changed in the composition of words merely for the sake of euphony: an*n*ysgedig for an*d*ysgedig; di*b*en for di*p*en. [The same principle extends to a certain degree in Greek and Latin: συλλαμβάνω for συνλαμβάνω; συμπάσχω for συνπάσχω; *colligo* for *conligo*; *accipio* for *adcipio*.]

36. In forming compound words, the preceding component part, whether a mere prefix or a more substantial word, requires that the following syllable should be in the *middle* sound.

Am*g*ylchu (fr. am-cylchu), *to surround.*
Gorsedd*f*ainc (fr. gorsedd-*m*ainc), *a throne.*
Ar*g*raff (fr. ar-craff), *inscription.*
Brenhin*d*y (fr. brenin-*t*y), *a king's palace.*

37. The above is the rule; but when the preceding syllable is nothing more than a common prefix, the rule is very frequently violated. The most irregular prefixes are *a*, *an*, *cy*, *cyn* (first) *e*, *en*, *gor*, *tra*, and *as*, *es*, *ys*, with their compounds, *cys*, *dis*, *dys*, &c.

The government of these, as well as the other prefixes, is explained under § 386.

ACCENTUATION OF WORDS.

38. Accent on the penult.—*Words of two syllables and upwards are accentuated on the penult;* that is, *on the last syllable but one.*

39. Accordingly, when the word is lengthened by a syllable or syllables suffixed, the accent moves towards the end. Thus,

Perch'en, *a possessor*	Accent on the first syllable.
Perchen'og, *a possessor*	,, second syllable.
Perchenog'aeth, *possession*	,, third syllable.
Perchenogaeth'au, *possessions*	,, fourth syllable.

40. Accent on the ultima.—Infinitive verbs ending with the suffix *hau* or *âu*, and such of the finite tenses of the same verbs as have a monosyllable for their termination, are accented on the last syllable.

Infin.	Glan*hau'*.	Byw*hau'*.	Cryf*hau'*.
	Nac*âu'*.	Caniat*âu'*.	Iach*âu'*.
Fin.	Glan*haf'*.	Glan*hei'*.	Glan*hawn'*.

(*a*) Some few prefer the open form *glanhäau*, placing a diæresis over the first syllable of the suffix : others make two syllables of *hau*, *au*, &c., and thus accent the word on the penult.

Glanhäu. Glanhëi. Glanhäwn.

(*b*) *The circumflex accent and h.*—The circumflex over the verbal suffix *hau* or *au* is intended to show the *accent*, not the *quantity :* hence some maintain that, as *h* performs the same office, the circumflex is unnecessary when the *h* is introduced : others make use of both, writing *glanhâu*, *bywhâu*, &c. As the accent naturally falls on the syllable beginning with *h*, it would be better to omit the circumflex except in those cases where *h* is inadmissible before *au*. See § 96 (*a*).

41. Nouns ending with the suffix *hâd* (or *âd*) are accented on the last syllable ; as

Coff*hâd ;* glan*hâd ;* byw*hâd ;* cryf*hâd*.

(*a*) This exception is accounted for by the circumstance of two syllables being contracted into one. For instance, *glanhâd* would be written in full, *glanhäad*, and it would thus have the accent placed on the proper syllable, that is, on '*ha*.' Hence some writers, desirous of lessening the number of exceptions, prefer the more open *glanhäad*, to the contracted forms *glanhâd*, &c.

42. Infinitive verbs ending with *oi*, and some with *eu*, have the accent on the last syllable.

Oi.	Ymdroi'.	Gordoi'.	Parotoi'.	Crynhoi'.
	Osgoi'.	Amdoi'.	Cyffroi'.	Deffroi'.
Eu.	Cyfleu'.	Dileu'.	Dyneu'.	Dyheu'.

43. And if the termination of the finite tenses of such verbs be monosyllabic, the accent is generally on it ; but if it be of more than one syllable, the accent assumes its proper place.

One syll. Paroto*i'* ; paroto*wn'* ; paroto*wch'*.
Two syll. Paroto*'af ;* paroto*'ais ;* paroto*'aist*.

(*a*) This exception is accounted for on the same ground as the preceding ; for, etymologically speaking, the terminations *oi*, *eu*, *own*, &c., are not one, but two syllables. For instance, *ymdroi*, *cyfleu*, *parotown*, are divisible into *ymdro-i*, *cyfle-u*, *paroto-wn*. Hence some writers always place a diæresis over the former syllable, thus indicating that the accent should fall on it : *ymdröi*, *cyflëu*, *parotöwn*. Usually, however, the two syllables are considered as one.

44. The observations made under § 43 (*a*) are applicable to the finite tenses of *bwyta*, to eat, *addaw*, to promise, *gadaw*, to leave, *gwrandaw*, to listen, *taraw*, to strike, and their derivatives, *ymadaw*, *ymwrandaw*, *ymdaraw*, &c.

One syll.	Gwrand*awn'*.	Gwrand*ewch'*.
Two syll.	Gwrand*aw'af*.	Gwrand*ew'i*.

45. Some adjectives in *us*, formed from verbs in *hau* or *âu*, *oi*, and *eu*, and from other words, are accented on the ultima.

Bywhaus', *enlivening*.	Ymarhous', *dilatory*.
Parhaus', *lasting*.	Cyfleus', *convenient*.
Crynhous', *tidy*.	Chwareus', *playful*.
Cyffrous', *exciting*.	Ammheus', *doubtful*.
Deffrous', *wakeful*.	Trofaus', *perverse*.

(*a*) Or *bywhäus*, *cyffröus*, *cyflëus*, &c., the same as above, § 43 (*a*).

45 (1). Plural nouns ending in *feydd* (as *porfeydd*, pl. of *porfa*) have the accent on the ultima.

Porfeydd', *pastures*.	Torfeydd', *multitudes*.
Golygfeydd', *sceneries*.	Trofeydd', *turnings*.

(*a*) Or *porfëydd*, *golygfëydd*, &c., as above, § 43 (*a*).

46. Dissyllables beginning with the negative prefix *di* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Diben; dios; diblant; diawch; didraul,

are pronounced as if written

Di ben; di os; di blant; di awch; di draul.

(*a*) The word *dibris*, when it signifies *priceless*, is accented on the ultima,—*dibris'*; when=*reckless*, on the penult,—*di'bris*.

47. Dissyllabic adjectives beginning with the particle *go* are frequently pronounced as two separate words. Thus,

Gobrudd; godaer; godrwm; goddig; gogloff,

are pronounced as if written

Go brudd; go daer; go drwm; go ddig; go gloff.

(*a*) In fact, although these words, and many others, are recorded in Dr. Pughe's Dictionary as compound words, and occur sometimes as such; for example,

"O Dduw gwyn! i bryfyn brych
On'd oedd *odrwm* dy edrych?"[1]

yet, for the most part, they are very properly written as distinct words.

48. Some verbs, beginning with the prefix *ym*, have the

[1] "O blessed God! to a mean worm was it not melancholy to behold Thee?"

accent placed on the last syllable of the *3rd pers. sing. of future indic.* and *2nd pers. sing. imperative;* as,

Ymweled: ymwel'. Ymguddio: ymgudd'.
Ymolchi: ymolch'. Ymadaw: ymad'.

49. Some dissyllables beginning with *ys* are accented on the last syllable; as,

Ysbawd, *shoulder.* Ystâd, *state.* Ystên, *jug.*
Ysgrêch, *scream.* Ystanc, *stake.* Ystorm, *storm.*
Yslac, *slack.* Ystôr, *store.* Ystwr, *stir.*

(*a*) Some maintain that these words should be considered as monosyllables, and written *sbawd, sgrêch, slac, stâd, stanc,* &c.

(*b*) When the last syllable is long, it has often, very properly, the circumflex over it: *ysgrêch, ystâd,* &c.

50. Substantives ending in *awdr* are generally accented on the ultima.

Creawdr, *Creator.* Iachawdr, *Saviour.*
Barniawdr, *Judge.* Llywiawdr, *governor.*
Bywiawdr, *Giver of life.* Pryniawdr, *redeemer.*
Dysgawdr, *teacher.* Amherawdr, *emperor.*

(*a*) Instead of *awdr*, the open form *awdwr* is now preferred. *Creawdwr, dysgawdwr,* &c.

51. The personal pronouns *myfi, tydi, efe* and *efo, hyhi, nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy,* (I, thou, he, she, we, you, they,) are accented on the last syllable.

Myfi'; tydi'; efe'; efo'; hyhi', &c.

(*a*) *Myfi, tydi, nyni, chwychwi,* have, in some districts of North Wales, the accent laid on the proper syllable; that is, on the penult. ('Tyred efo my'fi,' *come with me.*)

52. Such compound prepositions as *goruwch*, above, *goris*, below, *uwchlaw*, above, *gerllaw*, near, *gerbron*, before, *heblaw*, beside, *islaw*, below, are accented on the last syllable; as,

Goruwch'; goris'; uwchlaw'; gerllaw'; heblaw'.

(*a*) But these, except such as are compounded with *gor*, which is an inseparable preposition, are very properly considered by many as separate words, requiring to be written *uwch law, ger llaw, heb law,* &c.

52 (1). When the prep. *yn* is prefixed to a monosyllable (thus forming a dissyllable) the accent falls on the ultima. See § 98 (*b*).

Y'mhlith' (=ym mhlith), *amongst.* Y'mysg' (=ym mysg), *amongst.*

53. "Names of towns, villages, farms, and other descriptive proper names, present frequent exceptions, which are

accented as if the words comprising them were written separately."

Caergrawnt=Caer Grawnt, *Cambridge.*
Abergwaun=Aber Gwaun, *Fishguard.*
Penybont=Pen y bont, *Bridgend.*

(*a*) Hyphens are sometimes, and very properly, inserted between the component parts of the names.

Pen-y-bont.	Glan-llyn.	Bryn-du.
Maes-têg.	Cefn-côch.	Ty'n-y-llan.

54. Several other words, which do not admit of a classification, are accented on the ultima; such as

Achlân, *altogether.*
Aflêr, *untidy.*
Aie (=ai e), *is it?*
Amgau, *to encompass.*
Argau, *to shut in.*
Anghytûn, *discordant.*
Cyd-ddwyn (=cyd ddwyn), *to bear with.*
Cyd-fyw (=cyd fyw), *to live with.*
Cyhŷd (also cy'hyd), *as long.*
Cytûn, *unanimous.*
Diwahân, *undivided.*
Eriôed, *ever.*
Gwahân, *separation.*
Onide (=onid e), *is it not?*
Prydnawn, *afternoon.*
Trachefn, *again.*
Ychwaith (or chwaith), *either.*
Ymdrîn (also ym'drin), *to meddle.*
Ymddŵyn, *to conceive.* (Ym'ddwyn, *to behave.*)
Ymgau, *to shut one's self.*
Ymgom, *chat.*
Ymwneyd, *to deal with.*
Ymnhêdd, *to entreat.*
Ysgolhaig, *scholar.*

55. Accent on the antepenult.—Some trisyllables having *w* as the second syllable, have the accent on the first; as,

Medd'wdod; gwel'wlas; gwedd'wdod; gwedd'wdai.
Mar'wnad; hoe'wder; chwer'wder; gwae'wffon.

56. The words *Seisoneg, Seisones,* and *Seisonig* are accentuated on the first syllable: *Seis'oneg, Seis'ones, Seis'onig.* Hence many writers, in order to have the accent placed on the penult, write *Seisneg, Seisnes, Seisnig.*

QUANTITY OF WORDS.[1]

57. All syllables are *long, short,* or *half long* (or *middle*); and, in general, their quantity may be known by their final consonants.

58. Monosyllables.—All monosyllables are either *long* or *short.*

---

[1] A considerable portion of this chapter is taken from 'Ieithyddiaeth' by *Cymro Ilwyr,* in the 'Gwladgarwr,' and from the Rev. D. S. Evans' 'Llythyraeth.' Both these writers have treated the Quantity of words very minutely.

(*a*) As in gender and pl. number of substantives, so in the quantity of words, the dialects of North and South Wales are often at variance. Some words are long in N. W., and short in S. W. ; and *vice versâ*. For example, *llesg* and *hesp* are long in N. W. (llêsg, hêsp), and short in S. W. (llèsg, hèsp.) *Heb* and *nid* are short in N. W. (hêb, nîd), and long in S. W. (hèb, nìd).

59. Monosyllables ending in *ch, d, dd, f, g, s, th,* are generally **long.**

ch. Cwch, *boat.* *dd.* Bodd, *pleasure.* *g.* Cêg, *mouth.* *th.* Llath, *yard.*
d. Bad, *boat.* *f.* Llef, *voice.* *s.* Pys, *peas.* Syth, *straight.*

(*a*) *Byth* (ever) is common (bŷth or bỳth), but should properly be *long.*

60. Monosyllables ending in *c, ng, m, p, t,* are generally **short.**

c. Llac, *loose.* *m.* Llam, *leap.* *t.* Ffrwt, *sudden.*
ng. Ing, *strait.* *p.* Gwep, *visage.* Twt, *neat.*

61. Monosyllables ending in *b, ff (ph), ll, l, n, r,* are **uncertain ;** *i.e.* some are *short,* and some are *long.*

Short.	*Long.*	*Short.*	*Long.*
Cob, *embankment.*	Mab, *son.*	Tal, *tall.*	Tal, *payment.*
Chwaff, *instantly.*	Rhaff, *rope.*	Bryn, *hill.*	Bran, *crow.*
Mwll, *sultry.*	Oll, *all.*	Ar, *on.*	Ar, *arable land.*

62. A vowel before two or more consonants is **short.**

Nant, *brook.* Perth, *bush.* Camp, *game.* Llestr, *vessel.*

(*a*) But when two vowels of the same name are contracted into one (e.g. *aa=a, oo=o,*) the quantity of the vowel is **long,** even when two or more consonants follow.

Cânt=caant, *they shall have.* Ffônt=ffoont, *they may flee.*
Gwnânt=gwnaant, *they will do.* Trônt=troont, *they may turn.*

(*b*) In N.W., vowels are **long** in monosyllables before *llt, sg, (sc,) sp, st.*

Hâllt, *salt.* Llêsg, *feeble.* Hêsp, *barren.* Clûst, *ear.*

63. **Diphthongs.**—*A, e, i, o, u, y,* in *ai, aw* (see below), *au, ei, ew* (see below), *eu, ey, iw, oi, ow, uw, yw,* are generally *short. A* and *o* in *ae* and *oe* are *long. Wy* is *long* and *short.*

Short.	Màith.	Câwr.	Hâul.	Llèill.	Mêwn.	Nêu.
	Gwnèyd.	Llìw.	Ffôi.	Ffôwch.	Dûw.	Bŷw.
Long.	Sâeth.	Bâedd.	Dâeth.	Trôed.	Pôen.	Cŏed.
Wy.	Gwŷr.	Mŵyn.	Gwŷn.	Mŵynder.		

(*a*) *A* and *e* before *w* final are *long* in N. W. Llâw, *hand.* Bâw, *dirt.* Llêw, *lion.*

64. **Penults** are either **short** or **half long** (or *middle*).

65. When the penult is *short,* it must in pronunciation

end in a consonant. Thus, *àteb*, to answer, must be pronounced *at-eb*, not *a-teb: cànu*, to bleach, *can-u*, not *ca-nu.*

66. When the penult is *half long*, it must in pronunciation end in a vowel, and the vowel must be pronounced short. Thus, *canu*, to sing, must be pronounced *cà-nu*, not *can-u: caru*, to love, *cà-ru*, not *car-u: glanach*, cleaner, *glà-nach*, not *glan-ach.*

67. Penults are **short**, if they are short in their simple, monosyllabic forms.

Cànu, *to bleach*, fr. càn. Brònau, *breasts*, fr. brôn.

(*a*) *Ll* and *s* are always *short* in penults, although *ll* is uncertain, and *s* is *long*, in monosyllables. Hôll: hôllol, *entire.* Bŷs: bŷsedd, *fingers.*

68. Long monosyllables become **half long** in penults, when a syllable beginning with a *vowel* is added.

Câr: caru = cà-ru, *to love.* Tôn: tonau = tô-nau, *tunes.*

(*a*) *B*, *ff* (*ph*), and *l*, are *half long* in penults, if the next syllable begins with a vowel, although they are *uncertain* in monosyllables. Hêl: hela = hê-la.

69. Long monosyllables are made **short** in penults, when a syllable beginning with a *consonant* is added.

Mâb: màbsant, *patron saint.* Tâd: tàdmaeth, *foster-father.*
Glân: glànwaith, *clean.* Tân: tànio, *to fire.*

(*a*) *I* and *w* at the beginning of syllables, as above, are consonants.

SYLLABLES AND WORDS.

70. A **syllable** is a simple sound represented by one or more letters. A-chas, *odious.* Ffrwyth-lawn, *fruitful.*

71. "Dividing words into syllables is a very different operation, according to the different ends proposed by it." Words are divided (*a*) to show their etymology; (*b*) to exhibit their exact pronunciation in reading.

72. For *etymological* purposes, words are divided into syllables according to the etymology assigned to them. Therefore hynod, *noted*, rhagenw, *pronoun*, cablair, *calumny*, must be divided into *hy-nod*, *rhag-enw*, *cabl-air* (not *hyn-od*, *rha-genw*, *cab-lair*,) because they are compounded of *hy* and *nod*, *rhag* and *enw*, *cabl* and *gair.*

73. But in *reading*, words must be divided according to their pronunciation, without any regard to etymology. Thus, tadau, *fathers*, canu, *to sing*, glanach, *cleaner*, must in

reading be divided into *ta-dau, ca-nu, gla-nach,* although etymologically they should be written *tad-au, can-u, glan-ach.*

74. **Words** are divided into *primitive, compound,* and *derivative.*

75. The **primitive words** are the most elementary parts of the language, and contain but one syllable. (Bach, pen, ci, cor, llaw, cae, da.)

(*a*) If we confine the term "primitive" to those small root-words which are not reducible to simpler elements, the primitives are not very numerous; but if under this term we comprehend those monosyllables which can be deduced from still more elementary words, either British or foreign, it may be said that the Welsh language abounds with primitive words. We give a few instances of such words, accompanied by their etymologies.

Brâd, *treachery;* L. prodo, fr. pro-do. Doeth, *wise;* L. doctus, fr. doceo. Caeth, *bound;* L. captus, fr. capio. Clais, *a bruise;* Gr. κλάσις, fr. κλάω.

Câd, *a battle*
Cae, *an enclosure* } from ca, *a hold, a shutting on.*
Caw, *a band*

76. **Compound words** are formed of two or more of the primitives, or of prefixes and primitives.

Cadfarch (cad-march), *a war-horse.*
Modrwy (bawd-rhwy), *a ring.*
Geirlyfr (gair-llyfr), *a dictionary.*
Annheg (an-teg), *unfair.*
Cyfundrefn (cyf-un-trefn), *a system.*
Geirwir (gair-gwir), *truth-telling.*
Ceinfalch (cain-balch), *showy.*
Sychdir (sych-tir), *dry ground.*
Anghyfiawn (an-cyf-iawn), *unjust.*
Dychryn (dy-cryn), *terror.*

77. When two or more substantives, or substantives and adjectives, are joined together to form a compound, the adjective or the substantive that expresses the notion of an adjective, takes the precedence.

*Iawn*farn, *right judgment.*
*Dryg*fyd, *adversity.*
*Dwfr*beiriant, *water-engine.*
*Awyr*gylch, *atmosphere.*

(*a*) The latter noun is put in the middle sound: cad*f*arch. (See § 36.)

(*b*) But we have several compounds formed contrary to the above rule. In *drychfeddwl, pwyslais, mammaeth,* the noun in the possessive case is made to *follow* the other, whereas, according to the genius of the language, it should either *precede* the governing noun, or the compound should no longer be such. Thus *mammaeth* should have been written either *maeth-fam,* or as two distinct words, *mam maeth.* Names of churches in Wales, and some names of cities, are joined together in the same way; as, *Llandingad, Llanfair, Llanfor, Caerfyrddin, Caerlleon,* &c., which ought to have been written as separate words: *Llan Mair, Llan Mor, Caer Myrddin,* &c.

78. Derivative words are formed of primitives, or of compounds, by the addition of suffixes.

Barnol (barn-ol), *judicial.*
Colledigaeth (coll-ed-ig-aeth), *perdition.*
Tragwyddoldeb (tra-gwydd-ol-deb), *eternity.*
Swyddog (swydd-og), *an officer.*
Cyfiawnhâd (cyf-iawn-hâd), *justification.*
Teyrnas (teyrn-as), *a kingdom.*

(*a*) Some of the derivative words contain six or even seven syllables: in general, however, they do not exceed four or five, and as Dr. Pughe remarks, "words having more than five are seldom used except from a sort of affectation."

SPELLING.

79. The mode of spelling Welsh words has been, and still is, very irregular and inconsistent. Without referring to individuals, who have ingeniously constructed new systems, among whom *Dr. W. O. Pughe* may be considered as the leader, it may be said that all the various schools may be regarded under two generic heads: one the *New School*, and the other the *Old School.*

80. The members of the New School are those who follow *Dr. Pughe's* general principles; those of the Old are such as have perfected into a system what appeared to have been the general tendency of the writers of the oldest manuscripts.

81. The principal points in which these schools differ are (1) the use of double consonants to indicate the quantity of words; (2) the use of certain prefixes, *di*, *dy*, *cy*, *cym*, &c.; (3) the use of the aspirate *h*; (4) the use of the preposition *yn* before *m* and *ng*.

82. Since the time that *Dr. Pughe* introduced his system, Welsh orthography has been a subject of great controversy; but we regret to say, that scarcely any of the proposed changes and emendations have received a universal acceptance. It has been suggested that a considerable number of the most learned scholars in the principality should be elected to deliberate on this subject, to lay down rules, and to impress on the Welsh literati at large the expediency and the necessity of adopting one universal mode of orthography. Until this be effected, the following rules are proposed, which have been framed as moderately as possible, in order to meet the views of both parties.

83. Words should be spelt according to their etymology.—The following is *Dr. Pughe's* canon—"It is proper to write every word after the form of its substance, without either more or fewer letters than are to be found in its component parts, taken severally, that its origin or derivation may not be obscured." [1] Therefore consonants should not be doubled unless the etymology of the words demands, nor be omitted if their etymology require their insertion. For instance, the words *penau*, *tori*, are compounded of *pen* and *au*, *tor* and *i*, and should not therefore be spelt *pennau*, *torri*, with double consonants. Again, *mammaeth*, *annoeth*, are compounded of *mam* and *maeth*, *an* and *doeth*, and ought not, according to *Pughe's* canon, to be written *mamaeth*, *anoeth*, with single consonants. Their insertion in *penau* and *tori*, and their omission in *mammaeth* and *annoeth*, would tend to obscure the origin or derivation of the words.

(*a*) This should be regarded only as a general principle, and must not be applied strictly to every word in the language; for in very many instances words are, and always have been, written with fewer letters than there are in their component parts, taken severally.

The letter *g* is very often omitted when the word of which it is the initial is preceded by another word or prefix. Cywir = cy-*g*wir; anweledig = an-*g*weledig; diorfod = di-*g*orfod. Again in the following words, with others which might be mentioned, one consonant is omitted: meithrin = maeth-*t*rin; sobrwydd = sobr-*r*wydd; sicrwydd = sicr-*r*wydd; amyd = am*l*-yd; canwriad = can*t*-gwr-iad; eneinio = enain*t*-io; toster = tost-*d*er; amryw = am*l*-rhyw.

(*b*) When a short vowel occurs in a syllable, the Old School double the consonant next to it, maintaining that it is necessary in order to show the quantity of the vowel.

Cyfrannu, *to contribute;* calonnau, *hearts.*
Hwnnw, *that;* tonnau, *waves.*

84. When long and short vowels are to be distinguished in monosyllabic words, let the long be marked with a circumflex, and the short be left without any indication of its quantity.[2]

Tân, *fire;* tan, *under.*	Tôn, *tune;* ton, *wave.*
Glân, *clean;* glan, *river bank.*	Hŷn, *older;* hyn, *this.*

(*a*) Some writers mark the long and short—tân, *fire*, tân, *under;* others mark the short only—tan, *fire*, tân, *under.*

85. On the contrary, when the quantity of penults is

[1] "Cadwedigaeth yr Iaith Gymraeg," p. 12.
[2] In the present Work *long* and *short* vowels are often marked for the assistance of such as are strangers to the language.

to be distinguished, the short syllable must be marked, because all penults are either *short* or *half long.*

Tònau, *waves;* tonau, *tunes.* Glànau, *river banks;* glanach, *cleaner.*

(*a*) *O* in tonau, *tunes*, and *a* in glanach, *cleaner*, have not the same quantity as *o* and *a* in *tôn* and *glân*, but are *half long*, and therefore cannot have the circumflex placed over them.

The prefixes an ; di, dy ; cy, cym, cyn, cys ; as, es, ys, and their compounds cys, dis, dys, dos, gos, hys.

86. **An.**—When *an* (= un) is prefixed to the nasal sound of *g* or *c*, let *n* be cut off.

Angreddf (an-greddf), *without principle.*
Anghysson (an-cysson), *inconsistent.*
Angradd (an-gradd), *without a degree.*
Anghywir (an-cywir), *inaccurate.*

Observ.—*Ng* is the nasal of *g*; *ngh* of *c*.

87. When *an* is prefixed to the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let it be changed into *am*, for the sake of euphony.

Ammraint (an-braint), *without privilege.*
Ammhrydlawn (an-prydlawn), *untimely.*

Observ.—*M* is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

88. **Di** and **dy.**—The New School use *di* and its compound *dis* (*di-ys*) when *negation* is implied; *dy* and its compound *dys* (*dy-ys*) when intensity is implied.

Negation.	*Intensity.*
Diog (di-og), *idle.*	Dyben (dy-pen), *purpose.*
Diorfod (di-gorfod), *unconstrained.*	Dynoethi (dy-noethi), *to make bare.*
Disliw (dis-lliw), *colourless.*	Dystaw (dys-taw), *silent.*

The Old School employ *di* and *dis* both as *negative* and *intensive* prefixes. In many words *dy* and *dys* occur, implying *intensity.*

DI AND DIS.

Diben (di-pen), *headless.*	Diben (dy-pen), *purpose.*
Diniwed (di-niwed), *innocent.*	Dioddef (dy-goddef), *to suffer.*
Disgloff (dis-cloff), *not lame.*	Disgwyl (dys-gwyl), *to expect.*

DY AND DYS.

Dywedyd (dy-gwedyd), *to say.*	Dychymmyg (dy-cymmyg), *fancy.*
Dychryn (dy-cryn), *terror.*	Dyspaid (dys-paid), *cessation.*
Dyweddi (dy-gwedd), *a spouse.*	

(*a*) The orthography of the New School is based on the radical meaning of the prefixes; that of the Old School on the usual pronunciation of the words. In *dywedyd*, *dyweddi*, *dychryn*, *dychymmyg*, the prefix is pronounced *dy*, and is therefore so written. In *dyben*, *dyoddef*, *dysgwyl*, *dy* and *dys* are usually pronounced *di* and *dis*, and the words are accordingly written by the Old School *diben*, *dioddef*, *disgwyl*.

In the present Edition we have adopted the orthography of the Old School.

Cy, cym, cyn, cys. = Lat. *con.*

89. Cym.—When words begin with *m*, whether *m* be radical or the nasal sound of *b* or *p*, let *cym* precede them.

Cymmaint (cym-maint), *as much.*
Cymmhorth (cym-porth), *help.*
Cymmrawd (cym-brawd), *a fellow.*
Cymmhwys (cym-pwys), *fit.*

Observ. M is the nasal of *b*; *mh* of *p*.

(*a*) Some prefer *cy* to *cym* before *mh*: *cymhorth*, not *cymmhorth*.

90. Cyn.—When words begin with *n*, whether *n* be radical or the nasal sound of *d* or *t*, let *cyn* precede them.

Cynnifer (cyn-nifer), *as many.*
Cynnhwrf (cyn-twrf), *noise.*
Cynnal (cyn-dal), *to support.*
Cynnadl (cyn-dadl), *a discourse.*

Observ. N is the nasal of *d*; *nh* of *t*.

(*a*) Some prefer *cy* to *cyn* before *nh*: *cynhwrf*, not *cynnhwrf*.

91. Cys.—When words begin with *s*, let *cys* precede them.

Cysson (cys-son), *consistent.*
Cyssefin (cys-saf), *primary.*

(*a*) A branch of the New School adopts *cy* in preference to *cym*, *cyn*, and *cys*. It is, however, very doubtful whether it may be correctly used for *cym* and *cyn*, as *cy* has a tendency to govern the labials in the *middle*, and the dentals in the *asp.* sound. Cy*f*rad (cy-*b*rad; cy*f*oli (cy-*m*oli); cy*th*rwfl (cy-*t*rwfl, fr. *trouble*).

92. Cy.—When words begin with *ng* and *ngh*, the nasal sounds of *g* and *c*, let *cy* precede them.

Cyngwystl (cy-gwystl), *a wager.*
Cynghor (cy-côr), *an advice.*
Cyngwerth (cy-gwerth), *an equivalent.*
Cynghrair (cy-crair), *a treaty.*

As, es, ys, *and their compounds* cys, dis, dys, dos, gos, hys.

93. These prefixes, when followed by words beginning radically with *d* or *t*, prefer the **t** sound.

Astell (as-dell), *a board.*
Astrus (=L. *abstrusus*), *perplexed.*
Cystal (cys-tal), *of equal value.*
Estyn (=L. *extendo*), *to extend.*
Estron (=L. *extraneus*), *a stranger.*
Distaw (dys-taw), *silent.*
Ystafell[1] (=L. *stabulum*), *chamber.*
Ystwyll (=L. *stella*), *Epiphany.*
Gosteg (gos-teg=L. *taceo*), *silence.*

94. When followed by words beginning radically with *g* or *c*, they prefer the **g** sound.

---

[1] *Ys* in *ystafell*, *ystwyll*, &c., is not strictly a prefix, but it is convenient to consider it here as such.

Asgafaeth (as-cafaeth), *a prey.*
Esgyn (=L. *ascendo*), *to ascend.*
Esgar (es-car), *to separate.*
Ysgafn (ys-cawn), *light.*
Ysgarm (ys-garm), *a scream.*
Disgyn (=L. *descendo*), *to descend.*
Gosgel (gos-cel), *a gloom.*
Gosgordd (gos-cordd = L. *cohorte*), *a retinue.*
Cysgod (cy-ysgod = Gr. σκότος), *a shadow.*
Dysgweini (dys-gweini), *to administer.*

95. When followed by words beginning radically with *b* or *p*, they prefer the **b** sound.

Asborth (as-porth), *support.*
Ysbryd (=L. *spiritus*), *a spirit.*
Ysbwrial (ys-bwrw), *refuse.*
Cysbod (cys-bod), *to co-exist.*
Cysbwyll (cys-pwyll), *consideration.*
Disbrofi (dis-profi), *to disprove.*
Dosbarth (dos-parth), *a class.*
Gosben (gos-pen), *a particular.*
Hysbysu (=L. *expositus?*) *to inform.*

96. The use of the aspirate h.—Let *h* be used as an auxiliary before the substantive termination *âd;* before the verbal termination *au*, and the finite terminations formed therefrom.

Cyfiawn*hâd;* cyfiawn*hau;* cyfiawn*hâf;* cyfiawn*hei.*

(*a*) Nouns and verbs, whose penults end with *c*, *ch*, *p*, *t*, or *th*, cannot admit of the insertion of the aspirate; and it is most frequently omitted after *ff* (*ph*), *ll*, and *s*.

Nacâd; iachâd; gwlypâu; caniatâu; esmwythâu.
Coffâd; gwellâu; nesâu.

(*b*) A branch of the New School objects to the use of *h* in the above-mentioned circumstances, maintaining that it should not be inserted except when it forms an essential part of a word; as in *anhawdd*, from *an* and *hawdd*.

96 (1). Some words, mostly dissyllabic, when a syllable is added to them (thus forming trisyllabic words), have the aspirate *h* put before the initial vowel of the accented penult, to strengthen the pronunciation. The following are some of them: *angen, angeu, bonedd, brenin, cenedl, cryno, dammeg, eang.*

Angen, *need;* anghenog, *needy;* anghenus, *needy;* anghenion, *needs.*
Angeu, *death;* angheuol, *deadly.*
Bonedd, *nobility;* bonheddig, *noble;* bonheddwr, *gentleman.*
Brenin, *king;* brenhines, *queen;* brenhiniaeth, *kingdom;* brenhinol, *kingly;* brenhinoedd, *kings;* brenhindy, *king's palace.*
Cenedl, *nation;* cenhedlaeth, *generation;* cenhedloedd, *nations;* cenhedlu, *to beget.*
Cryno, *compact;* crynhoi, *to collect together* (§ 43 *a*); crynhous, *tidy;* crynhoad, *summary.*
Dammeg, *parable;* dammhegion, *parables;* dammhegol, *allegorical.*
Eang, *spacious;* ehangder, *spaciousness;* ehangu, *to extend.*

(*a*) The Old School insert *h* in some of the dissyllabics (bren*h*in,

cen*h*edl, &c.), although the letter is not heard when the words are uttered. The New School discard the *h* altogether, writing *brenin*, *breninoedd*; *cenedl*, *cenedlaeth*, &c., although *brenhinoedd*, *cenhedlaeth*, &c., is the usual pronunciation. Others write the words as they are commonly pronounced, omitting the aspirate in *brenin*, *cenedl*, &c., and inserting it in *brenhinoedd*, *cenhedlaeth*, &c.

(*b*) In some words the aspirate is sometimes borrowed, and sometimes omitted. In the following words the insertion or omission is optional:—

Aros, *to stay*; arosiad or arhosiad; arosaf or arhosaf.
Dangos, *to show*; dangosiad or danghosiad; dangosaf or danghosaf.
Tymmor, *season*; tymmorau or tymmhorau; tymmorol or tymmhorol.
Tymmer, *temper*; tymmerau or tymmherau; tymmerus or tymmherus.

97. The use of the preposition yn, *in*.—Let *yn* be changed into *ym*, when it is followed by *m* and *mh*.

Ym mynydd yr Olewydd, *in the mount of Olives*.
Ym mhlwyf Llandingad, *in the parish of Llandingad*.
Ym medydd Ioan, *in the baptism of John*.
Ym mhen y mynydd, *on the top of the mountain*.

98. Let *yn* be changed into *yng*, when followed by *ng* and *ngh*.

Yng ngwraidd y pren, *at the root of the tree*.
Yng Nghrêd, *in Christendom*.
Yng Nghrist, *in Christ*.
Yng ngwyneb haul, *in the face of the sun*.
Yng ngharchar y swydd, *in the prison of the county*.

(*a*) The New School write *yn* in all cases: *yn m*ynydd, *yn m*hen, *yn ng*wyneb, *yn ngh*archar.

(*b*) Some join the prep. to the following word; thus,

Ymmhen, y'mhen, or ymhen.
Y'ngwreiddyn, or yngwreiddyn.

But this mode is liable to an objection, for when *yn* is prefixed to a monosyllable (thus forming a dissyllable) the accent falls on the ultimate, y'mhen', y'mhawb', y'ngwraidd', y'nghil'; and thus another exception to the rule of accentuation is added, although it can easily be avoided.

99. The use of **nn**[1] and **mm**, when mutations of **nt** and **mp**.—When a suffix with a vowel initial is added to a word ending with *nt* or *mp*, let *t* be changed into *n*, and *p* into *m*.

---

[1] The old Italian dialects change *d* into *n* after a preceding *n*. The Umbrian substitutes regularly *nn* for *nd* in the middle of words. The Oscan has *upsannam* for *operandam*; and Plautus, by birth an Umbrian, says, in the well-known line of the Miles Gloriosus,

"Dispennite hominem divorsum et distennite,"

using *dispennite* and *distennite* for *dispendite* and *distendite*. For "to grunt," one finds *grunnire* as frequently as *grundire*.—Dr. Aufrecht.

Meddiannu, *to possess*,	from	meddiant.
Dannedd, *teeth*	,,	dant.
Tymmor, *season*	,,	tymp=tempore.
Punnoedd, *pounds*	,,	punt.
Tannau, *harpstrings*	,,	tant.
Pummed, *fifth*	,,	pump.

100. Nc and **ngc.**—Let *nc*, rather than *ngc*, be used in such words as the following:—

Llanc, *young man.*	Ieuanc, *young.*	Cainc, *branch.*	Pwnc, *subject.*
Sionc, *nimble.*	Mainc, *bench.*	Gwanc, *voracity.*	Llwnc, *gullet.*

(*a*) The Old School write *llangc*, *ieuangc*, *caingc*, *pwngc*, &c.

101. Ff and **ph.**—Let *ff*, rather than *ph*, be used in the following words, and words derived from them.

Corff, *body.*	Sarff, *serpent.*	Argraff, *impression.*
Orgraff, *orthography.*	Arddygraff, *orthography.*	Enghraifft, *example.*

(*a*) The Old School write *corph*, *sarph*, &c.; and it must be confessed that the arguments adduced in favour of this orthography are very strong.

(*b*) The word *philosophydd*, philosopher, and its derivatives, and such proper names as *Ephesiaid*, *Pharaoh*, *Philemon*, &c., are written with *ph* by both Schools. Aipht, *Egypt*, and prophwyd, *prophet*, are by some few written *Aifft*, *proffwyd*.

102. Eu and **au.**—The following words, and perhaps some others, are made to end sometimes in *au*, and sometimes in *eu*. But as *au* is a termination of plural substantives, and as etymology and pronunciation are as favourable to the one termination as to the other, it would be better, for the sake of uniformity and distinction, to make them end in *eu*.

Angeu, *death.*	Dadleu, *to argue.*	Goleu, *light.*
Ammheu, *doubt.*	Dechreu, *to begin.*	Goreu, *best.*
Aseu, *left.*	Deheu, *right.*	Gynneu, *little while ago.*
Boreu, *morning.*	Edeu, *thread.*	Maddeu, *to pardon.*
Ceneu, *cub.*	Eisieu, *want.*	Peleu, *greenfinch.*
Cleddeu, *sword.*	Geleu, *leech.*	Teneu, *lean.*
Cynneu, *to kindle.*	Geneu, *mouth.*	
Chwareu, *to play.*	Goddeu, *purpose.*	

103. Words of doubtful origin.—When the etymology of a word is not generally agreed upon, it is more proper to spell that word according to the usual mode. "Diosg," *to undress*, is generally written with *di;* but some scholars write it *dyosg*, with *dy*, because, as they think, the word is compounded of *dy* and *osg*.[1] But as this etymology is not quite clear, (it being as likely that the word comes from *di*

[1] "*Osg*, what tends from or out."—Pughe's Dictionary.

and *gwisgo*, quasi *diwisg*,) we should write it "diosg" according to usual practice.

104. Words cognate with those of other languages.— When words are derived from, or cognate with, words of other languages, their orthography, as touching the number of consonants, should in general be the same. Thus, as there are μμ in the Greek word γραμματική, from which the Welsh term is derived, "*grammadeg*" should be spelt with *mm*, and not "*gramadeg*," with a single *m*. Again, as there is only one *t* in ἔτι and *etiam*, with which the Welsh word is cognate, we should write "*eto*" with one *t*, and not "*etto*" with *tt*.

(*a*) This is only a general rule. Should, however, an adherence to the orthography of another language violate a principle of the Welsh, or disturb a custom of long standing in the mode of spelling some words, the former should in this case submit to the latter; that is, the peculiarity exhibited in the Welsh should be observed and carried out, even though it should differ from that of another language.

PART II.

ETYMOLOGY.

CLASSIFICATION OF WORDS.

105. The parts of speech are : *substantive* (or *noun*), *adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, article, adverb, conjunction, preposition, interjection.*

SUBSTANTIVES (OR NOUNS).

106. A substantive or noun[1] is the name of an object, that has or is conceived to have an independent existence.

107. *Proper nouns* are such as denote the names of individual men or other objects. (Arthur, Bala.)

108. *Common nouns* are such as denote any of the individuals that are contained in a class of things. (Dyn, *man;* tref, *town.*)

109. *Abstract nouns* are the names of qualities or properties conceived by the mind as having independent existence. (Cyfiawnder, *justice;* gwynder, *whiteness.*)

110. *A collective noun,* or a *noun of multitude,* is a singular noun, that expresses a collection of many individuals. (Llu, *multitude;* tyrfa, *crowd.*)

NUMBER OF NOUNS.

111. Nouns have two numbers; the *singular* and the *plural.*

(*a*) "In a few words we have a *dual number,* formed by prefixing *dau* for the masculine, and *dwy* for the feminine, to such words as are required to be of that number."

Deurudd } *the two cheeks.*
Dwyrudd }
Deudroed, *the two feet.*
Dwyglust, *the two ears.*
Deulin, *the two knees.*
Dwyfron, *the breasts.*

Dwylaw (*the two hands*), though strictly dual, is now used for the plural.

---

[1] Although perhaps open to objection, the term *noun* has been employed throughout the present Work as synonymous with *substantive.*

112. Formation of the plural.—Nouns singular are rendered plural in three ways: some by changing a vowel or vowels (bardd, *bard*, beirdd): some by adding a syllable (dyn, *man*, dynion): and some by changing a vowel or vowels and adding a syllable (mab, *son*, meibion).

113. *α. By changing a vowel or vowels.*—The nouns which become plural by inflection of vowels, are for the most part monosyllables and dissyllables, with their compounds.

a = ai: sant, *saint*, pl. saint. So brân, *crow;* gofant, *smith.*

a = ei: march, *horse*, pl. meirch. So sarff, *serpent;* arf, *weapon;* iarll, *earl;* tarw, *bull;* carw, *stag;* câr, *car;* arth, *bear;* gast, *bitch;* iâr, *hen;* gafr, *goat;* tywarch, *clod.*

a = y: bustach, *bullock*, pl. bustych.

e = i: draen, *thorn*, pl. drain.[1] So maen, *stone.*

e = y: cyllell, *knife*, pl. cyllyll. So Gwyddel, *Irishman;* gwden, *withe.*

o = y: ffôn, *staff;* pl. ffŷn. So fforch, *fork;* ffordd, *road;* porth, *porch;* torch, *wreath;* mollt, *mutton;* post, *post;* cort, *cord;* corff, *body;* pont, *bridge;* gordd, *mallet;* corn, *horn.*

a, e = e, y: careg, *stone*, pl. ceryg.[2] So aber, *confluence;* castell, *castle;* gwaell, *knitting needle;* asgell, *wing;* astell, *board;* padell, *pan;* angel, *angel;* gradell, *griddle;* mantell, *mantle;* maneg, *glove;* llawes, *sleeve;* bachgen, *boy;* llanerch, *glade;* caseg, *mare.*

a, a = e, ai: dafad, *sheep*, pl. defaid.

a, a = e, y: aradr, *plough*, pl. erydr. So afall, *apple-tree;* paladr, *ray;* alarch, *swan;* taradr, *auger;* myharan, *wether.*

a, w = e, y: asgwrn, *bone*, pl. esgyrn.

114. The plural number of the following nouns and their compounds is formed irregularly.

Ci, *dog*, pl. cŵn. Ty, *house*, pl. tai. Troed, *foot*, pl. traed.
Croen, *skin*, pl. crŵyn. Oen, *lamb*, pl. ŵyn. Gŵr, *man*, pl. gwŷr.
Milgi, *greyhound.* pl. milgwn. Arfdy, *armoury*, pl. arfdai.

115. Very many derivative and compound nouns are made plural by changing *a* of the ultimate into *ai:* as,

Offeiriad, *priest*, pl. offeiriaid. Canwriad, *centurion*, pl canwriaid.
Llygad, *eye*, pl. llygaid. Llyffant, *frog*, pl. llyffaint.

116. *β. By adding a syllable.*—The following is a list of the plural terminations of substantives: **ain** (or **en**), **aint**,

---

[1] It makes no difference whether we say that (*e.g.*) in the word *draen*, *ae* is changed into *ai*, or that *e* is changed into *i*, in the formation of the pl.

[2] Some write ceri*g*, gwei*ll*, llewi*s*; but it is more uniform to write cer*yg*, gwe*yll*, llew*ys*.

au and **iau, awr, ed** (or **aid**), **edd, i, iaid, on** and **ion, od, oedd, ydd, yr.**

Pẑn, *head*, pl. penau.
Esgid, *shoe*, pl. esgidiau.
Bŷs, *finger*, pl. bysedd.
Llw, *oath*, pl. llwon.
Dŷn, *man*, pl. dynion.
Mynydd, *mountain*, mynyddoedd.

(*a*) *Au* and *iau*, *on* and *ion*, are the terminations most frequently in use.[1] For *iau* and *ion* Southwallians say *au* and *on*.

(*b*) *Yr* is seldom met with. Brawd, *brother*, pl. brodyr.

"Plural substantives in *awr* are frequent in the old Welsh poets; nor are they very rare in the poets of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. Gwaew, *spear*, pl. gwaewawr; ysgwyd, *shield*, pl. ysgwydawr; cleddyf, *sword*, pl. cleddyfawr; byddin, *army*, pl. byddinawr."—*Professor Evander Evans.*

(*c*) *Od* (= Arm. *et*) is most frequently applied to irrational animals: as, llygod, *mice;* ysgyfarnogod, *hares;* cwningod, *rabbits;* ednod, *birds;* llwynogod, *foxes;* bychod, *bucks;* buwchod, *cows;* pysgod, *fish;* draenogod, *hedgehogs;* hyrddod, *rams.*

(*d*) Some writers use *aid* for *ed* (*pryfaid*, worms): and *en* for *ain* (*ychen*, oxen, *Rhydychen*, Oxford). With *ain* or *en*, cf. Eng. *en* in ox*en*, cow*en* = kine.

117. Ach and **os** are added to plurals, *ach* denoting *contempt* or *wretchedness*, and *os*, *affection* or *tenderness.*

"Dowch, y pydron *ddynionach*,
Yng nghŷd, feirw byd, fawr a bach."—*Gor. Owen.*

"Come together, ye frail mean men, mortals of the world, great and small."

118. *γ. By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding a syllable.*

a = e: nant, *brook*, pl. nentydd.
a = ei: mâb, *son*, pl. meibion.
ae = ei and eu: saer, *carpenter*, pl. seiri; maes, *field*, pl. meusydd.
ai = ei: gair, *word*, pl. geiriau; nai, *nephew*, pl. neiaint.
au = eu: paun, *peacock*, pl. peunod; ffau, *cave*, pl. ffeuau.
aw = o: awr, *hour*, pl. oriau; brawd, *brother*, pl. brodyr.
w = y: bwrdd, *table*, pl. byrddau; llwdn, *young of an animal*, pl. llydnod.
w, w = y, y: cwmmwl, *cloud*, pl. cymmylau.

(*a*) *Ai* and *ei* are in the following words changed into *a*.

Gwraig, *woman*, pl. gwragedd.
Lleidr, *thief*, pl. lladron.
Deigr, *tear*, pl. dagrau.
Neidr, *snake*, pl. nadroedd and nadredd.

(*b*) *Aw* is sometimes changed into *ow* and *ew*. See § 22 (*a*).

Cawg, *basin*, pl. cowgiau.
Cawr, *giant*, pl. cewri.

(*c*) *E* in a very few instances becomes *y*: as,

Angel, *angel*, pl. angylion.
Blynedd, *year*, pl. blynyddau.

---

[1] The most common terminations in Arm. are *ou* and *iou* (= *au* and *iau*), *ien* (= *ion*), and *et* (= *od*).—Arch. Brit. p. 183.

119. Many nouns have two plural forms, and some few even three.

a) One formed by vowel-inflections, and another by simply adding a termination.

Pont, *bridge*,	pl. pynt *or* pontydd.
Aber, *confluence*,	pl. ebyr *or* aberoedd.
Alarch, *swan*,	pl. elyrch *or* alarchod.
Astell, *board*,	pl. estyll *or* astellod.
Castell, *castle*,	pl. cestyll *or* castelli.
Padell, *pan*,	pl. pedyll *or* padelli.

b) One formed by vowel-inflections, and another by vowel-inflections and adding a termination.

Sant, *saint*,	pl. saint *or* seintiau.
Bardd, *bard*,	pl. beirdd *or* beirddion.
Ty, *house*,	pl. tai *or* teiau.
Cloch, *bell*,	pl. clych *or* clychau.
Maen, *stone*,	pl. main *or* meini.

Gafr, *goat*, makes in pl. geifr, gafrod, *or* geifrod.

c) By taking different terminations. The terminations mentioned under § 116 were formerly indifferently applied to almost all nouns; but popular custom has confined this liberty, admitting of but one termination to the majority of Welsh words. Yet there are many nouns which still have two, and some even three different plural terminations.

Mynydd, *mountain*,	pl. mynyddoedd *or* mynyddau.
Gordderch, *concubine*,	pl. gordderchion *or* gordderchadon.
Tref, *town*,	pl. trefi *or* trefydd.
Eglwys, *church*,	pl. eglwysi *or* eglwysydd.
Plwyf, *parish*,	pl. plwyfi *or* plwyfydd.
Blynedd, *year*,	pl. blynyddoedd *or* blynyddau.
Llythyr, *letter*,	pl. llythyrau (N.W.), llythyron (S.W.)
Meistr, *master*,	pl. meistri, meistriaid, *or* meistradoedd.

d) By adding one pl. termination to another. The instances in which this occurs are very few.

Llo, *calf*,	pl. lloi *or* lloiau.
Neges, *message*,	pl. negesau *or* negeseuau.

120. In limiting the use of the terminations, care should have been taken to restrict each to a particular class of substantives; but we find that this was very much neglected. Hence the impossibility of laying down any definite rules for their formation. The following are laid down as *general rules.*

121. Derivatives ending in **der, did, dod, edd, yd, aeth, as, es,** are rendered plural by adding **au.**

Cyfiawnder, *justice*, cyfiawnderau.
Gwendid, *weakness*, gwendidau.
Awdurdod, *authority*, awdurdodau.
Gwaeledd, *lowliness*, gwaeleddau.
Bywyd, *life*, bywydau.
Marwolaeth, *death*, marwolaethau.
Priodas, *marriage*, priodasau.
Brenhines, *queen*, brenhinesau.

(*a*) Substantives ending in *ant* and *iant* often change *t* into *n*, and add *au:* medd*iant*, *possession*, pl. medd*iannau*.

122. Derivatives ending with the following suffixes are too promiscuous to be classified.

ach (*reproach*) pl. –od.

Bwbach, *bugbear*, bwbachod. Gwrâch, *hag*, gwrachod.

ad and **iad**, pl. –au, –on, –aid and –iaid. When this suffix denotes a *verbal noun*, it is made plural by adding *au:* when signifying a *person*, it becomes pl. by changing *a* into *ai*, or sometimes by the addition of *on*.

Toriad, *cutting*, toriadau. Ceidwad, *keeper*, ceidwaid.
Offeiriad, *priest*, offeiriaid, *or* offeiriadon.

adur and **ur**, pl. –iaid, –on, –iau. When the word denotes a *person*, the pl. termination is *–iaid:* when it denotes a *thing* or *instrument*, the termination is *–on*, if the noun is mas.; *–iau*, if feminine.[1]

Pechadur, *sinner*, pechaduriaid.
Geiriadur, *m.*, *dictionary*, geiriaduron.
Pladur, *f.*, *scythe*, pladuriau.
Gwniadur, *thimble*, pl. gwniaduriau, is fem. in S.W., but mas. in N.W.

ai, pl. eion.

Gwestai, *guest*, gwesteion. Cardotai, *beggar*, cardoteion.

aid, pl. eidiau.

Cwpanaid, *cupful*, cwpaneidiau. Dyrnaid, *handful*, dyrneidiau.

an, (*person*) pl. –od : (*instrument*) pl. –au.

Lleban, *clown*, llebanod. Cryman, *sickle*, crymanau.

awd, pl. odau, odiau, odion.

Traethawd, *treatise*, traethodau. Esgusawd, *excuse*, esgusodion.

awdr, pl. odron.

Pryniawdr, *redeemer*, pryniodron.

awg, pl. ogion.

Marchawg, *horseman*, marchogion. Swyddawg, *officer*, swyddogion.

awr, pl. orion.

Cantawr, *singer*, cantorion. Drysawr, *doorkeeper*, drysorion.

---

[1] Evans' "Llythyraeth," § 166.

ed, pl. –au, –ion.

Adduned, *vow*, addunedau. Colled, *loss*, colledion.

ell, pl. yll, –au, –i.

Cyllell, *knife*, cyllyll. Troell, *wheel*, troellau.
Padell, *pan*, pedyll. Pothell, *blister*, pothelli.

fa, pl. fëydd, –oedd (sometimes –au and –on).

Porfa, *pasture*, porfëydd. Llosgfa, *burning*, llosgfëydd.
Gwasgfa, *fainting fit*, gwasgfëydd *or* gwasgfäon (coll. gwasgfeuon).
Cynnulleidfa, *congregation*, cynnulleidfäoedd.

in, (*instrument*, &c.) pl. –au, –iau. **in**, *person*, is irregular.

Melin, *mill*, melinau. Brenin, *king*, brenhinoedd.
Cribin, *rake*, cribiniau. Dewin, *wizard*, dewiniaid.

od (= awd) pl. –au, –iau, –ion.

Ffonod, *stroke with a stick*, ffonodiau.

odr (= awdr) pl. –on.

Pwysodr, *rammer*, pwysodron.

og (= awg) pl. –ion.

Marchog, *horseman*, marchogion. Swyddog, *officer*, swyddogion.

or (= awr) pl. –ion.

Cantor, *singer*, cantorion. Drysor, *doorkeeper*, drysorion.

ur (= adur, *q.v.*)

ydd, pl. –ion.

Ysgrifenydd, *writer*, ysgrifenyddion.

yr, pl. –au, –iau, –on.

Ysgrythyr, *scripture*, ysgrythyrau. Gwerchyr, *cover*, gwerchyriau.
Cwlltyr, *coulter*, cwlltyrau. Canwyllyr, *chandelier*, canwyllyron.

(*a*) *Awd* and *od*; *awdr* and *odr*; *awg* and *og*; *awr* and *or*, are respectively different forms of the same terminations.

123. Nouns ending in *nc* are made pl. by adding *iau*.

Llanc, *youth*, llanciau. Cainc, *branch*, ceinciau.
Ystanc, *stake*, ystanciau. Pwnc, *subject*, pynciau.
Mainc, *bench*, meinciau. Pranc, *prank*, pranciau.

(*a*) But *crafanc*, claw, is made pl. by changing *nc* into *ng*, and adding *au*. Crafanc, pl. crafa*ngau*.

124. Many nouns are made pl. by adding the dissyllabic termination *adau* or *iadau*; *i.e.* they borrow the form of the verbal nouns derived from them, and add the pl. suffix *au*. Thus *coll*, failing, makes in the pl. *colliadau*, borrowing the verbal noun *colliad*.

Serch, *affection*, serchiadau. Crwydr, *wandering*, crwydradau.
Cân, *song*, caniadau. Tuedd, *inclination*, tueddiadau.
Addurn, *ornament*, addurniadau. Ysgrifen, *writing*, ysgrifeniadau.
Dinystr, *destruction*, dinystriadau.

(*a*) Cyfarwyddyd, *direction*, discards *yd* and adds *iadau*: cyfarwyddiadau.

125. Some few nouns are made pl. by adding the pl. suffix to the *adjectives* of the singular noun.

Credadyn, *believer*, pl. credinwyr,	fr. credin, *believing*.
Cristion, *christian*, pl. cristionogion,	fr. cristionog, *christian*.
Grâs, *grace*, pl. grasusau,	fr. grasus, *gracious*.
Gwlaw, *rain*, pl. gwlawogydd,	fr. gwlawog, *rainy*.
Llîf, *flood*, pl. llifogydd,	fr. llifog, *streaming*.

126. Some nouns borrow the pl. of *another form of the same nouns*.

Cam, *step*, pl. camrau,	fr. camre.
Cydymaith,[1] *companion*, pl. cymdeithion,	fr. cymdaith.
Chwaer, *sister*, pl. chwiorydd,	fr. chwior.
Daiargryn, *earthquake*, pl. daiargrynfäau,	fr. daiargrynfa.
Dychryn, *terror*, pl. dychrynfëydd,	fr. dychrynfa.
Nos, *night*, pl. nosweithiau,	fr. noswaith.
Pared, *partition*, pl. parwydydd,	fr. parwyd.
Rheg, *curse*, pl. rhegfëydd,	fr. rhegfa.

(*a*) The pl. of *dynes*, woman, is *gwragedd*, from *gwraig*, woman.

127. Some nouns, ending in *yn* and *en*, throw off these terminations when the pl. termination is added.

Merlyn, *pony*, pl. merlod.	Anwybodusyn, *ignoramus*, pl. anwybodusion.
Merlen, *pony*, pl. merlod.	Ploryn, *pimple*, pl. plorod.
Planhigyn, *plant*, pl. planhigion.	Cibyn, *shell*, *husk*, pl. cibau.
Meddwyn, *drunkard*, pl. meddwon.	Cwningen, *rabbit*, pl. cwningod.
Polyn, *stake*, pl. polion.	Llysŵen, *eel*, pl. llysŵod.
Diferyn, *drop*, pl. diferion.	Sofren, *sovereign*, pl. sofrod.
Colyn, *pivot*, pl. colion.	Magïen, *glow-worm*, pl. magïod.
Ysglodyn, *chip*, pl. ysglodion.	

128. Some nouns have different pl. terminations to indicate their different acceptations.

Brŏn,	*breast, pap*,	pl. bron*au*.
,,	*slope of a hill*,	pl. bron*ydd*.
Canon,	*canon, dignitary*,	pl. canon*iaid*.
,,	*rule, law*,	pl. canon*au*.
Cynghor,	*counsel, advice*,	pl. cynghor*ion*.
,,	*council*,	pl. cynghor*au*.
Person,	*person*,	pl. person*au*.
,,	*parson, clergyman*,	pl. person*iaid*.
Ysbryd,	*spirit*,	pl. ysbryd*oedd* or ysbryd*ion*.
,,	*ghost, apparition*,	pl. ysbryd*ion*.
,,	*disposition of the mind*,	pl. ysbryd*oedd* or ysbryd*au*.
Llwyth,	*tribe*,	pl. llwyth*au*.
,,	*load*,	pl. llwyth*i*.

[1] Cydymaith = *cydymddaith*. "Yr wyf yn *cydymddaith* â'r rhai a garant ddysgeidiaeth."—"Marchog Crwydrad."

129. Some nouns are used in the plural number only.

Ymysgaroedd, *bowels.* Gwartheg, *cattle.*

(*a*) The pl. *nefoedd*, heavens, is continually used for the sing. *nef*, heaven. "Y nefoedd *wen*," *the blessed heaven.*

130. The pl. of **compound nouns**, formed regularly (see § 77), is the same as the plural of the *last* of their component parts. Thus

Swyn*wr*, *magician*, pl. swyn*wyr*,	like gwr, pl. gwyr.
Amherawd*wr*, *emperor*, pl. amherawd*wyr*,	,, ,, ,,
Gweith*iwr*, *workman*, pl. gweith*wyr*, note (*a*)	,, ,, ,,
Llaethwraig, *dairymaid*, pl. llaethwragedd,	,, gwraig, pl. gwragedd.
Cyrchfan, *resort*, pl. cyrchfanau,	,, màn, pl. manau.
Trigle, *dwelling-place*, pl. trigleoedd,	,, lle, pl. lleoedd.
Tafarndy, *public-house*, pl. tafarndai,	,, ty, pl. tai.

(*a*) Observe that *i* in the suffix *iwr* is dropped when the word is made plural,—gweith*iwr*, pl. gweith*wyr*, not gweith*iwyr*. But if *i* in *iwr* is a part of the preceding word, and not of the termination, the plural is *ïwyr*. Gweddïwr (fr. gweddi), *one who prays*, pl. gweddïwyr. Ysbïwr (fr. ysbïo), *a spy*, pl. ysbïwyr.

131. Plural number wanted.—Many substantives want the pl. number: such as,

α. Abstract nouns ending in *âd* and *hâd*, *deb*, *did* (*tid*, *tyd*), *dra* (*tra*), *i*, *ioni*, *ineb*, *ni*, *rwydd*, *wch*, *wg*, *yd*, *ydd.*

Ffyddlondeb, *faithfulness.*	Atgasrwydd, *hatefulness.*
Tyndra, *tightness.*	Tristwch, *sadness.*

β. Most of the *diminutive nouns.*

Dynyn, *little man.* Oenig, *little ewe-lamb.*

γ. Nouns denoting *substance, mass*, &c.

Aur, *gold.*	Arian, *silver.*	Prês, *brass.*	Efydd, *copper.*
Baw, *dirt.*	Gwaed, *blood.*	Bara, *bread.*	Ymenyn, *butter.*
Llaeth, *milk.*	Mêl, *honey.*	Caws, *cheese.*	Pridd, *soil.*

(*a*) But such words as *ŷd*, corn; *haidd*, barley, &c., which may be termed nouns aggregate, take a plural termination when various collections of the same are designed to be expressed. Yd, *corn;* ydau, *various sorts of corn.*

132. Formation of the singular from the plural.—Some nouns of the singular number are formed from the plural by suffixing *yn* for the *mas.*, and *en* for the *fem.* gender.

Caws, cosyn, *a cheese.*	Yd, yden, *a grain of corn.*
Adar, aderyn, *a bird.*	Mes, mesen, *an acorn.*
Plant, plentyn, *a child.*	Derw, derwen, *an oak.*
Gwybed, gwybedyn, *a fly.*	Gwenyn, gwenynen, *a bee.*
Gwair, gweiryn, *a blade of hay.*	Plu, pluen, *a feather.*

Moron, moronyn or moryn, *a carrot.*
Eirin, eirinen or eiren, *a plum.*
Rhwnyn, rhwnynen or rhwnen, *a pear.*

(*a*) *Cyll* makes *collen*, hazel-tree; and *ŷn* makes *onen*, ash-tree.

(*b*) Cf. Arm. Bleo, *hair*, sing. bleven; colo, *straw*, sing. coloen; dero, *oak*, sing. deruen; fau, *beans*, sing. fauen.

GENDER OF NOUNS.

133. Nouns are either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. The Welsh language does not recognise what is called the "*neuter gender;*" hence all inanimate things, which are classed as neuter in English, are considered either as masculine or feminine in our language; and 'this is done by conceiving their properties to bear some resemblance to the qualities that are characteristic of sex in animated beings.'

(*a*) "Thus the *masculine* gender is given to substantives, which are conspicuous for the attributes of energy, and of acting upon and communicating to others. To such substantives as seem to denote the passive attributes of bearing, containing or bringing forth, we give the *feminine* gender."—Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 30.

134. Some nouns are of *common gender;* that is, masculine and feminine. Cyfyrder, *second cousin;* dyn, *person, male or female;* dynan, *little person, male or female.* Dyn *mwyn.* Dyn *fwyn.* Dynan *fechan fach.* [Cf. ὁ ἡ θεός; hic et hæc parens.] Some are *epicene.* Plentyn, *child,* baban, *babe,* rhiant, *parent,* are mas., whether the male or female is spoken of: colomen, *dove,* cwningen, *rabbit,* ysgyfarnog, *hare,* are fem., whether the male or female is intended. (See § 137, *d.*) [Cf. ὁ ἀετος, το βρεφος; hic passer, hæc aquila.]

135. The Welsh language, by not recognising a *neuter* gender, expressive of inanimate objects, presents to the student a difficulty not to be surmounted in many cases but by observation and memory.

136. **Animate objects.**—"With respect to those which are the names of males and females no difficulty exists; they are either male or female, in accordance with their signification." Dyn, *man,* tarw, *bull,* mas. Dynes, *woman,* buwch, *cow,* fem.

137. The gender of such nouns is distinguished,

a. By different words.

Mas.	*Fem.*
Adiad, *drake.*	Hwyaden, *duck.*
Bachgen, *boy.*	Geneth, *girl.*
Baedd, *boar.*	Hwch, *sow.*
Brawd, *brother.*	Chwaer, *sister.*
Bustach, *or* eidion, *bullock.*	Anner, *heifer.*
Carw, hydd, *stag.*	Ewig, *hind.*
Cefnder, *cousin.*	Cyfnither, *cousin.*
Ceffyl, *horse.*	Caseg, *mare.*
Ceiliog, *cock.*	Iâr, *hen.*
Ci, *dog.*	Gast (*for* cïes), *bitch.*
Chwegrwn, *father-in-law.*	Chwegr, *mother-in-law.*
Daw, *son-in-law.*	Gwaudd, *daughter-in-law.*
Ewythr, *uncle.*	Modryb, *aunt.*
Gwâs, *man-servant.*	Morwyn, *maid-servant.*
Gŵr, *husband.*	Gwraig, *wife.*
Hesbwrn, *hoggerel.*	Hesbin, *a young ewe.*
Hwrdd, *ram.*	Dafad, *sheep.*
Mâb, *son.*	Merch, *daughter.*
Nai, *nephew.*	Nith, *niece.*
Tâd, *father.*	Mam, *mother.*
Taid, N. W. / Tad cu, S. W. / Tad da, POWIS } *grandfather.*	Nain, / Mam gu, / Mam dda, } *grandmother.*
Tarw, *bull.*	Buwch, *cow.*

(*a*) The compounds of the above are distinguished in the same manner.

Priodfab, *bridegroom.*	Priodferch, *bride.*
Golchwr, *washer.*	Golchwraig, *washerwoman.*
Milgi, *a greyhound.*	Miliast and Milgast, *a greyhound bitch.*

β. *By adding the termination* es *to the masculine gender.*

Mas.	*Fem.*
Arglwydd, *lord.*	Arglwyddes, *lady.*
Mynach, *monk.*	Mynaches, *nun.*
Dyn, *man.*	Dynes, *woman.*
Brenin, *king.*	Brenhines, *queen.*
Tywysog, *prince.*	Tywysoges, *princess.*

(*a*) In a few instances the fem. is formed by adding *es* to the *plural number* of the masculine.

Mas.	*Fem.*
Lleidr, *thief*, pl. lladron.	Lladrones, *female thief.*
Sais, *Englishman*, pl. Seison.	Seisones, *Englishwoman.*

γ. *By changing the termination* yn *into* en.

Asyn, *he-ass.*	Asen, *she-ass.*
Hogyn, *young lad.*	Hogen, *young girl.*
Coegyn, *saucy fellow.*	Coegen, *saucy girl.*
Merlyn, *pony.*	Merlen, *pony.*
Clobyn (=clamp), *large mass.*	Cloben.[1]

---

[1] "*Clobyn* (or *clamp*) *o ddyn*," a big strapping fellow. "*Cloben o ddynes*," a big strapping woman.

(*a*) Some few are made feminine by changing *w* of the root into *o*, as well as *yn* into *en*.

Crwtyn, *little boy.*	Croten, *little girl.*

Cyn, fem. *cen*; *ryn*, fem. *ren*, occur in a few words.

Ffwlcyn, *silly fellow.*	Ffolcen, *silly woman.*
Llipryn, *fribble.*	Llipren, *fribble.*

δ. By placing the word gwrryw *or* benyw *after the object spoken of.* But the *mas.* gender is sometimes formed from the *fem.* by prefixing the word *ceiliog*, a cock, or *bwch*, a buck.

Eryr gwrryw, *a he-eagle.*	Eryr benyw, *a she-eagle.*
Colomen wrryw, *a he-dove.*	Colomen fenyw, *a she-dove.*

Ceiliogwydd, *a gander*, from gwydd, *a goose.*
Bwch gafr, *a he-goat*, from gafr, *a goat.*

(*a*) The nouns to which *gwrryw* and *benyw* are added are, some masculine, and some feminine; and we must know the gender before we can correctly apply these words. If the noun is *mas.*, *gwrryw* and *benyw* will take the *radical*; if *fem.* they will be changed into the *middle* sound.

Eryr *g*wrryw Eryr *b*enyw	} *mas.*	Colomen wrryw Colomen *f*enyw	} *fem.*

138. With regard to the names of **inanimate objects**, the following rules may be laid down; but they extend to certain classes only, and must be regarded merely as *general rules.*

139. *α.* **Primitive nouns** have their gender often denoted by their **vowels.**

a) Nouns having **w** or **y** as their final vowel are *masculine.*

Pŵn, *a pack.*	Tŵrch, *a hog.*	Hŷd, *length.*	Prŷd, *appearance.*
Dŵrn, *a fist.*	Dŵfr, *water.*	Byd, *world.*	Brŷn, *a bank.*
Cŵr, *a corner.*	Cŵd, *a bag.*	Clŵyf, *disease.*	Bŵyd, *food.*

b) Nouns having **o** or **e** for their final vowel are of the *feminine* gender.

Tòn, *a wave.*	Tòrch, *a chain.*	Gwên, *a smile.*	Sêdd, *a seat.*
Bròn, *a breast.*	Fforch, *a fork.*	Gên, *a chin.*	Gwlêdd, *a banquet.*
Ffòn, *a staff.*	Côd, *a bag.*	Llêf, *a cry.*	Nêf, *heaven.*

(*a*) The remaining vowels are not susceptible of any kind of classification, being used indifferently in masculines or feminines.

140. *β.* **Compound nouns**, formed regularly, have their gender assigned to them in accordance with the gender of the **last** of their component parts.

Elusendy (elusen-ty), *almshouse*, mas. Arfdy (arf-ty), *armoury*, mas.	} like ty, *house*, mas.
Ceuffordd (cau-ffordd), *tunnel*, fem. Croesffordd (croes-ffordd), *cross-road*, fem.	} like ffordd, *road*, fem.

(*a*) But when compounds are formed contrary to the rule (§ 77, *b*), that is, when the adjective or the genitive is placed last, the gender of the compound word depends on that of the *first* of its component parts. Thus, mammaeth, *nurse*, treftad, *patrimony*, Llanfor (name of a village), Caerfyrddin, *Carmarthen*, are *feminine*, because *mam*, *tref*, *llan*, *caer*, are *feminine*.

141. *γ.* **Derivative nouns** have their gender indicated by their respective **terminations.**

142. Derivative nouns with the following suffixes are generally of the **masculine** gender.

a) The following occur most frequently: **âd, iâd; âd, hâd; ant, aint, iant; deb; der (ter); did (tid); dyd (tyd); dod (dawd); dra (tra); edd; i; ineb; ioni; ni; rwydd; ur, adur; wch; ydd; yn.** (Toriad; cyfiawnhâd; maddeuant; purdeb; cyfiawnder; gwendid; dyndod; cyfleusdra; puredd; brynti; doethineb; daioni; oerni; perffeithrwydd; henadur; tristwch; darllenydd; bachgenyn.)

b) These are less common: *awdr* (*odr*); *cyn*; *eu* (or *au*); *el*; *id* (*yd*); *ing*; *ol*; *on*; *or* (*awr*); *w*; *wg*; *wy*; *yf*; *yll*; *yr*. (Iachawdr; bryncyn; angeu; cantel; rhyddid; gwyning; trosol; gwyddon; cantor; tarw; tywyllwg; cynnorthwy; peryf; brithyll; canwyllyr.)

143. Derivative nouns ending with the following terminations are generally **feminine.**

a) The following occur most frequently: **aeth, iaeth; aeg, eg; as; ed; ell; en; es; fa; ig** (diminutive). (Gwaredigaeth; Cymraeg; cymdeithas; colled; bwyell; mesen; dynes; porfa; ynysig.)

b) The following are less common: *ain*; *cen*; *eb*; *iar*; *red*. (Celain; ffolcen; deiseb; toniar; gweithred.)

144. Ach, in, and **og.**—*Ach*, when it denotes a *person* is *masculine*; in other circumstances it is *feminine*.

Mas.	Corach, *pigmy*.	Bwbach, *bugbear*.
	Celach, *fribble*.	Buach, *clown*.

(*a*) Gwrâch, *a hag*, is *feminine*.

Fem.	Cyfeillach, *friendship*.	Ceintach, *brawl*.
	Cyfrinach, *secret*.	Cyfeddach, *carousal*.

In, when it denotes a *person*, is *masculine*; when it denotes an *instrument*, &c., it is *feminine*.

Mas.	Brenin, *king*.	Dewin, *wizard*.
Fem.	Melin, *mill*.	Cribin, *rake*.

Og (or *awg*) is sometimes *masculine*, and sometimes *feminine*. When it is a *diminutive* suffix, it is always *feminine*.

Mas.	Marchog, *horseman*.	Swyddog, *officer*.
Fem.	Ffolog, *silly woman*.	Clustog, *pillow*.

Dimin. Pwtog, *a short little woman*.

145. Aid, an, and **od.**—The gender of derivative nouns ending with *aid, an,* and *od* (or *awd*) is *masculine* or *feminine, according to the gender of the word to which the termination is suffixed.*

Aid.

Mas.	Dyrnaid, *handful,*	fr. dwrn, *m., fist.*
	Celyrnaid, *tubful,*	fr. celwrn, *m., tub.*
Fem.	Llwyaid, *spoonful,*	fr. llwy, *f., spoon.*
	Ffedogaid, *apronful,*	fr. ffedog, *f., apron.*

An.

Mas.	Maban, *babe,*	fr. mâb, *m., son.*
	Llyfran, *little book,*	fr. llyfr, *m., book.*
Fem.	Trefan, *a small town,*	fr. tref, *f., a town.*

(*a*) *An* is of *common* gender, if the word to which it is suffixed is common. *Dynan,* a little person, male or female; fr. *dyn,* a man or a woman.

Od (or **awd**) = *a thing done.*

Mas.	Cleddyfod, *the stroke of a sword,*	fr. cleddyf, *m., sword.*
	Dyrnod, *a blow given with the fist,*	fr. dwrn, *m., fist.*
Fem.	Cernod, *a blow on the cheek,*	fr. cern, *f., side of the head.*
	Palfod, *a blow with the palm of the hand,*	fr. palf, *f., palm.*

(*a*) When it implies a *verbal noun* (= *ad* or *iad*) it is *mas.* Darllenawd, *a reading.* Gyrawd, *a driving.*

146. Ai, denoting animate objects, is generally of *common gender.*

Telynai, *n. c., harpist.* Magai, *n. c., one who rears.*

(*a*) When implying a *thing* or *instrument,* it is *mas.* Awyrbwysai, *barometer.* Exc. buddai, *f., churn.*

147. Proper names of objects are of the same gender as the common nouns which denote the same objects. Thus the common nouns *gwlad,* country, *dinas,* city, *tref,* town, *llan,* village, *afon,* river, *llythyren,* letter, *coeden,* tree, are *feminine:* hence the proper names of *countries, cities, towns, villages, rivers, letters,* and *trees,* are of the *feminine* gender.

The common nouns *mis,* month, *dydd,* day, are *masculine:* hence the proper names of *months* and *days* are *masculine.*

148. The infinitive mood of verbs, employed substantively, is *masculine.*

Gweithio *da, good working.* Dyrnu *buan, quick thrashing.*

149. Many words, which are masculine in one district are used as feminine in another. For instance, the word *troed,* a foot, is masculine in the dialect of North Wales, as

y troed hwn; but in South Wales it is of the feminine gender, as *y droed hon.* The words *hanes, cyflog, clôd, clorian, gàr, gwniadur, ciniaw, munud,* are *mas.* in N. W., but *fem.* in S. W. *Cwpan, pennill, pontbren, canwyllbren, canrif, clust,* are *fem.* in N. W., and *mas.* in S. W.

150. The same words are often mas. or fem., as in English, in accordance with the idea they convey. For example, the word doethineb, *wisdom,* has the construction of a masculine noun in ordinary discourse; but when it is, by a figure of speech, considered as a person or agent, it takes the construction of a noun of the feminine gender.

"*Doethineb* a adeiladodd *ei thy, hi* a naddodd ei saith golofn. *Hi* a laddodd *ei h*anifeiliaid; *hi* a gymmysgodd *ei g*win, ac a huliodd *ei b*wrdd." (Prov. ix. 1, 2.)

151. Gambold's rule.—The following rule, intended for discovering the gender of nouns beginning with the mutable consonants, may prove useful to such as are well acquainted with the language, but who may be uncertain as to the gender of many nouns, except when they are in construction with other words. "Any word [of the singular number] beginning with any of the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh*,[1] if upon putting *y* in apposition before it, its initial consonant does naturally change into its *light* [or *middle*] sound; as, *melin, y felin; caseg, y gaseg;* such words are infallibly of the *feminine* gender. But if the initial consonant change not thereupon, we may justly conclude such words to be of the *masculine* gender; as, *brethyn, y brethyn; march, y march.*"[2]

CASES OF NOUNS.

152. In Welsh, nouns have no endings to denote their various relations to other notions, as they have in Greek and Latin; but, as in English, their relation is shown by means of prepositions. (Aethym *o* dŷ Ioan *i* dŷ Arthur). It is, however, convenient to adopt the terms *nominative case, possessive* (or *genitive*), *objective* (or *accusative*), and *vocative.*

---

[1] Feminine nouns sing. retain the radical sound after *ll* and *rh;* as y *ll*ong; y *rh*an.

[2] Gambold's Grammar, p. 24.

ADJECTIVES.

153. Primitive adjectives.—"The adjectives of the primitive form consist of elementary words, without the additions of the common terminations, which characterise the derivatives."[1] (Iawn; da; crwn.)

154. Compound adjectives are such as are formed by the union of two or more of the primitives, or of a prefix and a primitive. (Glewdaer; gorwymp.)

155. "The **derivative adjectives** are other words becoming such, by the addition of certain characteristic terminations."[2] (Goludog; duwiol; gwaedlyd.)

TERMINATIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

156. The following terminations, which will be exemplified hereafter, are those which occur most frequently in the composition of derivative adjectives. *Adwy; aid; aidd; ain; awr; ed* (*fed*); *edig; edd; fawr; gar; ig; llawn* (*lawn*); *in; llyd* (*lyd*); *og* (*awg*); *ol* (*awl*); *us; ydd.*

GENDER OF ADJECTIVES.

157. Adjectives are of the *masculine, feminine,* or *common gender.*

158. In Welsh, 'the discrimination of gender is partial with respect to primitive adjectives, and the derivatives (except two or three) are exempt from it.'

(*a*) This is said with respect to gender formed by inflection of *vowels*, not to gender indicated by a change of the *initial consonant.*

159. Inflection of vowels.—The *fem.* gender is formed from the masculine, *a*) by changing **w** into **o**; *b*) by changing **y** into **e.**

a) By changing **w** into **o.**

Mas.	*Fem.*	*Mas.*	*Fem.*
Blwng,	blong, *frowning.*	Cwta,	cota, *short.*
Brwnt,	bront, *nasty.*	Dwfn,	dofn, *deep.*
Clŵs,	clôs, *trim.*	Dwl,	dol, *stupid.*
Crwm,	crom, *bent.*	Ffiwch,	ffioch, *abrupt.*
Crwn,	cron, *round.*	Hwn,	hon, *this.*

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 54. [2] Ibid, p. 54.

Mas.	*Fem.*	*Mas.*	*Fem.*
Hwna,	hona, *that.*	Pŵl.	pôl, *blunt.*
Hwnw,	hono, *that.*	Rhŵth,	rhôth, *open.*
Llwm,	llom, *bare.*	Swrth,	sorth, *drowsy.*
Llwrf,	llorf, *timid.*	Tlŵs,	tlôs, *pretty.*
Mwll,	moll, *sultry.*	Trwsgl,	trosgl, *clumsy.*
Pwdr,	podr, *rotten.*	Twn,	ton, *broken.*

b) By changing **y** into **e**.

Mas.	*Fem.*	*Mas.*	*Fem.*
Brŷch,	brêch, *freckled.*	Gwydn,	gwedn, *tough.*
Byr,	ber, *short.*	Gwyrdd,	gwerdd, *green.*
Clŷd,	clêd, *comfortable.*	Gwyrf,	gwerf, *fresh.*
Crŷf,	crêf, *strong.*	Hysp,	hesp, *barren.*
Crŷg,	crêg, *hoarse.*	Hyll,	hell, *ugly.*
Chwyrn,	chwern, *rapid.*	Llyfn,	llefn, *smooth.*
Ffyrf,	fferf, *thick.*	Llym,	llem, *sharp.*
Gwŷch,	gwêch, *gay.*	Sŷth,	sêth, *straight.*
Gwlŷb,	gwlêb, *wet.*	Sŷch,	sêch, *dry.*
Gwymp,	gwemp, *splendid.*	Tyn,	ten, *tight.*
Gwyn,	gwen, *white.*	Brith makes braith, *speckled.*	

160. Many *compound*, and some few *derivative*, adjectives have their genders distinguished in the same way.

Mas.	*Fem.*	*Mas.*	*Fem.*	*Mas.*	*Fem.*
Hirgrwn,	hirgron.	Pengrych,	pengrech.	Bychan,	bechan.
Pendrwm,	pendrom.	Talgrych,	talgrech.	Melyn,	melen.
Pengrwn,	pengron.	Talgryf,	talgref.	Tywyll,	tywell.

"Nos da i'r ynys *dywell*,
Ni wn a oes un ynys well."—*Lewis Glyn Cothi.*

(*a*) A few of the cardinal and ordinal numbers have their vowels inflected to form the feminine gender. [See § 177 (*a*), 178 (*a*).]

(*b*) In modern Welsh the *masculine* form of most of the adjectives, above enumerated, is oftener met with than the feminine, even when the substantive is of the *fem.* gender. Geneth *glws*, pretty girl; dynes *hyll*, ugly woman, occur more frequently than geneth *glos*, dynes *hell*. But in the use of the following words the rule is still adhered to: *bechan; ber; brêch; bront; braith; cron; cref; dofn; gwen; hesp; hon; hona; hono; llom; melen; trom;* and their compounds *pengron, pengref*, &c.

161. "The adjectives with gender [*i.e.*, formed by vowel inflections], lose that characteristic when they take the plural form, or have any of the terminations by which they become derivative, or are in a state of comparison; and by losing such a characteristic they retain the form under which they denote the masculine gender." [1]

Careg wen, *white stone;* pl. ceryg *gwynion*, not *gwenion*.
Careg drom, *heavy stone;* comp. careg *drymach*, not *dromach*.

162. Mutation of consonants.—If an adjective, beginning

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 52.

with any of the mutable consonants, follows a *feminine noun singular*, its gender is also indicated by changing the initial consonant into the *middle* sound.

Careg *d*rom, *a heavy stone* (rad. *trwm*).
Dynes *dd*a, *a good woman* (rad. *da*).

(*a*) If an adjective precede the noun, or if the noun be plural, no indication of gender is made by consonant mutations.

*T*rom gareg. Ceryg *t*rymion.

163. An adjective is said to be of *common gender*, when it can undergo no change whatever; *i.e.*, when it does not contain a mutable *w* or *y*, or begin with one of the nine *mutable consonants*.

Gwr *hael*, a liberal man. Gwraig *hael*, a liberal woman.
Bachgen *segur*, an idle boy. Geneth *segur*, an idle girl.

NUMBER OF ADJECTIVES.

164. Some adjectives are susceptible of a plural number to agree with a plural noun or pronoun; others are used in the singular, even when the noun is plural. (Dynion *duon*. Dynion *da*.)

165. The adjectives which admit of being made plural are mostly *primitives;* but sometimes *compounds* and *derivatives*.

166. The plural number is formed

α. *By adding the syllable* **on** or **ion**.

Du, *black*, pl. duon. Gwyn, *white*, pl. gwynion.

(*a*) The termination *ion* is the more usual. "But after *w*, *u*, *br*, *dr*, *ddf*, *gr*, and *thr*, *on* is employed."[1]

Chwerw, *bitter*, pl. chwerwon. Lleddf, *flat*, pl. lleddfon.
Du, *black*, pl. duon. Hagr, *ugly*, pl. hagron.
Cyfebr, *with foal*, pl. cyfebron. Llathr, *smooth*, pl. lleithron.
Budr, *dirty*, pl. budron.

But *tew*, fat, *glew*, bold, make *tewion* and *glewion* in N. W.

β. *By changing a vowel or vowels.*

Buan, *swift*, pl. buain. Cadarn, *strong*, pl. cedyrn.

γ. *By changing a vowel or vowels, and adding* **on** or **ion**.

Garw, *rough*, pl. geirwon. Tlawd, *poor*, pl. tlodion.

(*a*) Gwàn, *weak*, makes gweiniaid (seldom gweinion) in the plural.

(*b*) The plural number is formed from the *masculine* gender, never from the *feminine*. Ceryg gwynion, not ceryg gwenion.

---

[1] D. S. Evans' "Llythyraeth."

167. The vowels undergo the following changes in the formation of the plural number of adjectives.

A is changed into *ai* without the addition of a syllable; as,

Bychan (*f.* bechan), bychain, *small.*	Buan, buain, *quick.*
Llydan, llydain, *wide.*	Byddar, byddair, *deaf.*
Ieuanc, ieuainc, *young.*	Truan, truain, *miserable.*

A is changed into *ei*, sometimes with and sometimes without the addition of a syllable; as,

Hardd, heirdd, *beautiful.*	Llall, lleill, *the other.*
Marw, meirw, *dead.*	Gwag, gweigion, *empty.*
Arall, ereill (*or* eraill), *another.*	Garw, geirwon, *rough.*

A and *a* are respectively changed into *e* and *y;* as, cadarn, cedyrn, *strong.*

A and *e* are respectively changed into *e* and *y;* as, caled, celyd, *hard.*

Ae and *ai* are respectively changed into *ei* with the addition of a syllable; as,

Llaes, lleision, *trailing.* Main, meinion, *thin.*

W is changed into *y* with the addition of a syllable; as, trwm, trymion, *heavy.*

Aw is changed into *o* with the addition of a syllable; as, tlawd, tlodion, *poor.*

168. Some adjectives have two plural forms; as, caled, *hard,* pl. celyd or caledion; hardd, *beautiful,* pl. heirdd or heirddion.

169. Most adjectives, however, have no plural forms, the singular number, as in English, being put in construction with nouns and pronouns of the plural number; as,

Primitives: da; teg; glân; hen; iawn, &c. (Dynion *da*; rhesymau *teg;* rhianod *glân.*)

Compounds: hyglod; mawrbarch; hynaws, &c. (Gwŷr *hyglod.*)

Derivatives: such as end with the suffixes *aid, aidd, gar, ig* (not *edig*), *in, llyd* (or *lyd*), *adwy, fawr, llawn* (or *lawn*). (Llanciau *mynyddig;* dynion *clodfawr.*)

(*a*) But derivatives ending in *edig, og, ol,* and *us,* admit of a plural form when they are used substantively; as, dysgedigion, *learned men;* goludogion, *wealthy persons;* duwiolion, *pious persons;* anwybodusion, *ignorant people.* They sometimes take a pl. form when in construction with nouns; as, nefolion leoedd, *heavenly places.*

(*b*) Many primitive, compound, and derivative adjectives, when used substantively, are made pl. by adding *iaid.* Ffyddloniaid, *faithful ones.* Gweiniaid, *weak ones.*

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

170. There are in Welsh four degrees of comparison; the *positive,* the *equal,* the *comparative,* and the *superlative.*

171. The *positive* is expressed by the adjective in its simple and absolute state; as, glân, *fair;* rhyfelgar, *warlike.*

172. The *equal* denotes equality or admiration, and is expressed in English by *as, so,* or *how,* with the positive. It is formed

a) By suffixing **ed** [1] to the positive (and to the comparative of some irregular adjectives), with or without *cyn* or *can* going before; as, cyn laned, *as fair;* can gynted, *as swift.*

(*a*) Admiration is most frequently, and equality sometimes, expressed without *cyn* or *can;* as, wyned yw'r eira, *how white the snow is!*

b) By placing **mor** before the positive; as, mor lân, *as fair.*

(*a*) *Mor* is frequently found with *ed;* as, mor lan*ed;* but most grammarians condemn this construction.

c) It is sometimes expressed by the inseparable prefixes *cy, cyf, cym, cyn, cys;* as cyhyd, cyfuwch, cymmaint, cynddrwg, cystal.

(*a*) *Cyn* (or *can*) is often found before *cymmaint* and *cystal,* and sometimes before *cyfuwch.* "Y mae hwn *cyn* gystal a'r llall," *this is as good as the other.*

173. The *comparative* expresses a greater degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing **ach** [2] to the positive; as, glanach, *fairer;* or by placing *mwy* or *llai* (more or less) before it; as, mwy rhyfelgar, *more warlike;* llai rhyfelgar, *less warlike.*

174. The *superlative* denotes the greatest degree of the quality expressed by the positive. It is formed by suffixing **af** [2] to the positive; as, glanaf, *fairest;* or by putting *mwyaf* or *lleiaf* (most or least) before it; as, mwyaf rhyfelgar, *most warlike;* lleiaf rhyfelgar, *least warlike.*

---

[1] Dr. Theodore Aufrecht compares the suffix *ed* (formerly written *et*) with the Sanskrit *vat.* "I believe the Welsh *et* corresponds to the Sanskrit *vat* with the loss of the initial *v,* in the same manner as in *oen,* plural *wyn* (lamb), compared with Lat. *ovis,* Sanskrit *avi; ci,* pl. *cwn* (dog), κυων, Sanskrit *çvan; hûn* (sleep), Sanskrit *svapna.* The Sanskrit *vat* very commonly forms adverbs, expressing a similarity or likeness, as well from adjectives as substantives. The two affixes *et* and *vat,* though not entirely agreeing in their application, still bear a certain likeness which proves them to be of the same origin." (See Dr. Aufrecht's paper, read May 9th, 1856, before the Philological Society.)

[2] With *ach,* cf. Arm. *o'ch;* as, *uhelo'ch* = uchelach. With *af* (formerly *am,* as *hinham*=hynaf), cf. Arm. *af* and *aff* (*diuesaf* = diweddaf; *furhaff* = ffuraf); and Latin *imus* (*minimus, optimus*).

Pos.	*Equal.*	*Comp.*	*Super.*
Byr, *short.*	byred.[1]	byrach.	byraf.
Rhyfelgar, *warlike.*	mor rhyfelgar.	mwy rhyfelgar.	mwyaf rhyfelgar.
Cyffredin, *common.*	mor gyffredin.	llai cyffredin.	lleiaf cyffredin.

(*a*) When *g*, *b*, *d*, are the final letters of the positive, they are respectively changed into *c*, *p*, *t*, in the *equal*, *comp.*, and *super.* degrees; as,

Te*g*, *fine.*	teced.	tecach.	tecaf.
Gwly*b*, *wet.*	gwly*p*ed.	gwly*p*ach.	gwly*p*af.
Rha*d*, *cheap.*	rha*t*ed.	rha*t*ach.	rha*t*af.

(*b*) When *ai*, *aw*, *w*, occur in the last syllable of the positive, they are respectively changed into *ei*, *o*, *y*, in the other degrees; as, m*ai*n, m*ei*ned; tl*aw*d, tloted; ll*w*m, ll*y*med.

(*c*) "The vowel *i* is often prefixed to the terminations for the sake of euphony; as, *peraidd*, delicious; *pereiddied, pereiddiach, pereiddiaf.*"

174 (1). The comparison made by suffixes may be called the "inflected comparison," and that made by placing *mor*, *mwy*, &c., before the positive, the "periphrastic comparison." All adjectives may not be compared by inflection; but almost all regular adjectives *may* be compared periphrastically: therefore, if you are uncertain whether a given adjective is compared by inflection, use the periphrastic.—[See Rowland's "Welsh Exercises," § 176.]

175. Some adjectives are compared irregularly.

☞ Those that are printed in *Italics* may also be compared regularly (*e.g.*, *hawdd, hawdded, hawddach, hawddaf*); but the irregular forms are usually preferred by good writers.

Pos.	*Equal.*	*Comp.*	*Super.*
Da, *good.*	cystal (däed).	gwell.	goreu.
Buan, N. W. / Clau, S. W.	*quick.* cynted.	cynt.	cyntaf.
Agos, *near.*	nesed.	nes.	nesaf.
Bâch, *little.* / Bychan, *small.* / Bechan, *f. small.*	lleied.	llai.	lleiaf.
Drwg, *bad.*	cynddrwg, gwaethed, dryced.	gwaeth.	gwaethaf.
Hawdd, *easy.*	hawsed.	haws.	hawsaf.
Anhawdd, *difficult.*	anhawsed.	anhaws.	anhawsaf.
Hen, *old.*	hyned.	hŷn, hynach.	hynaf.
Hir, *long.*	cyhyd.	hŵy.	hwyaf.
Ieuanc, *young.*	ieuenged.	iau.	ieuaf.
Isel, *low.*	ised.	is.	isaf.
Llawer, *much.*	cymmaint.	mwy.	mwyaf.
Llawer, *many.*	cymmaint *or* cynnifer.	mwy.	y rhan fwyaf.

[1] Or *cyn* (*can*) *fyred*, and *mor fyr.*

Pos.	*Equal.*	*Comp.*	*Super.*
Llydan, wide.	lleted.	lletach (lled).	lletaf.
Mawr, *great.*	cymmaint.	mwy.	mwyaf.
Uchel, high.	uched, uwched, cyfuwch.	uwch (uch).	uchaf, uwchaf.
Diwedd, *an end.*	.....	.....	diweddaf, *last.*
Blaen, *fore.*	.....	.....	blaenaf, *foremost.*
Ol, *behind.*	.....	.....	olaf, *last.*
Pen, *the head.*	.....	.....	penaf, *chief.*
.....	.....	trech, *superior.*	trechaf.
.....	.....	.....	eithaf, *furthest.*
.....	.....	.....	prif, *chief.*

(*a*) *Gwerthfawr*, precious, and *gostyngedig*, humble, sometimes borrow the obsolete *gwerthfawrog* and *gostyngaidd* to form their comparisons.

Gwerthfawr.	Gwerthfawr*oced.*	Gwerthfawr*ocach.*	Gwerthfawr*ocaf.*
Gostyngedig.	Gostyng*eiddied.*	Gostyng*eiddiach.*	Gostyng*eiddiaf.*

NUMERALS.

176. Numerals are partly adjectives, partly adverbs.

177. The **cardinal numbers** are *un, dau, tri,* &c. The first ten and the numbers twenty, hundred, thousand, and a few others, are expressed respectively by radical words: the others are formed either by simply uniting two or more numerals, as *trigain* = *tri ugain*, three score; or by the aid of the prep. *ar*, upon, over, or the conj. *a*, and. The numbers between 10 and 20, and between 20 and 40, are expressed by the aid of *ar*: as, *un ar ddeg* = one over ten, 11; *un ar hugain* = one over twenty, 21. Numbers above 40 are formed by the aid of *a*: as, *un a deugain* = one and forty, 41.

(*a*) The cardinals have no plural number, except when (as in English) they are used substantively. Degau, *tens;* ugeiniau, *scores;* cannoedd, *hundreds.*

(*b*) The compound numbers in Gaelic are formed in the same manner as in Welsh. "Thirty:" deich *ar* fhichead = deg *ar* hugain. "Fifty:" deich *is* da fhichead = deg *a* deugain.

(*c*) '*Dau, tri, pedwar*, have *dwy, tair, pedair*, for the feminine gender, which form they assume in all their combinations, when used with feminine nouns.' *Tair* dynes, *tair* dynes ar ddeg.

These numerals have a mas. and fem. form in the cognate dialects.

Welsh.	*Cornish.*	*Arm.*	*Irish.*
Dau.	dou.	dou.	da.
Dwy.	diu.	diu, deu.	di.
Tri.	try.	tri.	tri.
Tair.	ter.	teir.	teoir.
Pedwar.	peswar.	pevar.	cethir.
Pedair.	pedar.	peder.	

178. The **ordinals** are *cyntaf, ail, trydydd, pedwerydd, pummed*, &c., which, with the exception of the first four, are formed by suffixing **ed** or **fed** to the cardinals; as, chwech*ed*, seith*fed*.

(*a*) The ordinals have no plural number, and no distinction of gender, except *deufed, trydydd*, and *pedwerydd*, which make *dwyfed, trydedd*, and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

179. The **adverbial numerals**, answering to the question *how many times?* are made by affixing to any proposed numeral the word *gwaith* (*f.*), time, or *tro* (*m.*), a turn. Pumwaith, *five times;* pumtro, *five turns* or *times*. [*Gwaith* is the more usual.]

180. *Cardinals.* (*one*, &c).	*Ordinals.* (*first*, &c.)	*Numeral adverbs.* (*once*, &c.)
1. Un.	Cyntaf, unfed.[1]	Unwaith, untro.[2]
2. Dau, *f.* dwy.	Ail, eilfed; deufed, *f.* dwyfed.	Dwywaith.
3. Tri, *f.* tair.	Trydydd, *f.* trydedd.	Teirgwaith.
4. Pedwar, *f.* pedair.	Pedwerydd, *f.* pedwaredd.	Pedeirgwaith.
5. Pump, pum.	Pummed.	Pumwaith.
6. Chwech, chwe.	Chweched, chwechfed.	Chwegwaith.
7. Saith.	Seithfed.	Seithwaith.
8. Wyth.	Wythfed.	Wythwaith.
9. Naw.	Nawfed.	Nawgwaith.
10. Deg, deng.	Degfed.	Dengwaith.
11. Un ar ddeg.	Unfed ar ddeg.	Unwaith ar ddeg.
12. Deuddeg (for dau ar ddeg.	Deuddegfed.	Deuddengwaith.
13. Tri (*f.* tair) ar ddeg.	Trydydd (*f.* trydedd) ar ddeg.	Teirgwaith ar ddeg.
14. Pedwar (*f.* pedair) ar ddeg.	Pedwerydd (*f.* pedwaredd) ar ddeg.	Pedeirgwaith ar ddeg.
15. Pymtheg (for pump ar ddeg).	Pymthegfed.	Pymthengwaith.
16. Un ar bymtheg.	Unfed ar bymtheg.	Unwaith ar bymtheg.
17. Dau (*f.* dwy) ar bymtheg.	Ail *or* eilfed ar bymtheg. / Deufed (*f.* dwyfed) ar bymtheg.	Dwywaith ar bymtheg.
18. Tri (*f.* tair) ar bymtheg, deunaw.	Trydydd (*f.* trydedd) ar bymtheg, deunawfed.	Teirgwaith ar bymtheg.
19. Pedwar (*f.* pedair) ar bymtheg.	Pedwerydd (*f.* pedwaredd) ar bymtheg.	Pedeirgwaith ar bymtheg.
20. Ugain.	Ugeinfed.	Ugeinwaith.

[1] Unfed is used in conjunction with another numeral: *unfed* ar ddeg, 11th; *unfed* ar bymtheg, 16th.

[2] Or, *un waith, un tro; dwy waith, dau dro*, &c.

Cardinals. (*one*, &c.)	*Ordinals.* (*first*, &c.)	*Numeral adverbs.* (*once*, &c.)
30. Deg ar hugain.	Degfed ar hugain.	Dengwaith ar hugain.
40. Deugain.	Deugeinfed.	Deugeinwaith.
50. Deg a deugain.	Degfed a deugain.	Dengwaith a deugain.
60. Trigain *or* trigugain.	Trigeinfed, tri ugeinfed.	Trigeinwaith.
80. Pedwar ugain.	Pedwar ugeinfed.	Pedwar ugeinwaith.
100. Cant, can.	Canfed.	Canwaith.
200. Deugant.	Deuganfed.	Deuganwaith.
1000. Mil.	Milfed.	Milwaith.
2000. Dwyfil.	Dwyfilfed.	Dwyfilwaith.
10,000. Myrdd.	Myrddfed.	Myrddwaith, &c.

181. The ordinals have often, like the cardinal numbers, *gwaith*, time, or *tro*, turn, put after them, *gwaith* (fem.) taking the middle, and *tro* (mas.) the radical sound: as, y seithfed *waith;* y seithfed *tro.*

Position of substantives joined to periphrastic numerals. See § 502.

PRONOUNS.

182. Pronouns are divided into *Personal*, *Demonstrative*, *Relative*, *Interrogative*, *Possessive*, and *Indefinite.*

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

183. The Welsh language has personal pronouns in great variety of forms, which were designed in order to speak of a person or thing with a less or greater degree of emphasis. Thus when no great emphasis was to be laid on the pronoun, the simple form *mi*, &c., would be employed; as '*mi a ddeuaf*,' I will come. When the pronoun required to be marked with emphasis, the emphasis would be expressed by doubling the simple form; thus, *myfi = mi mi;* as, '*myfi a ddeuaf*,' *I* will come. When the pron. was to be conjoined, or set in opposition to a word in the preceding clause, this was done by suffixing the word *tau*, '*too*,' '*also*,' to the simple form: thus we have *minnau*, *tithau*, fr. *mi-tau*, *ti-tau;* as, '*minnau a ddeuaf*,' *I also* will come. When emphasis and conjunction were to be expressed in the same pronoun, the simple form would be prefixed to that which expressed conjunction or opposition; thus, *myfinnau*, *tydithau*, *efyntau*, are compounded of *mi-minnau*, *ti-tithau*, *ef-yntau.*

Observ. At present, however, the distinction is not strictly observed between '*the simple*' and '*the antithetic*,' and between '*the conjunctive*' and '*the antithetic and conjunctive.*'

184. (*a*) *Simple.* (*I, thou, he,* &c.)

1.	Mi (fi, i).	1. Ni.
2.	Ti (di).	2. Chwi.
3.	E, ef, fe, o, fo, *mas.* Hi, *fem.*	3. Hwy, hwynt (*coll.* nhw, nhwy).

185. (*b*) *Antithetic.* (*I, thou, he,* &c.)

1.	Myfi.[1]	1. Nyni.
2.	Tydi.	2. Chwychwi.
3.	Efe, efo, *mas.* Hyhi, *fem.*	3. Hwynt-hwy.

186. (*c*) *Conjunctive. I also, but I, I on the other hand,* &c.

1.	Minnau, innau.	1. Ninnau.
2.	Tithau.	2. Chwithau.
3.	Yntau, *mas.* Hithau, *fem.*	3. Hwythau, hwyntau (*coll.* nhwthau, nhwythau).

187. (*d*) *Antithetic and conjunctive.* (*I also indeed,* &c.)

1.	Myfinnau.	1. Nyninnau.
2.	Tydithau.	2. Chwychwithau.
3.	Efyntau, *mas.* Hyhithau, *fem.*	3. Hwynt-hwythau.

(*a*) Some of these pronouns suffer an elision when preceded by the prep. *i;* as, *im'* for *i mi; it'* for *i ti; in'* for *i ni;* and *iwch* is found for *i chwi.*

(*b*) *Of me, of thee, of him,* &c., will not be expressed in Welsh by *o fi, o di, o ef,* &c., but by the following form, which Dr. J. D. Rhys considers the genitive of the personal pronouns.—Grammar, p. 74.

1.	O honof = of me.	1. O honom = of us.
2.	O honot = of thee.	2. O honoch = of you.
3.	O hono = of him. O honi = of her.	3. O honynt = of them.

Or, *o hanof, o hanot,* &c., where the root is more clearly seen. *Hanu* is *to proceed from:* hence *hanof* = proceeding from me.

188. Reflective pronouns are formed by adding, to the possessive pron., *hun* or *hunan,* self; *hun* or *hunain,* selves.

---

[1] In colloquial, and sometimes in written language, this form is corrupted into *y fi; y ti; y fe, y fo; y hi; y ni; y chwi; y nhw* or *y nhwy.*

"*Y hi* oedd yn barnu Israel."—Judges iv. 4.

"Dymunais ef, eb *y hi.*"—1 Sam. i. 20.

1. Fy hun or hunan, *myself.*	1. Ein hun or hunain, *ourselves.*
2. Dy hun or hunan, *thyself.*	2. Eich hun or hunain, *yourselves.*
3. Ei hun or hunan, *himself*, &c.	3. Eu hun or hunain, *themselves.*

189. **Reciprocal pronouns** are formed by adding *gilydd*, one another, to the plural of the possessive.

First person, ein gilydd; *second person*, eich gilydd; *third person*, eu gilydd.

190. "*One another* is expressed also by *y naill y llall* = the one, the other: in this case two distinct persons or parties are spoken of. Hwy a laddant y naill y llall, *they will kill one another.*" [1]

191. **Inseparable pronouns** are so called because they are united to verbs and prepositions to indicate the person and number intended to be expressed: thus, *caraf* is compounded of *car* and *fi*; *ataf* of *at* and *fi*.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

192. The demonstrative pronouns of the Welsh language are divided into six classes, and "make a discrimination of persons and situation, for which the English *this* and *that* are not equivalent." [2]

193. The demonstrative pronouns are used in two ways, as in English: (*a*) *by themselves*; and (*b*) *in construction with substantives.*

194. When they stand by themselves, they are thus declined:

195.

1 Class.	Hwn, *m. this.*	Y rhai hyn *or* yma, *m. these.*
	Hon, *f. this.*	Y rhai hyn *or* yma, *f. these.*
	Hyn,[3] *m. this.*	Hyn, *m. these.*

196.

2 Class.	Hwn yma, *m.* = *this here.*	Y rhai hyn *or* yma, *m.* = *these here.*
	Hon yma, *f.* = *this here.*	Y rhai hyn *or* yma, *f.* = *these here.*
	Hyn yma, *m.* = *this here.*	Hyn yma, *m.* = *these here.*

This form is stronger and more emphatic than the preceding.

197.

3 Class.	Hwna, *m.* = *that there.*	Y rhai yna *or* hyna, *m.* = *those there.*
	Hona, *f.* = *that there.*	Y rhai yna *or* hyna, *f.* = *those there.*
	Hyna, *m.* = *that there.*	Hyna, *m.* = *those there.*

Speaking of an object under cognizance, and near.

---

[1] T. J. Hughes on Syntax. [2] Dr. Pughe.

[3] *Hyn* and its compounds refer to a fact or circumstance.—(See Syntax.)

198.

4 Class.

Hwn yna, *m.* = *that there.*	Y rhai hyn yna, *m.* = *those there.*
Hon yna, *f.* = *that there.*	Y rhai hyn yna, *f.* = *those there.*
Hyn yna, *m.* = *that there.*	Hyn yna, *m.* = *those there.*

This form is stronger and more emphatic than the preceding.

199.

5 Class.

Hwn acw, *m.* = *that yonder.*	Y rhai acw *or* hyn acw, *m.* = *those yonder.*
Hon acw, *f.* = *that yonder.*	Y rhai acw *or* hyn acw, *f.* = *those yonder.*
Hyn acw, *m.* = *that yonder.*	Hyn acw, *m.* = *those yonder.*

Speaking of an object under cognizance, but distant.

200.

6 Class.

Hwnw, *m. that* (*out of sight*).	Y rhai hyny, *m. those* (*out of sight*).
Hono, *f. that* (*out of sight*).	Y rhai hyny, *f. those* (*out of sight*).
Hyny, *m. that.*	Hyny, *m. those.*

Speaking of an object not under cognizance.

(*a*) *Y rhai hyn*, and *y rhai hyny*, are frequently contracted into *y rhai'n*, and *y rhei'ny*. The contracted forms are sometimes, but erroneously, coupled with substantives; as, "*y dynion rhai'n*," "*y dynion rhei'ny*." The correct construction is, "*y dynion hyn*," "*y dynion hyny*."

(*b*) The words *yma*, *yna*, *acw* (here, there, yonder) are strictly adverbs of place, but they are regularly used as demonstrative pronouns.

201. The adverbs of showing, *dyma* and *dyna*, are very frequently used as demonstrative pronouns.

Dyma, *m.* = hwn Dyma, *f.* = hon Dyma, *m.* = hyn	*this.*	Dyma, *m.* = y rhai hyn Dyma, *f.* = y rhai hyn Dyma, *m.* = hyn	*these.*
Dyna, *m.* = hwna Dyna, *f.* = hona Dyna, *m.* = hyna	*that.*	Dyna, *m.* = y rhai yna Dyna, *f.* = y rhai yna Dyna, *m.* = hyna	*those.*

(*a*) *Dyma* and *dyna* most generally include the copula. Dyma'r dyn = hwn yw'r dyn, *this is the man.*

202. When demonstrative pronouns (or adverbs used pronominally) are put in construction with substantives, they are thus declined:

Hwn *or* yma, *m.* Hon *or* yma, *f.*	*this.*	Hyn *or* yma, *m.* Hyn *or* yma, *f.*	*these.*
Yna (*or* hwna), *m.* Yna (*or* hona, *f.*	*that.*	Yna, *m.* Yna, *f.*	*those.*
Acw, *m.* Acw, *f.*	*that.*	Acw, *m.* Acw, *f.*	*those.*
Hwnw, *m.* Hono, *f.*	*that.*	Hyny, *m.* Hyny, *f.*	*those.*

203. Demonstrative pronouns, when put in construction with substantives, follow them, an article or its equivalent always preceding. [Order: art. subs. pron.]

Y dyn hwn = *the man this; this man.*
Y dynion hyny = *the men those; those men.*
Dy fab hwn = *thy son this; this thy son.*

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

204. The form *yr hwn, yr hon,* &c., is varied to denote gender and number: some are varied to denote number only: and others have no variation at all.

205. *a*) Sing. Yr hwn, *m. who, which, he that.* Pl. Y rhai.
Yr hon, *f. who, which, she that.* Y rhai.
Yr hyn,[1] *m. what, that which, which.* Yr hyn.

b) Sing. Pa un (Arm, *pehini*), *who, which.* Pl. Pa rai (Arm, *pere*).

c) Sing. Y neb, yr un, *whosoever.* Y sawl.[2]

d) Ag (Arm. *hag*) and a'r, *who, which, that, as,* are indeclinable.

e) Pwy bynag, *whosoever,* is mas. and fem., sing. and pl.

f) Pa . . bynag, *what* or *which* . . *soever,* may be of any gender and number, according to the word inserted between *pa* and *bynag:* as,

Sing. Pa *ddyn* bynag, *m.* Pl. Pa *ddynion* bynag, *m.*
Pa *ferch* bynag, *f.* Pa *ferched* bynag, *f.*

(*a*) Some grammarians consider *a* as a relative pronoun; as in the sentence "Ti yw y ferch *a* garaf," thou art the maid I love. But as *a* in such sentences is really nothing else than the auxiliary adverb, which in affirmative clauses is placed before the verb when the nom. or the objective precedes, it has been thought proper to deny it a place among relative pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

206. The interrogative pronouns are *pwy* and *pa* (and formerly *py*) for both numbers. [Cf. *pwy* = quis; *pa, py* = πῆ, quâ.]

207. Pwy (*what man* or *woman, who*), is both mas. and fem., and being itself a substantive pronoun, it should not be joined to a noun.

208. Pa (*what*) is an adjective pronoun, and is followed by a noun or a substantive word. Pa *ddyn?* Pa *un?* Pa *rai?*

(*a*) When *pwy* and *pa* are accompanied by *bynag*=L. cunque, they form indefinite relatives. See above, § 205.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

209.

1.	Fy,[3] ym, *my.*	Ein, *our.*
2.	Dy, yth, *thy.*	Eich, *your.*
3.	Ei, *his, hers, its.*	Eu, *their.*

---

[1] *Yr hyn* usually refers to a whole or part of a sentence, as its antecedent.—(See Syntax.)

[2] *Y sawl* is sometimes considered as singular. "*Y sawl* ni *rodia*, ddwydd yw."—Edm. Prys. "Fod yn rhaid i'r *sawl a chwennychai* wrthladd awdurdod, gymmeryd y baich *arno ei hun.*"—Ed. Samuel.

[3] The radical form *my* is obsolete.

(*a*) When *ym, yth, ei, ein, eich. eu,* come after *a, o, i, y, fe, ni, na, pe, mo, tua, gyda,* and sometimes after other words ending with a vowel, they are abbreviated:

'm=ym; *'th*=yth; *'i*=ei; *'n*=ein; *'ch*=eich; *'u*=eu.

Mi *a'm* tad. Ti *a'th* dad. Ẽfe *a'i* dad.
Nyni *a'n* tad. Chwychwi *a'ch* tad. Hwynt-hwy *a'u* tad.

(*b*) "I'w."—When *ei* singular and *eu* plural are preceded by *i*, they are changed into *w: i'w=i ei*, to his, to her, to its; *i'w=i eu*, to their. Aeth *i'w* dŷ; aethant *i'w* tai.

210.

1.	Eiddof, *mine.*	Eiddom, *ours.*
2.	Eiddot, *thine.*	Eiddoch, *yours.*
3.	Eiddo, *his.* Eiddi *or* eiddo, *hers.*	Eiddynt, *theirs.*

211. *Mau* (=meus), my, and *tau* (=tuus), thy, are obsolete, except in poetry.

212. *Ill* (probably=*illi*), *their*, is joined to numerals of the third person, and most commonly to no more than two or three persons. "Aethant yno *ill* dau," *they both went there.* So *ill tri* or *trioedd,* they three.

INDEFINITE OR ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

213. An indefinite or adjective pronoun has been defined as *a word which includes the attribute of an adjective and that of a noun or pronoun.* In the following list, however, there are several words which do not quite come up to this definition, but which have been inserted in order to add a few explanatory notes.

Ambell, *some few.*
Amryw, Amrai, *several.*
Arall, *pl.* Ereill, *another*, pl. *other, others.*
Cyfryw, Y fath, *such.*
Cymmaint, *as* or *so much; as* or *so many.*
Cynnifer, *as* or *so many.*
Chwaneg, *more.*
Dim, *any.*
Gormod, *too much; too many.*
Holl, Oll, *all.*
Llai, *less; fewer.*
Llawer, *much; many.*
Mwy=*chwaneg.*
Neb, *anybody.*
Ni . . dim, *none; no.*
Ni . . neb, *nobody; no.*
Ni . . fawr, Ni . . nemmawr, *but few; but little.*
Pa faint? *how much: how many?*
Peth, *some.*
Pawb, *all* (of persons).
Pob, *every.*
Rhagor=*chwaneg.*
Rhai, *some* (of number).
Rhyw, *some* (sort).
Rhy fâch, *too little; too few.*
Sawl, *many* (in questions). Pa sawl gwaith (*or* sawl gwaith), *how many times?*

Tipyn, *a little.*
Un, *any.*
Yr un, *the same.*
Unrhyw, *any; the same.*
Ychydig, *a few; a little.*
Y naill, *the one.*
Y llall, *pl.* Y lleill, *the other*, pl. *the others.*
Y sawl, *such.*
Y rhan fwyaf (=*the greatest part*), *most.*

214. *Arall*, pl. *ereill*, and *oll*, *follow* the substantives which they qualify; the others *precede.*

"Y goeden *arall*," *the other tree.* "Y gerddi *oll*," *all the gardens.*

(*a*) So also all the cardinal and ordinal numbers *precede*, except *cyntaf*, first, which *follows* its substantive.

215. The following are accompanied by a substantive or substantive word: *ambell*, *holl*, *pob*, *rhyw*, *sawl*, *unrhyw* (any).

"Pob dyn," *every man.* "Unrhyw beth," *any thing.*

216. These admit of being employed with or without a substantive word: *amryw*, *amrai*, *arall*, pl. *ereill*, *cyfryw*, *y fath*, *dim*, *neb*, *peth*, *rhai*, *un*, *yr un*, *unrhyw* (the same), *y naill*, *y sawl.*

"Amryw gyfeillion," *several friends.* "Daeth amryw," *several came.*

216 (1). The following either stand alone or have the prep. *o* (of) between them and the substantive or substantive word: *cymmaint*, *cynnifer*, *chwaneg*, *gormod*, *mwy*, *pa faint*, *rhagor*, *rhy fâch*, *tipyn*, *y rhan fwyaf.* ☞ *Llawer*, *ni . . . fawr*, *ni . . . nemmawr*, *ychydig:* see Syntax.

"A oes genych chwi gymmaint," *have you as many?* "Cymmaint o gnau," *as many nuts.*

217. *Pawb*, and *y llall*, pl. *y lleill*, are never accompanied by a substantive or substantive word.

"Daeth pawb," *all came.* "Dyma'r lleill," *here are the others.*

218. *Dim*, *neb*, *peth*, *pob*, *llawer*, *rhai*, *sawl* (not *y sawl*), *un* (mas.), *yr un* (mas.), govern the *radical* sound; the others govern the *middle.*

"Pob planhigyn," *every plant.* "Peth daioni," *some good.*
"Canlyn y sawl bethau," *follow such things.*—Com. Prayer.

∴ For further observations, see Syntax of Indefinite Pronouns.

VERBS.

219. Verbs are divided into *Active* and *Passive.* Active verbs are again divided into *Transitive* and *Intransitive.*

220. "A *transitive* verb expresses an action exerted upon some object;" as, 'caraf y dyn,' *I love the man.*

221. "An *intransitive* verb expresses an action or a state, which is not communicated from the agent to any other object;" as, 'rhedaf,' *I run.*

222. "A *passive transitive* verb denotes that its nominative is suffering or acted upon." It is formed from the active transitive by suffixing the passive terminations to the root of the verb: thus, 'car-af,' *I love;* passive, 'cer-*ir* fi,' *I am loved.*

223. A *passive impersonal* verb is formed by adding the passive suffixes to the root of the intransitive: thus, 'rhed-af,' *I run;* impers, 'rhed-*ir*,' *it is run; men run.* It has not, strictly speaking, a nom. case, but *fe, fo, e,* frequently precede it in affirmative main clauses; as, '*fe* redir yn gyflym.'

224. A *reflective* (or *middle*) verb denotes that an action is exerted by the agent upon himself. It is formed from transitive verbs by prefixing *ym*[1] to them; as, golchi, *to wash,* ymolchi, *to wash one's self.* [Cf. Gr. λούω, I wash; λούομαι, I wash myself.]

FORMATION OF THE MOODS.

225. The root of a verb is a word in its radical, unchanged form, without any termination added thereto, and it is most usually traced in the *Infinitive mood; the third pers. sing. fut.* of the *Indic.;* or *the second pers. sing. of the Imperative.*

(*a*) *Valpy* remarks respecting the 2d Aorist Imperative of the Greek: "This tense appears to be the simplest form of the root of the verb. The first use of language is to express a want; hence the Imperative was naturally one of the first objects of speech."[2]

---

[1] *Ym* is probably either another form of the pron. *mi* or cognate with the Greek ομ-αι.

[2] Valpy's Greek Grammar.

226. The infinitive mood.—Many verbs are used in the infinitive without any addition of suffixes designative of that mood.

Dangos, *to show.* Ateb, *to answer.* Sôn, *to mention.*

227. But, in general, certain endings, characteristic of the Infinitive, are appended to the root-words; and if the root-words contain any of the mutable vowels, *a, ai, au, aw, w*, these mutables generally undergo a change, according to the system of vowel mutations. *Ai, au, aw, w*, are respectively changed into *ei, eu, o, y*; and *a* is changed into *e* before the suffixes *i, yll, ych*, and sometimes *u*.

Infin.	*Root.*	*Infin.*	*Root.*
Dysg-u, *to learn.*	Dysg.	Cysg-u, *to sleep.*	Cwsg.
Peid-io, *to cease.*	Paid.	Per-i, *to cause.*	Par.
Blodeu-o, *to blossom.*	Blodau.	Sef-yll, *to stand.*	Saf.
Por-i, *to graze.*	Pawr.	Chwennych, *to desire.*	Chwant.

228. Verbs are formed from *nouns* sing. or pl.; from *adjectives*; and occasionally from some other parts of speech.

Caru, *to love*, fr. câr, *friend.* Blodeuo, *to blossom*, fr. blodau, *blossoms.* Cyfiawnhau, *to justify*, fr. cyfiawn, *just.*

229. The **Infinitive endings** most frequently in vogue are the following: *a; hau* (or *âu*); *i; o* (or *aw*); *io* (or *iaw*); and *u*.

Bwyta, *to eat.*	Bywhau, *to quicken.*	Tori, *to break.*
Curo (curaw), *to beat.*	Ceisio (ceisiaw), *to seek.*	Rhanu, *to divide.*

230. The following *Infinitive endings* do not occur so frequently: *ael* (or *el*); *aeth; ain; ian; al, ial; ed, ied; eg; fan; ur; w; y; ych; yd; yll.*

Gallael (gallel), *to be able.*	Nychial, *to be in pain.*	Bwrw, *to throw.*
Marchogaeth, *to ride.*	Ystyried, *to consider.*	Hely, *to gather.*
Llefain, *to cry.*	Rhedeg, *to run.*	Chwennych, *to wish.*
Ichian, *to screak.*	Hedfan, *to hover.*	Cymmeryd, *to take.*
Arthal, *to bark.*	Gwneuthur, *to do.*	Sefyll, *to stand.*
Cerdded, *to walk.*		

231. *Observations.*—*a*) *O* and *io* are used in simple or historical language: *aw* and *iaw* in poetry and in nervous prose. But some prefer *aw* and *iaw*, even in simple prose, when the following word begins with *o*. "Syrthiaw o'r awyr," *to fall from the sky.*

b) *Hau* (or *âu*) is generally attached to adjectives. Llawenhau, from llawen, *cheerful*; iachâu, fr. iach, *healthy.* The open form *häau* or *äau*, is also occasionally met with.

c) *The difference between* i *and* u.—(*a*) If the preceding syllable contains *oe* or *o* (whether radical or a mutation of *aw*); or if it ends in *w*, the suffix *i* is employed: as, poeni, poeri, oeri; tori, ofni, lloni; profi (fr. prawf), noddi (fr. nawdd); sylwi, meddwi. (*b*) If *a* of the penult has been changed into *e*, *i* is generally used: as, peri (fr. par), geni (fr. gan), erchi (fr. arch).

(*c*) In other cases *u* is the common termination; as, malu, pechu, baeddu, cysgu. But there are several exceptions; such as medi, gwaeddi, &c. Some words are written both ways: gweini *or* gweinu, crawni *or* crawnu, cyflawni *or* cyflawnu, &c.

d) The affix *a* generally signifies *to gather* or *collect;* as, afaleua, *to gather apples;* gwlana, *to gather wool;* ceinioca, *to gather pence.*

e) *Ain, ian, al, ial, fan,* imply *frequency,* or *a gradual and continued action.* Ochain, ichian, arthal, naddial, hedfan. *F* is sometimes prefixed to *ain;* as, wylo-*fain,* cwyno-*fain.*

232. **Finite Moods.**—The finite moods are formed from the infinitive.

233. When verbs have no infinitive endings, nor any of the mutables *a, ai, au, aw,* and *w,* in the last syllable, the finite moods[1] are formed simply by adding to the infinitive the various terminations characterising them: as,

Ateb, *to answer:* ateb-*af,* ateb-*wn,* ateb-*ais,* ateb-*aswn,* ateb-*wyf.*

234. But if the last syllable of the infinitive contains any of the above mutable vowels, these vowels are often changed into others, when finite suffixes are added. *Ai* and *w* are changed respectively into *ei* and *y; a, au, aw,* are in some tenses changed respectively into *e, eu, ew.*

Arw*ain*, *to lead*, arw*ei*niais.	H*au*, *to sow*, h*eu*ais.
Hebr*wng*, *to accompany*, hebr*yng*ais.	Add*aw*, *to promise*, add*ew*ais.
Att*al*, *to stop*, att*el*iais	Gad*aw*, *to leave*, gad*ew*ais.

235. When verbs have infinitive endings, most of these are struck off at the accession of finite suffixes: as,

Rhed-*eg*, *to run:* rhed-*af*, rhed-*wn*, rhed-*ais.*

a) When *a* occurs in the root-word, and has been changed into *e* in consequence of the infinitive endings *i* and *yll*, the root-word will reassume its radical form (*i.e.*, *e* will be changed into *a*), when a finite ending is substituted.

Root.	*Infin.*	*Finite.*
Taw.	Tew-i.	Taw-af.
Saf.	Sef-yll.	Saf-af.

Additional Examples.—Peri, *to cause,* paraf; llenwi, *to fill,* llanwaf; erchi, *to order,* archaf; perchi, *to respect,* parchaf.

236. **Infinitive endings struck off.**—The following endings of the infinitive are cut off in the formation of the finite moods: *a; ael* (*el*); *aeth; ain; ed; eg; i; o* (*aw*); *u; ur; yd; yll.*

Ceinioc-*a.*	Llef-*ain.*	Tor-*i.*	Gwneuth-*ur.*
Gad-*ael.*	Clyw-*ed.*	Cur-*o.*	Gochel-*yd.*
Marchog-*aeth.*	Rhed-*eg.*	Tal-*u.*	Sef-*yll.*

[1] Except 3d pers. sing. of first future.

a) Such verbs as *troi, gordoi, ymdroi, dileu, cyfleu,* &c., belong to this class. Tro*i*, troaf; dile*u*, dileaf.

b) *Taraw, gadaw, addaw, gwrandaw,*[1] and their compounds *ymdaraw, ymadaw,* &c., retain *aw* in the finite moods: as, tara*w*af, tara*w*odd, &c.

c) *A* is generally retained in the finite tenses of bwyta, *to eat*, lladrata, *to steal*, marchnata, *to market:* as, bwytäodd, lladratäodd, marchnatäodd.

237. Such as have *io* and *ied* in the infinitive, strike off *o* and *ed*, and retain *i;* and such as have *hau* (or *âu*) strike off *u*, and retain *ha* (or *â*).

Ceis-*io*, *to seek*, ceis-*i*wn.	Tew-*hau*, *to fatten*, tew-*ha*wn.
Ystyr-*ied*, *to consider*, ystyr-*i*wn.	Coff-*âu*, *to remind*, coff-*â*wn.

a) Ymddiried, *to trust*, suffers no elision: ymddir*ied*af.

238. Some other verbs, although their infinitives do not end in *io*, yet borrow *i* in the finite moods; namely, infinitives ending in *l*, and some which end in *n, id, yg, air, iw:* as,

Dal, *to hold*, dal*i*af.	Cynnyg, *to offer*, cynnyg*i*af.
Arwain, *to lead*, arwein*i*af.	Cynniwair, *to frequent*, cynniweir*i*af.
Ymlid, *to pursue*, ymlid*i*af.	Edliw, *to upbraid*, edliw*i*af.

So also erfyn, *to beg;* benthyg, *to borrow;* cellwair, *to jest;* erlid, *to pursue;* ymliw, *to reproach;* newid, *to change.*

a) But in the dialect of S. W. the *i* is scarcely ever borrowed.

239. **Infinitive endings retained.**—Verbs ending in *eu, w, fan,* and *ych,* suffer no elision: as,

Dechreu, *to begin*, dechreu*a*f.	Hedfan, *to hover*, hedfan*a*f.
Cadw, *to keep*, cadw*a*f.	Chwennych, *to desire*, chwennych*a*f.

(*a*) Bwrw, *to cast*, rejects *w*, and borrows *i:* as, bwrw, bwri*a*f. Creu, *to create*, rejects *u;* creu, creaf.

(*b*) In verbs ending in *eu* (= *ĕu*), *u* is cut off: dile*u* (= dilĕ*u*), dileaf. See § 236 (*a*).

240. **Vowel inflections.**—Such as have *ai* and *w*, followed by a consonant, in the last syllable of the infinitive, respectively change these vowels into *ei* and *y*, when a finite suffix is added: as,

Arw*ai*n, *to lead*, arw*ei*niaf.	Hebr*w*ng, *to accompany*, hebr*y*ngaf.
Cellw*ai*r, *to joke*, cellw*ei*riaf.	Gost*w*ng, *to lower*, gost*y*ngaf.

(*a*) *Ae* in *aeth*, he went, *daeth*, he came, and *gwnaeth*, he did, are sometimes changed into *eu*, in the perf. and pluperfect, when a syllable is added. *Aethym* or *euthym; aethost* or *euthost*, &c.

---

[1] These verbs are frequently written *taro, gado, addo, gwrando,* in the infinitive.

241. Such verbs as have *a* in the penult of the infinitive (as car*u*, *to love*); and those which retain *aw*, *ha* (or *â*), and *a* in the finite moods (as tar*aw*, *to strike*, cyfiawn*hau*, *to justify*, bwyt*a*, *to eat*); and infinitives ending in *au* (as c*au*, *to shut*, arg*au*, *to enclose*, gwarch*au*, *to besiege*), generally, but not necessarily, change *a* into *e* before the finite endings **i, it, ais, aist, wch, ych, ir,** and **id**; [*i.e.*, in the 2*d pers. sing. and pl. of pres. and first future* (*i*, *wch*); 2*d pers. sing. of imperfect*, (*id*); 1*st and* 2*d pers. sing. of perfect* (*ais*, *aist*); *and* 2*d pers. pl. of Imperative* (*wch*); and in *present*, *imperfect*, *and* 1*st future of Passive voice* (*ir*, *id*).]

Caru. (Active.

Pr. and fut.,	sing.	2. Ceri = cari.	Pl. 2. Cerwch = carwch.
Imperf.,	sing.	2. Cerit = carit.	
Perf.,	sing.	1. Cerais = carais.	
		2. Ceraist = caraist.	
Imperative.			Pl. 2. Cerwch = carwch.

(Passive.)

Pres. and fut. Cerir = carir. Imperf. Cerid = carid.

242. Omission of vowels.—*A* is cut off before *s* (*i.e.*, in the *pl. number of the perfect*, and *the sing. and pl. of the pluperfect*) when *w*, preceded by a *vowel*, ends the root-word; and it is sometimes cut off in the same tenses, when the root-word ends with *l*.

Cl*yw*-ed, *to hear:* clywsom = clywasom.
Gw*el*-ed, *to see:* gwelsom = gwelasom.

(*a*) If *w* is preceded by a *consonant*, the conjugation is regular; as, berwi, *to boil*, berwasom.

(*b*) In *colloquial* language most verbs omit *a* in the above-mentioned tenses. Darllen*som*, cymmer*som*, edrych*som*, &c.

243. Verbs ending in *oi* (as, *ffoi*, *ymdroi*) retain *i* of the infinitive, and cut off *a* of the finite endings before *s* (*i.e.*, in the pl. number of the perfect, and sing. and pl. of the pluperfect).

Ffoi, *to flee:* ffoisom = ffoasom.

But some write *ffoasom*, *ffoasoch*, *ffoasant*, &c., regularly.

244. In the finite tenses of some verbs, two of the same vowels meet; and in most cases, as will be seen below, one of them is omitted.

a) In verbs ending in *hau* (or *âu*) and such as retain *a* in the finite moods (as bwyta, *to eat*) two *a*'s meet in finite tenses ending in *af, a, ant, ai:* one *a* is dropped, its omission being indicated by a circumflex over the retained vowel. [Some few writers retain both vowels.]

Cyfiawnhâf = cyfiawnhäaf. Cyfiawnhânt = cyfiawnhäant.
Cyfiawnhâ = cyfiawnhäa. Cyfiawnhâi = cyfiawnhäai.

In the perf. plural active, and plup. active and passive of the same verbs, two *a*'s meet, one in the penult and the other in the antepenult: one is always dropped, and no mark is used to indicate its omission.

Cyfiawnhasom = cyfiawnhaasom, &c.

b) In verbs whose infinitives end in *io* and *ied* (as *ceisio, ystyried*), two *i*'s meet where the finite tenses *i, it, ir, id,* occur: one is always omitted, and nothing indicates its omission.

Ceisi = ceisïi. Ceisir = ceisïir.
Ceisit = ceisïit. Ceisid = ceisïid.

(*a*) But if the verb ends in *ïo* (with a diæresis); as, gweddïo, *to pray,* mechnïo, *to bail,* the two vowels are retained.

Gweddïi. Gweddïit. Gweddïir. Gweddïid.

So also in verbs ending in *eu* = ëu (as dileu, *to abolish*) the two *e*'s are retained. These vowels meet in the finite tenses which end in *em, ech, ent, ed, er.*

Dilëem. Dilëech. Dilëent. Dilëed. Dilëer.

c) In verbs whose root-words end in *w* (as galw, *to call,* enw-i, *to name,* gwrandaw, *to listen,* ciniaw-a, *to dine,* clyw-ed, *to hear*) two *w*'s meet in finite tenses ending in *wn, wch, wyf, wyd;* and one of them is omitted. [Some writers, however, retain both vowels in such verbs as *gwrandaw, ciniawa, clywed.*]

Galwn=galwwn. Galwyf=galwwyf.
Gelwch=gelwwch. Galwyd=galwwyd.

d) In verbs whose infinitives end in *oi* (as ffoi, *to flee*), two *o*'s meet where the finite tenses end in *odd, of, o, om, och, ont;* one vowel is dropped, and its omission is indicated by a circumflex. [But some good writers retain both vowels.]

Ffôdd, *or* fföodd. Ffôm, *or* fföom.
Ffôf, *or* fföof. Ffôch, *or* ffööch.
Ffô, *or* fföo. Ffônt, *or* fföont.

DEFINITION OF THE MOODS.

245. A *mood* expresses the mode or manner in which the verbal action or state is described.

246. "The *indicative* mood declares the action or state to exist simply, and as a fact."

247. The *imperative* mood commands, requests, or directs an action to be done, or a state to exist.

248. The *subjunctive* (or *conjunctive*) mood declares an action or state conceived as possible under certain conditions.

249. That which is called the "*potential* mood" (*i.e.* implying *liberty, power, obligation,* &c.), is expressed in Welsh, as in English, by the aid of auxiliary verbs; as, *gallaf* fyned, I may go; *medraf* ddysgu, I can learn; *dylech* fyned, you ought to go.

250. "The *infinitive* mood is the notion of the verb standing in its simplest form, without reference to any particular subject."

TENSES OF VERBS.

251. A *tense* expresses the time of the action or state of the verb.

252. Tenses are divided into *past, present,* and *future;* or more minutely, into *present, imperfect, perfect, pluperfect, future,* and *future perfect.*

253. Present.—*Present tense Indicative* describes an action or state conceived as doing or existing at the present time. The Welsh language has no inflected form to describe present tense for any of its verbs, except *bod,* to be, and the irregular *gwn,* I know, and its compound *adwaen,* I know: hence this tense either borrows the form of the future, as, *dysgaf, dysgir fi;* or is expressed periphrastically by the inflections of *bod* and the present participle of the other verb: as, *wyf yn dysgu,* I am learning; *ydys yn fy nysgu,* I am being taught. [One of the passive forms borrows *bod,* to be, and *cael,* to have; as, *wyf yn cael fy nysgu* = I am having my teaching.]

(*a*) There is the same difference between *dysgaf* and *wyf yn dysgu*, as there is between *I learn* and *I am learning;* but this difference of meaning is not strictly attended to. The periphrastic form is the more frequent, and is always used when the time of an action is to be marked with exactness.

(*b*) Habit or custom is expressed by the future of *bod* with a participle: as, *byddaf yn myned yno*, I am in the habit of going there.

254. *The present Subjunctive* is the same as the inflected form of the future perfect; as, *dysgwyf, dysger fi.*

255. Imperfect.—The *Imperfect Indicative* describes (*a*) "An action or state continuing and not completed, at some given point of past time." This is expressed in Welsh by the imperfect *oeddwn*, &c., with the present participle of the other verb; as, *oeddwn yn dysgu; oeddid yn fy nysgu.*

(*a*) The same idea is expressed by the *inflected form* of a certain class of verbs: such as *gweled, gwybod, cysgu, eistedd.*

256. (*β*) It describes *habits, customs, actions frequently repeated*, &c., and is expressed by the inflected form of the verb; as, *dysgwn, dysgid fi;* or by the imperfect *byddwn*, &c., with the present participle of the other verb; as, *byddwn yn dysgu, byddid yn fy nysgu.*

257. The *imperfect Subjunctive* borrows the inflected form of the Indicative, or the periphrastic made by "*byddwn;*" as, *dysgwn*, or *byddwn yn dysgu.*

258. Perfect.—The *perfect definite* (or *present perfect*) brings a past action into close connection with present time. (*a*) It is expressed by the present Indicative of *bod* with a past participle; as, *wyf wedi dysgu*, I have learnt; *wyf wedi* (or *wedi cael*) *fy nysgu*, I have been taught. (*β*) It is expressed frequently, but not so properly, by the inflected form; as, *dysgais, dysgwyd fi.*

259. The *perfect indefinite* (or *aorist*) describes past time indefinitely, and is represented by the inflected form of the verb; as, *dysgais*, I learnt; *dysgwyd fi*, I was taught.

260. Pluperfect.—The pluperfect Indic. describes an action as completed before the occurrence of another past action. It is expressed. (*a*) by the imperf. of *bod* with a past participle; as, *oeddwn wedi dysgu*, I had learnt; *oeddwn wedi* (or *wedi cael*) *fy nysgu*, I had been taught; (*β*) by the

inflections of the verb; as, *dysgaswn, dysgasid fi.* [The periphrastic occurs oftener than the inflected form.]

261. The *pluperfect Subjunctive* is expressed either by the inflected form of the plup. Indic., as, *dysgaswn, dysgasid fi;* or by *buaswn,* &c., with a participle; as, *buaswn wedi dysgu, buasid wedi fy nysgu.*

262. **Future.**—The *future* speaks of an action or state in future time. It is expressed by inflection of the verbs; as, *dysgaf,* I will learn; *dysgir fi,* I shall be taught; and often by the future of the auxiliary *gwneyd,* to do, with the infinitive verb; as, *gwnaf ddysgu; gwneir fy nysgu.*

263. *Duty, compulsion,* &c., will be expressed by the future of *cael,* to have, with the other verb in the infinitive mood; as, *caf ddysgu,* I *shall* learn.

264. **Future perfect.**—This tense expresses that an action will have been completed before the occurrence of another action. It is expressed (α) by the first future of *bod* and the past participle of the other verb; as, *byddaf wedi dysgu,* I shall have learnt; *byddaf wedi* (or *wedi cael*) *fy ny u,* I shall have been taught; (β) by an inflected form, in subjoined clauses; as, *pan ddysgwyf,* when I shall have learnt; *pan ddysger fi,* when I shall have been taught. [This latter form, however, occurs oftener in present Subjunctive.]

265. **A progressive state** is expressed by the inflections of *bod* with the present participle, or a compound of the present participle, of the other verb; as,

Present.	Wyf yn dysgu,	*I am learning.*
Imperf.	Oeddwn yn dysgu,	*I was learning.*
Perfect.	Bum yn dysgu, / Wyf wedi bod yn dysgu,	*I have been learning.*
Plup.	Buaswn yn dysgu, / Oeddwn wedi bod yn dysgu,	*I had been learning.*
Future.	Byddaf yn dysgu,	*I shall be learning.*

PARTICIPLES.

266. Participles are expressed in Welsh by the Infinitive mood of any proposed verb, preceded by certain particles embracing the notion of present, past, and future time.

267. Present.—Present active is formed by placing **yn**,[1] **gan** (*can*), or **dan** (*tan*), before the verb; as, *yn dysgu, gan ddysgu, dan ddysgu.*

(*a*) *Yn* is followed by the *radical; gan* and *dan* by the *middle.*

(*b*) *Gan* and *dan* are employed to form apposition-participles; *yn* is employed to form both apposition-participles, and participles used in periphrastic verbs.

268. Past.—Past active is formed by putting **wedi** (or **gwedi**), **ar ol**, or sometimes **yn ol**, before the verb; as, *wedi dysgu, ar ol dysgu, yn ol dysgu.*

(*a*) *Wedi* (or *gwedi*), *ar ol*, and *yn ol*, govern the *radical* sound.

(*b*) *Ar ol*, and *yn ol*, form apposition-participles; *wedi* (or *gwedi*) forms both apposition-participles, and participles used in periphrastic verbs.

269. Future.—Future active is made by putting **ar**, or **ar fedr** (= L. *futurus*), before the verb; as, *ar ddysgu, ar fedr dysgu.*

(*a*) *Ar* governs the *middle; ar fedr*, the *radical* sound.

270. The **passive participle** is distinguished from the active by having *cael* and the *possessive pronoun* inserted between the time-defining particle and the verb; as, present, yn **cael fy** nysgu; past, wedi **cael fy** nysgu (or wedi **fy** nysgu); future, ar **gael fy** nysgu.

271. Negation is expressed by *heb*, without. In present and future *heb fod* (without being) is followed by the positive forms; in perfect past *heb* is substituted for *wedi, ar ol*, or *yn ol.*

Present.	Heb fod yn dysgu. (*Active.*)
	Heb fod yn cael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)
Perf. past.	Heb ddysgu. (*Active.*)
	Heb gael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)
Future.	Heb fod ar ddysgu. (*Active.*)
	Heb fod ar gael fy nysgu. (*Passive.*)

272. Edig and **adwy.**—*Edig* has in some words the force of a past passive participle; as, *cyfieithiedig gan Arthur*, translated by Arthur: in other words it is looked upon as an adjective termination; as, *dyn dysgedig*, a learned man. *Adwy* implies power in future time, corresponding to '*able;*' as *caffaeladwy*, obtainable.

---

[1] Probably the particle *yn* is cognate with the Greek *ων*, the Latin *ens*, and the English *ing*. (Διδάσκων, doc*ens*, teach*ing*, *yn* dysgu.) Others are of opinion that it signifies *in*, or *in the act of;* so that '*yn dysgu*' would be literally translated *in the act of learn.*

CONJUGATION OF VERBS.

The verb Bod, *to be.*

273. Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Form I. — I am.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Wyf *or* ydwyf (fi).[1]	1. Ym *or* ydym (ni).
2. Wyt *or* ydwyt (ti).	2. Ych *or* ydych (chwi).
3. Y mae (efe).[2]	3. Y maent (hwy).
Efe sydd (*or* sy).	Hwynt-hwy sydd (*or* sy).
Nid yw *or* ydyw (efe).	Nid ynt *or* ydynt (hwy).
Nid oes (dyn).[3]	Nid oes (dynion).

Form II.—I am wont to be. [Of habit or custom.]

1. Byddaf (fi).	1. Byddwn (ni).
2. Byddi (di).	2. Byddwch (chwi).
3. Bydd (efe).	3. Byddant (hwy).

[*Cf.* Irish. Sing. *Bidhim; bidhir; bidh se.* Pl. *Bidhmuid; bidhidh; bidhid.*—Bourke's Irish Grammar, p. 109.]

Imperfect Tense.

Form I. — I was.

1. Oeddwn (i).	1. Oeddem *or* oeddym (ni).
2. Oeddit (ti).	2. Oeddech *or* oeddych (chwi).
3. Oedd *or* ydoedd (efe).	3. Oeddent *or* oeddynt (hwy).

Contracted Form.

1. Own. 2. Oit. 3. Oedd. 1. Oem. 2. Oech. 3. Oent.

---

[1] There is no difference of meaning between *wyf* and *ydwyf*, &c. In South Wales the simple form of the verb is preferred: *wyf, wyt, yw; ym, ych, ynt.* In North Wales the compound form is preferred: *ydwyf, ydwyt, ydyw; ydym, ydych, ydynt.*

Yd is probably cognate with the Latin *id*, and might have been formerly employed as a nom. before all persons, like *it* in English. (*It* is I, *it* is they.)

Wyf, wyt, &c., are compounded of *yw* with a pronoun: thus, *wyf* = *yw-mi; wyt* = *yw-ti; ŷm* = *yw-ni? ŷch* = *yw-chwi; ŷnt* = *yw-hwynt.*

Sydd is compounded of *sy* and *ydd* = *id*, and signifies *it is.*

Oes comes, perhaps, from *o* = he or it, and *es* = *ys* and Eng. *is: oes* = he, or it is.

[2] The difference of meaning between *mae, sydd, yw* or *ydyw*, and *oes*, is explained under the Syntax of "Bod." § 614, &c.

[3] The form *ydoes*, contracted *'does*, still exists in colloquial language. "Os *'does* dim teimlad ynddo" = os *ydoes.*

Form II.—I was wont to be, or used to be. [Of habit.]

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Byddwn (i).	1. Byddem (ni).[1]
2. Byddit (ti).	2. Byddech (chwi).
3. Byddai (efe).	3. Byddent (hwy).

[*Cf.* Irish. Sing. *Bhidhinn; bhidhthea; bhidheadh se.* Pl. *Bhidhmuis; bhidhthi; bhidhdis.*]

Perfect indefinite and *definite.*

I was ; I have been.

1. Bum (i).[2]	1. Buom *or* buasom (ni).
2. Buost (ti).	2. Buoch *or* buasoch (chwi).
3. Bu (efe).	3. Buont, buant, *or* buasant (hwy).

Colloquial Form.

Sing. 1. Buo, buais. 2. Buaist. 3. Buodd, bues.

Perfect definite (or *Present perfect*).

I have been.

1. Wyf *or* ydwyf (fi) wedi bod.	1. Ym *or* ydym (ni) wedi bod.
2. Wyt *or* ydwyt (ti) wedi bod.	2. Ych *or* ydych (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Y mae (efe) wedi bod.	3. Y maent (hwy) wedi bod.
Efe sydd wedi bod.	Hwynt-hwy sydd wedi bod.
Nid yw *or* ydyw (efe) wedi bod.	Nid ynt *or* ydynt (hwy) wedi bod.
Nid oes (dyn) wedi bod.	Nid oes (dynion) wedi bod.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—I had been.

1. Buaswn (i).	1. Buasem (ni).[3]
2. Buasit (ti).	2. Buasech (chwi).
3. Buasai (efe).	3. Buasent (hwy).

This form is chiefly used in subjoined clauses, such as *relative, indirect interrogative, antithetic transitive,* &c. ["Welsh Exercises," § 381.]

Form II.—I had been.

1. Oeddwn (i) wedi bod.	1. Oeddem (ni) wedi bod.
2. Oeddit (ti) wedi bod.	2. Oeddech (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Oedd *or* ydoedd (efe) wedi bod.	3. Oeddent (hwy) wedi bod.

Future Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will be.

1. Byddaf (fi).	1. Byddwn (ni).
2. Byddi (di).	2. Byddwch (chwi).
3. Bydd (efe).	3. Byddant (hwy).

---

[1] Or occasionally, *byddym, byddych, byddynt.*

[2] *Bum* is compounded of *bu* and *mi* (or *ym*). The remaining terminations of *bod* are the same as those of *dysgu.*

[3] Or occasionally, *buesym, buesych, buesynt.*

Form II.—I shall or will be.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Bydd i mi fod.	1. Bydd i ni fod.
2. Bydd i ti fod.	2. Bydd i chwi fod.
3. Bydd iddo (ef) fod.	3. Bydd iddynt (hwy) fod.

This form occurs often after *os* (if), and in dependent clauses.

Form III.—I will be. [Futurity and promise.]

1. Gwnaf (fi) fod.	1. Gwnawn (ni) fod.
2. Gwnei (di) fod.	2. Gwnewch (chwi) fod.
3. Gwna (efe) fod.	3. Gwnânt (hwy) fod.

Form IV.—I shall be. [Permission and compulsion.]

1. Câf (fi) fod.	1. Cawn (ni) fod.
2. Cei (di) fod.	2. Cewch (chwi) fod.
3. Caiff (efe) fod.	3. Cânt (hwy) fod.

Future-perfect Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will have been.

1. Byddaf (fi) wedi bod.	1. Byddwn (ni) wedi bod.
2. Byddi (di) wedi bod.	2. Byddwch (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Bydd (efe) wedi bod.	3. Byddant (hwy) wedi bod.

Form II.—I shall or will have been. [In subjoined clauses.]

1. Byddwyf *or* byddof (fi).	1. Byddom (ni).
2. Byddych *or* -ech (di) *or* byddot (ti).	2. Byddoch (chwi).
3. Byddo (efe).	3. Byddont (hwy).

Contracted Form.

Sing. 1. Bŵyf, bôf. 2. Bŷch, bêch, bôt. 3. Bo.
Pl. 1. Bôm. 2. Bôch 3. Bônt.

274. Imperative Mood.

Form I.—Be.

1. (Byddwyf fi).	1. Byddwn (ni).
2. Bydd (di).	2. Byddwch (chwi).
3. Bydded (ef *or* efe).	3. Byddant, -ont, -ent (hwy).

Contracted Form.

Sing. 3. Boed, poed, bîd. Pl. 3. Boent, bint.

Form II.—Let me be; may I be.

1. Bydded i mi fod	1. Bydded i ni fod.
2. Bydded i ti fod.	2. Bydded i chwi fod.
3. Bydded iddo (ef) fod. Bydded iddi (hi) fod.	3. Bydded iddynt (hwy) fod.

Form III.—Let me be (= allow me to be).

Gâd—*plural*, gadewch.

1. I mi fod, *let me be.*	1. I ni fod, *let us be.*
3. Iddo (ef) fod, *let him be.*	3. Iddynt (hwy) fod, *let them be.*

This form is a command given to the 2d person respecting the first or third.

275. Subjunctive Mood. [See § 612 (1), &c.]

Present Tense.

Form I.—(That) I may be, should be.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Byddwyf (fi).	1. Byddom (ni).
2. Byddych *or* -ech (di), *or* byddot (ti).	2. Byddoch (chwi).
3. Byddo (efe).	3. Byddont (hwy).

Contracted Form.

Sing.	1. Bŵyf, bôf.	2. Bŷch, bêch, bôt.	3. Bo.
Pl.	1. Bôm.	2. Bôch.	3. Bônt.

Form II.—(That) I may be, should be.

1. Byddo (*or* bo) i mi fod.	1. Byddo (*or* bo) i ni fod.
2. Byddo (*or* bo) i ti fod.	2. Byddo (*or* bo) i chwi fod.
3. Byddo (*or* bo) iddo (ef) fod. Byddo (*or* bo) iddi (hi) fod.	3. Byddo (*or* bo) iddynt (hwy) fod. Byddo (*or* bo) iddynt (hwy) fod.

Form III.—May I be (happy). [Optative.]

1. (Dedwydd) a fyddwyf.	1. (Dedwydd) a fyddom.
2. (Dedwydd) a fyddych, &c.	2. (Dedwydd) a fyddoch.
3. (Dedwydd) a fyddo.	3. (Dedwydd) a fyddont.

(*a*) When **may** is a main verb, and expresses *liberty, permission, power*, it is rendered into W. by an inflection of *gallu*. See § 282. "He *may* go, if he wishes," *gall* fyned, os dewisa.

(*b*) When **may** is a main verb, and expresses *possibility*, it is usually rendered into W. by words equivalent to "perhaps that—will." "He *may* come to-morrow," dichon [hwyrach, fe allai] y daw efe y fory (= *perhaps that he will come to-morrow*).

Imperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I would, should, or might be; (if) I were.

1. Byddwn (i).	1. Byddem (ni).[1]
2. Byddit (ti).	2. Byddech (chwi).
3. Byddai (efe).	3. Byddent (hwy).

Contracted Form.

[Usually after *pe*, if, *oni*, if . . not, and *O na*, would that.]

Sing.	1. Bawn.[2]	2. Bâit (*coll.* bâet).	3. Bâi (*coll.* bâe).
Pl.	1. Baem.[3]	2. Baech.	3. Baent.

---

[1] Or sometimes, *byddym, byddych, byddynt*.

[2] *Ped*, if, and the contracted form *bawn*, &c., sometimes coalesce into one word.

Sing. Pettwn (*if I were*); pottit; pettai. Pl. Pettym; pettych; pettynt.

"Mi a fynwn *pettych* chwi oll yn llefaru â thafodau dieithr."—1 Cor. xiv. 5.

Ped is likewise prefixed to the pluperfect.

Sing. Pettaswn (*if I had been*); pettasit; pettasai.
Pl. Pettasem; pettasech; pettasent.

[3] Or occasionally, *beym, beych, beynt*.

Form II.—(That) I would, should, or might be; (if) I were.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Byddai i mi fod.	1. Byddai i ni fod.
2. Byddai i ti fod.	2. Byddai i chwi fod.
3. Byddai iddo (ef) fod. Byddai iddi (hi) fod.	3. Byddai iddynt (hwy) fod.

Form III.—(That) I would be. [Promise.]

1. Gwnawn (i) fod.	1. Gwnaem (ni) fod.
2. Gwnait (ti) fod.	2. Gwnaech (chwi) fod.
3. Gwnai (efe) fod.	3. Gwnaent (hwy) fod.

Form IV.—(That) I should be. [Permission and compulsion.]

1. Cawn (i) fod.	1. Caem (ni) fod.
2. Cait (ti) fod.	2. Caech (chwi) fod.
3. Câi (efe) fod.	3. Caent (hwy) fod.

Form V.—Would that I were. [Optative.]

1. O na byddwn (*or* bawn) i.	1. O na byddem (*or* baem) ni.
2. O na byddit (*or* bâit) ti.	2. O na byddech (*or* baech) chwi.
3. O na byddai (*or* bâi) efe.	3. O na byddent (*or* baent) hwy.

(*a*) When **should** = *ought to*, it is rendered into Welsh by "*dylwn*," &c. See § 283.

(*b*) When **might** expresses *liberty*, *permission*, *power*, it is rendered by an inflection of "*gallu*." See § 282.

Perfect Tense.

[There is no form in Welsh corresponding to this tense. It is usually expressed by the adv. *dichon*, *hwyrach*, or *fe allai*, "perhaps," "possibly," followed by a transitive clause of the perfect Indicative (= *that I have been*).]

Form I.—I may have been.

1. Dichon fy mod (i) wedi bod.	1. Dichon ein bod (ni) wedi bod.
2. Dichon dy fod (di) wedi bod.	2. Dichon eich bod (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Dichon ei fod (ef) wedi bod. Dichon ei bod (hi) wedi bod.	3. Dichon eu bod (hwy) wedi bod. Dichon eu bod (hwy) wedi bod.

Form II.—I may have been.

1. Dichon (ddarfod) i mi fod.	1. Dichon (ddarfod) i ni fod.
2. Dichon (ddarfod) i ti fod.	2. Dichon (ddarfod) i chwi fod.
3. Dichon (ddarfod) iddo (ef) fod. Dichon (ddarfod) iddi (hi) fod.	3. Dichon (ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) fod. Dichon (ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) fod.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I would or should have been; (if) I had been.

1. Buaswn (i).	1. Buasem (ni).
2. Buasit (ti).	2. Buasech (chwi).
3. Buasai (efe).	3. Buasent (hwy).

Form II.—(That) I would or should have been; (if) I had been.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Buaswn (i) wedi bod.	1. Buasem (ni) wedi bod.
2. Buasit (ti) wedi bod.	2. Buasech (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Buasai (efe) wedi bod.	3. Buasent (hwy) wedi bod.

Form III.—Would that I had been. [Optative.]

a) O na buaswn (i), &c. See above, Form I.
b) O na buaswn (i) wedi bod, &c. See above, Form II.

(*a*) When **should have** = *ought to have*, it is rendered into Welsh by "*dylaswn.*" See § 283.

276. Infinitive Mood.

Present and *Imperfect.*

Bod, *to be.*

Perfect and *Pluperfect.*

Bod wedi bod,
Darfod bod, } *to have been.*

Future.

Bod ar fod, *to be on the point of being; to be about to be.*
Bod ar fedr bod, *to be about to be.*

Some clauses have their infinitive as their main verb. This is especially the case in an *affirmative transitive clause* (= accus. with infintive in L.), and in *affirm. cause* and *concessive clauses*. [These are fully explained under Syntax.]

CONJUGATION OF A TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

Present and *Imperfect.*

That I am; that I was.

1. Fy mod (i).	1. Ein bod (ni).
2. Dy fod (di).	2. Eich bod (chwi).
3. Ei fod (ef).	3. Eu bod (hwy).
Ei bod (hi), *f.*	Eu bod (hwy).
Fod dyn.	Fod dynion.

Perfect and *Pluperfect.*

Form I.—That I have or had been.

1. Fy mod (i) wedi bod.	1. Ein bod (ni) wedi bod.
2. Dy fod (di) wedi bod.	2. Eich bod (chwi) wedi bod.
3. Ei fod (ef) wedi bod.	3. Eu bod (hwy) wedi bod.
Ei bod (hi) wedi bod, *f.*	Eu bod (hwy) wedi bod.
Fod dyn wedi bod.	Fod dynion wedi bod.

Form II.—That I was, have been, or had been.

1. Fod o honof (fi).	1. Fod o honom (ni).
2. Fod o honot (ti).	2. Fod o honoch (chwi).
3. Fod o hono (ef).	3. Fod o honynt (hwy).
Fod o honi (hi), *f.*	Fod o honynt (hwy).
Fod o ddyn.	Fod o ddynion.

Form III.—That I was, have been, or had been.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. (Ddarfod) i mi fod.	1. (Ddarfod) i ni fod.
2. (Ddarfod) i ti fod.	2. (Ddarfod) i chwi fod.
3. (Ddarfod) iddo (ef) fod.	3. (Ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) fod.
(Ddarfod) iddi (hi) fod, *f.*	(Ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) fod.
(Ddarfod) i ddyn fod.	(Ddarfod) i ddynion fod.

Future Tense.

Form I.—That I am on the point of being, or about to be.

Sing. 1. Fy mod (i) ar fod, &c., *like the Perfect, Form I.*

Form II.—That I am about to be.

Sing. 1. Fy mod (i) ar fedr bod, &c., *like the Perfect, Form I.*

277. Participles.

Present. Being.

Yn bod. Gan fod. Dan (*or* tan) fod. [§ 267.]

Past. Having been.

Wedi (*or* gwedi) bod. Ar ol bod. Yn ol bod.

Future.

Ar fod, *on the point of being; about to be.*
Ar fedr bod, *about to be.*

Verbal Adjectives. [Not used.]

Bodedig, *endued with being.*
Bodadwy, *capable of being.*

Impersonal Passive of Bod.

278. Indicative Mood.

Present.—Ys[1] (s. w.), ydys (n. w.), *it is, there is, one is.*
Byddir *or* byddys (*of usage*).

Imperf.—Oeddid, *it was.* Byddid (*of usage*).

Perfect indef. or *def.*—Buwyd (*or* bued), } *it was; it has been.*
Perfect def.—Ys *or* ydys wedi bod, }

Pluperf.—Buasid (*or* buesid); oeddid wedi bod, *it had been.*

Future.—Byddir *or* byddys, *it will* or *shall be.*

Fut. perf.—Byddir (*or* byddys) wedi bod; (*in subjoined clauses*) bydder (*contr.* bâer), *it will have been.*

279. Imperative Mood.

Bydder, *let be.*

---

[1] *Ys* appears to be the same with the Eng. *is*, and *es* of the Gr., Lat., and Welsh, in *εσ-τι*, *es-t*, *o-es*. It is employed in forming the perfect and plup. tenses of Welsh verbs—taking the form *os* in *buost=bu-os-ti*, and *as* in other places; as, *carais=car-as-i; caraist=car-as-ti.*

280. Subjunctive Mood.

Present. Bydder (*contr.* bâer), (*that*) *it may* or *should be:*
Imperf. Byddid (*contr.* baid), (*that, if*) *it would* or *should be.*
Plup. Buasid (*or* buesid), (*that, if*) *it would* or *should have been.*

*** Of the compound verbs of "Bod," see § 321.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

281. Auxiliary verbs serve to produce additional forms to other verbs, and to particularize their signification, and the time of action or event. The auxiliaries are *bod, darfod, cael,* and *gwneyd,* to which are usually added *gallu* and *medru, dylwn, dichon, rhaid,* and *mynu.*

282. Gallu *and* Medru.

"*Medru* implies skill and ability, whether natural or acquired, on the part of the person speaking. *Gallu* implies power, permission, the non-existence of any external impediment. Thus *gallu* corresponds nearly to 'may,' *medru* to 'can.'"[1] This distinction is not strictly observed, *gallu* being often used as equivalent to *may* and *can.*

These verbs are conjugated regularly.

Gallaf, *I may* or *can.*
Gallwn, *I might* or *could.*
Gellais, *I have been able.*
Gallaswn, *I might* or *could have.*
Medraf, *I can.*
Medrwn, *I could.*
Medrais, *I have been able.*
(Fel y) gallwyf, (*that*) *I may* (= *may be able*).
(Fel y) gallwn, (*that*) *I might.*
(Y, pe) gallaswn, (*that*) *I might* or *could have; (if) I had been able.*

283. Dylwn.

Dylwn (fr. an obsolete infin. *dylu*) implies *duty,* like the Eng. 'I ought.' It is a defective verb, having only the imperfect tense, which is used to denote present obligation, and the pluperfect, which is used to denote past obligation.

Imperfect.—I ought.

Sing. 1.	Dylwn (i).	Pl. 1. Dylem (ni).
2.	Dylit (ti).	2. Dylech (chwi).
3.	Dylai (efe).	3. Dylent (hwy).

Impersonal.—Dylid, *it* or *one ought.*

---

[1] T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

Pluperfect.—I ought to have.

Form I.

Sing. 1. Dylaswn (i).		Pl. 1. Dylasem (ni).
2. Dylasit (ti).		2. Dylasech (chwi).
3. Dylasai (efe).		3. Dylasent (hwy).

Impersonal.—Dylasid, *it* or *one ought to have.*

Form II.

Sing. 1. Dylaswn (i) fod wedi.	Pl. 1. Dylasem (ni) fod wedi.
2. Dylasit (ti) fod wedi.	2. Dylasech (chwi) fod wedi.
3. Dylasai (efe) fod wedi.	3. Dylasent (hwy) fod wedi.

(*a*) The corresponding verb of "dylaswn" is in the *imperf.* and *perfect indef.;* and that of "dylaswn fod wedi" in the *present* and *perf. definite.* ["Welsh Exercises," § 383.]

"Dylaswn anfon, ond ni *wnaethym,*" I ought to have sent, but I *did* not.

"Dylaswn fod wedi anfon, ond nid *ydwyf* (*wedi anfon*)," I ought to have sent, but *I have not* (*sent*).

284. Dichon.

Dichon (= Gr. τυγχανω) is a defective verb, having only the present tense, and one form for sing. and plural.

a) It is used impersonally, implying *contingency* = "it may be," "perhaps," and followed by a transitive clause.

Dichon fy mod yn cyfeiliorni, *it may be that I err.*

b) It is used impersonally, and implies *power*, corresponding to *may, can, is able*, and is followed by the prep. *i* (to) and a pronoun.

Sing. 1. Dichon i mi.	Pl. 1. Dichon i ni.
2. Dichon i ti.	2. Dichon i chwi.
3. Dichon iddo ef (*or* iddi hi).[1]	3. Dichon iddynt hwy.

When a substantive or substantive word follows, the prep. *i* is usually omitted.

Dichon dyn ddioddef llawer, *man can bear much.*
A ddichon ffydd ei gadw ef, *can faith save him?*
Ni ddichon hyn fod, *this cannot be.*

c) When the subject precedes, *dichon* is used as a personal verb = *may, can.*

Pwy a ddichon sefyll, *who can stand?*
Nid yw'r brenin ŵr [yr hwn] a ddichon ddim yn eich erbyn chwi, *the king is not he that can do anything against you.*—Jer. xxxviii. 5.

---

[1] The prep. *i* is sometimes omitted before the *3d person sing.* "Ni ddichon efe weled (= iddo ef weled) teyrnas Dduw."—St. John iii. 3.

285. Rhaid.

Rhaid is both a noun and a verb. It corresponds to "must."

a) When a *noun*, it is used with the different tenses of *Bod.*

Present. Y mae yn rhaid i mi ddysgu,
Rhaid yw i mi ddysgu,
Rhaid i mi ddysgu (omitting the verb), } = *there is need for me to learn; I must learn.*

Imperf. Yr oedd yn rhaid i mi,
Rhaid oedd i mi, } *I was obliged.*

Perf. Bu yn rhaid i mi, *I was obliged; I had.*

Fut. Bydd yn rhaid i mi, *I shall be obliged; I shall have.*

b) When the subject precedes, being then antithetical, *rhaid* is a verb, and, like *must*, is indeclinable.

Pwy a raid ddysgu, *who must learn?*
Chwychwi a raid ddysgu, you (=*it is you that*) *must learn.*

c) *Rhaid*, preceded by the adv. *ni* (or *nid*), is equivalent to "need not:" when followed by *peidio â* (or *âg*), it is = "must not."

Nid yw yn rhaid i mi,
Nid rhaid [ni raid] i mi, } *I need not; I have no need.*
(Y mae yn) rhaid i mi beidio â myned, *I must not go.*

☞ When "must" may be explained by "necessarily," or "it must be that," the Welsh is, *y mae yn rhaid*, or simply *rhaid*, followed by a transitive clause. Rhaid eich bod yn newynog, *you must be hungry.* [For additional examples, see "Welsh Exercises," Ch. 39.]

286. Cael.

Cael strictly signifies *to have.* As an auxiliary to *active* verbs, it implies *liberty*, or *freedom from external hindrances; permission; compulsion.*

Mi a gâf ddysgu, *I shall learn.*
Hwy a gaent fyned, *they should go.*

As an auxiliary to *passive* verbs, *cael* retains its radical signification.

Yr wyf yn cael fy nysgu=*I am having my teaching; I am* (*being*) *taught.*

Cael is an irregular verb. See conjugation, § 319.

287. Gwneyd *and* Darfod.

Gwneyd, to do, and *Darfod*, to cease, to finish, serve merely to give a different form to some of the tenses.

Gwnaethym ddysgu, *I learnt.* Gwnaf fyned, *I will go.*
A ddarfu i chwi dalu, *did you pay?*

Gwneyd is an irregular verb. See conjugation, § 313.

Darfod is a compound of *Bod*, and is conjugated like it. When an auxiliary, the 3d person sing. is used, followed by the prep. *i*, with its case, as above.

The forms *darfum ddysgu*, *darfuost ddysgu*, &c., are corrupt forms for *darfu i mi ddysgu*, *darfu i ti ddysgu*, &c.

288. Mynu.

Mynu (fr. *myn*, the will) implies *will* or *determination in spite of hindrance or opposition*, and is conjugated regularly.

"Mi a *fynaf* ddyfod," I *will* come; I am determined to come.
"Efe a *fynai* fyned," he *would* go; he was determined to go.

Generally, however, the meaning of *mynu*, somewhat like that of *will*, varies with the clause of which it forms a part. [See "Welsh Exercises," Ch. 43.]

CONJUGATION OF A REGULAR VERB.

289. 'There are two conjugations; one by *inflection* and the other by *auxiliaries*.'

290. *Terminations of the inflected form, active voice.*[1]

INDICATIVE.

	Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Sing. 1.	-af.	Pl. 1. -wn.	Sing. 1. -wn.	Pl. 1. -em.
2.	-i.	2. -wch.	2. -it.	2. -ech.
3.	-a (*or* root).	3. -ant.	3. -ai.	3. -ent.

[1] The terminations of verbs are changes and contractions of personal pronouns, as will appear from the subjoined analysis:—

Pres. Af = *fi*; i = *di*; a = *e?* Wn = *ni*; wch = *chwi*; ant = *hwynt*. (Cf. L. am*ant*.)

Imperf. Wn = *mi?* it = *ti*; a = *e?* Em = *ni?* ech = *chwi*; ent = *hwynt*.

Perf. Ais = *as i*; aist = *as ti*; odd, cf. amav*it*, lov*ed*. Asom = *as ni?* asoch = *as chwi*; asant = *as hwynt*. [*As* is a verb, see § 278, note.]

Plup. Aswn = *as mi?* asit = *as ti*; asai = *as e?* Asem = *as ni?* asech = *as chwi*; asent = *as hwynt*. [Cf. L. *issem*, *isses*, &c.]

Future, see *Present*.

Fut. Perf. Wyf, of = *fi*; ot = *ti*; o = *o*. Om = *ni?* och = *chwi*; ont = *hwynt*.

Imperative. Wyf = *fi*; a, cf. L. am*a*; ed, cf. L. am*et*. Wn = *ni*; wch = *chwi*; ant = *hwynt*.

But Dr. Pughe seems to be of opinion, that these suffixes are to be derived from primitive verbs; such as *au*, *addu*, &c. His words are: "What appears as the inflections are identified, on due examination, to be these primitive verbs affixed to nouns, so as to form a verbal characteristic in the different moods and tenses."—Grammar, p. 65.

Perfect.		*Pluperfect.*	
Sing. 1. -ais.	Pl. 1. -asom.	Sing. 1. -aswn.	Pl. 1. -asem.
2. -aist.	2. -asoch.	2. -asit.	2. -asech.
3. -odd.	3. -asant.	3. -asai.	3. -asent.

Future.		*Future-perfect.*	
Sing. 1. -af.	Pl. 1. -wn.	Sing. 1. -wyf (*or* -of).	Pl. 1. -om.
2. -i.	2. -wch.	2. -ych (-ech *or* -ot).	2. -och.
3. -a (*or* root.)	3. -ant.	3. -o.	3. -ont.

IMPERATIVE. *Present.*

Sing. 1. (-wyf).	Pl. 1. -wn.
2. -a (*or* root).	2. -wch.
3. -ed.	3. -ant (-ont, -ent).

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Sing. 1. -wyf (*or* -of).	Pl. 1. -om.	Sing. 1. -wn.	Pl. 1. -em.
2. -ych (-ech *or* -ot).	2. -och.	2. -it.	2. -ech.
3. -o.	3. -ont.	3. -ai.	3. -ent.

Pluperfect.

Sing. 1. -aswn.	Pl. 1. -asem.
2. -asit.	2. -asech.
3. -asai.	3. -asent.

INFINITIVE.—See §§ 229, 230.

Dysgu, *to learn, to teach.*

291. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

Form I.—I learn.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Dysgaf (fi).[1]	1. Dysgwn (ni).
2. Dysgi (di).	2. Dysgwch (chwi).
3. Dysg *or* dysga (efe).	3. Dysgant (hwy).

(*a*) If the nominative case precedes, the particle *a* intervenes between it and the verb, governing the *middle* sound.

Sing. 1. Mi a ddysgaf.	2. Ti a ddysgi.	3. Efe a ddysg.
Pl. 1. Ni a ddysgwn.	2. Chwi a ddysgwch.	3. Hwy a ddysgant.

---

[1] The subjoined is the form given by some grammarians for the present tense of the indicative, and is adopted by a few writers of the present day.

Sing. 1. Dysgwyf.	Pl. 1. Dysgym.
2. Dysgwyt.	2. Dysgych.
3. Dysgyw.	3. Dysgynt.

Form II.—I am learning ; I learn.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Wyf (fi) yn dysgu.	1. Ym (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Wyt (ti) yn dysgu.	2. Ych (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Y mae (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Y maent (hwy) yn dysgu.
Efe sydd yn dysgu.	Hwynt-hwy sydd yn dysgu.
Nid yw (efe) yn dysgu.	Nid ynt (hwy) yn dysgu.

[In North Wales, "*yd*wyf (fi) yn dysgu," &c. See *Present Tense* of "Bod," with note.]

(*a*) When antithesis is to be expressed, the participle may take precedence, the participial sign being omitted.

Sing. 1. Dysgu yr wyf. 2. Dysgu yr wyt. 3. Dysgu y mae.
Pl. 1. Dysgu yr ym. 2. Dysgu yr ych. 3. Dysgu y maent.

Form III.—I am wont to learn, I am in the habit of learning.

1. Byddaf (fi) yn dysgu.	1. Byddwn (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Byddi (di) yn dysgu.	2. Byddwch (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Bydd (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Byddant (hwy) yn dysgu.

(*a*) Habit or custom *may* be expressed by Form II., but it is more idiomatically expressed by this Form.

Imperfect Tense.

Form I.—I used to learn, &c. [Generally of habit or custom.]

1. Dysgwn (i).	1. Dysgem (ni).[1]
2. Dysgit (ti).	2. Dysgech (chwi).
3. Dysgai (efe).	3. Dysgent (hwy).

[Put nom. case before the verb. See *Present Tense,* Form I. (*a*).]

Form II.—I used to learn. [Of habit or custom.]

1. Byddwn (i) yn dysgu.	1. Byddem (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Byddit (ti) yn dysgu.	2. Byddech (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Byddai (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Byddent (hwy) yn dysgu.

Form III.—I was learning.

1. Oeddwn (i) yn dysgu.	1. Oeddem (ni) yn dysgu.[2]
2. Oeddit (ti) yn dysgu.	2. Oeddech (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Oedd *or* ydoedd (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Oeddent (hwy) yn dysgu.

[Put the participle before the verb. See *Present Tense,* Form II.]

Perfect Tense.

Form I.—Perf. indefinite. I learnt.

1. Dysgais (i).	1. Dysgasom (ni).
2. Dysgaist (ti).	2. Dysgasoch (chwi).
3. Dysgodd (efe).[3]	3. Dysgasant (hwy).

[Put nom. case before the verb. See *Present Tense,* Form I.]

(*a*) This form is sometimes definite = *I have learnt.*

---

[1] Or occasionally, *dysgym*, *dysgych*, *dysgynt*. "Nis gwyddynt," *they knew not.*—Gen. xlii. 23.

[2] Or, oedd*ym*, oedd*ych*, oedd*ynt*, yn dysgu.

[3] The third pers. sing. ends sometimes in *es ;* in the poets in *awdd ;* and in *is*, *ws*, and *wys* in the collocquial language of South Wales. *As* is occasionally met with.

Form II.—Perf. definite. I have learnt.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Wyf (fi) wedi dysgu.	1. Ym (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Wyt (ti) wedi dysgu.	2. Ych (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Y mae (efe) wedi dysgu. Efe sydd wedi dysgu. Nid yw (efe) wedi dysgu.	3. Y maent (hwy) wedi dysgu. Hwynt-hwy sydd wedi dysgu. Nid ynt (hwy) wedi dysgu.

[In N.W., "*yd*wyf (fi) wedi dysgu," &c. See *Present Tense* of "Bod."]

(*a*) When antithesis is to be expressed, the participle may take precedenee.

Sing. 1. Wedi dysgu yr wyf. 2. Wedi dysgu yr wyt. 3. Wedi dysgu y mae.

Pl. 1. Wedi dysgu yr ym. 2. Wedi dysgu yr ych. 3. Wedi dysgu y maent.

Form III.—I learnt; I did learn; I have learnt. Inflection of *darfod.*]

1. Darfu i mi ddysgu.	1. Darfu i ni ddysgu.
2. Darfu i ti ddysgu.	2. Darfu i chwi ddysgu.
3. Darfu iddo ef (*or* iddi hi) ddysgu.	3. Darfu iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Form IV.—I learnt; I did learn. [Colloquial. Inflection of *gwneyd.*]

1. Gwnaethym (i) ddysgu.	1. Gwnaethom (ni) ddysgu.
2. Gwnaethost (ti) ddysgu.	2. Gwnaethoch (chwi) ddysgu.
3. Gwnaeth (efe) ddysgu.	3. Gwnaethant (hwy) ddysgu.

Form V.—I have been learning. [Progressive.]

1. Bum (i) yn dysgu. Wyf (fi) wedi bod yn dysgu.	1. Buom (ni) yn dysgu. Ym (ni) wedi bod yn dysgu.
2. Buost (ti) yn dysgu. Wyt (ti) wedi bod yn dysgu.	2. Buoch (chwi) yn dysgu. Ych (chwi) wedi bod yn dysgu.
3. Bu (efe) yn dysgu. Y mae (efe) wedi bod yn dysgu.	3. Buont (hwy) yn dysgu. Y maent (hwy) wedi bod yn dysgu.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—I had learnt.

1. Dysgaswn (i).	1. Dysgasem (ni).[1]
2. Dysgasit (ti).	2. Dysgasech (chwi).
3. Dysgasai (efe).	3. Dysgasent (hwy).

(*a*) The inflected forms, both of the active and passive of this tense, are oftener used in the subjunctive; but when they can be employed in the indicative without rendering the sentence ambiguous, they are to be preferred to the periphrastic "*oeddwn wedi dysgu*," as being more concise. They occur chiefly in subjoined clauses, such as *relative, indirect interrogative, antithetic transitive,* &c. [See examples in "Welsh Exercises," Ch. 41.]

[1] Or occasionally, *dysgesym, dysgesych, dysgesynt.*

Form II.—I had learnt.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Oeddwn (i) wedi dysgu.	1. Oeddem (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Oeddit (ti) wedi dysgu.	2. Oeddech (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Oedd (efe) wedi dysgu.	3. Oeddent (hwy) wedi dysgu.

[Put the participle before the verb. *Perfect Tense*, Form II.]

Form III.—I had learnt (habitually).

1. Byddwn (i) wedi dysgu.	1. Byddem (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Byddit (ti) wedi dysgu.	2. Byddech (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Byddai (efe) wedi dysgu.	3. Byddent (hwy) wedi dysgu.

Form IV.—I had been learning. [Progressive.]

1. Oeddwn (i) wedi bod yn dysgu.	1. Oeddem (ni) wedi bod yn dysgu.
2. Oeddit (ti) wedi bod yn dysgu.	2. Oeddech (chwi) wedi bod yn dysgu.
3. Oedd (efe) wedi bod yn dysgu.	3. Oeddent (hwy) wedi bod yn dysgu.

Future Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will learn.

1. Dysgaf (fi).	1. Dysgwn (ni).
2. Dysgi (di).	2. Dysgwch (chwi).
3. Dysg *or* dysga (efe).	3. Dysgant (hwy).

[Put nom. case before the verb. See *Present Tense*, Form I.]

(*a*) The third pers. sing. may always be made to end in *a*; as, dysg*a*, car*a*, ysgrifen*a*. But *a* is frequently omitted, and the person made to consist of *the root of the verb*, either in its pure state, or with a change of some of its vowels.[1]

---

[1] The following remarks are added to show how this person is formed by inflection of vowels.

(*a*) *A* is changed into *ai*.

Sefyll, to stand (fr. *sâf*), *saif*. *Peri*, to cause (fr. *pâr*), *pair*. *Caffael* (fr. *caff* = L. hab-eo), *caiff*.

(*b*) *A* is changed into *ei*.

Taflu, to throw (fr. *tafl*), *teifl*. *Ymaflyd* (fr. *ymafl* = ymafael), *ymeifl*. *Gallu*, to be able (fr. *gall*), *geill*. *Cadw*, to keep, *ceidw*. *Galw*, to call, *geilw*. *Llanw*, to fill, *lleinw*. *Dal*, to hold, *deil*.

(*c*) *A* of the penult is changed into *e*, and *a* of the ultima into *ei*.

Gwahardd, to prohibit, *gweheirdd*. *Gwarchadw*, to guard, *gwercheidw*.

(*d*) *A* of the penult is changed into *e*, and *a* or *e* of the ult. into *y*.

Attal, to stop, *ettyl*. *Para*, to last, *pery*. *Ateb*, to answer, *etyb*. *Gwared*, to deliver, *gweryd*. *Darllen*, to read, *derllyn*. *Bwyta*, to eat, is changed into *bwyty*.

(*e*) *A* (and sometimes *o*) of the penult is changed into *e*, and *o* (or *aw*) of the ult. into *y*.

Aros, to remain, *erys*. *Marchogaeth*, to ride (fr. *marchog*), *merchyg*. *Adrodd*, to relate, *edrydd*. *Dangos*, to show, *dengys*. *Gwrandaw*, to listen, *gwrendy*. *Taraw*, to strike, *tery*. *Gadaw*, to leave, *gedy*. *Addaw*, to promise, *eddy*. *Gosod*, to place, *gesyd*.

(*f*) *O* in monosyllables, or in the ultima of words of more than one syllable, is very frequently changed into *y*.

(*b*) In colloquial language this person is made to end in *iff;* dysg*iff*, ysgrifen*iff*, which is condemned by Dr. Davies as "most corrupt." *Iff* may be a corruption of *ef*, he; dysgiff = *dysgef;* or cognate with the L. *ab* and *eb*, as in am*abit*, doc*ebit*.

Ith or *yth* is also a common termination, in coll. language, for the same person; as, dysg*ith*, tal*ith*.

Both *iff* and *ith* are probably the remains of old forms.

Form II.—I shall or will learn.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Bydd i mi ddysgu.	1. Bydd i ni ddysgu.
2. Bydd i ti ddysgu.	2. Bydd i chwi ddysgu.
3. Bydd iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Bydd iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

(*a*) This form occurs often after *os* (if), and in dependent clauses. [See examples in "Welsh Exercises," Ch. 43.]

Form III.—I will learn.

[Futurity and promise. Inflection of *gwneyd.*]

1. Gwnaf (fi) ddysgu.	1. Gwnawn (ni) ddysgu.
2. Gwnei (di) ddysgu.	2. Gwnewch (chwi) ddysgu.
3. Gwna (efe) ddysgu.	3. Gwnânt (hwy) ddysgu.

[Put nom. case before the verb. See *Present Tense*, Form I.]

Form IV.—I shall learn.

[Permission and compulsion. Inflection of *cael.*]

1. Caf (fi) ddysgu.	1. Cawn (ni) ddysgu.
2. Cei (di) ddysgu.	2. Cewch (chwi) ddysgu.
3. Caiff (efe) ddysgu.	3. Cânt (hwy) ddysgu.

[Put nom. case before the verb. See *Present Tense*, Form I.]

Future-perfect Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will have learnt. [In subjoined clauses.]

1. Dysgwyf *or* dysgof (fi).	1. Dysgom (ni).
2. Dysgych *or* -ech (di), dysgot (ti).	2. Dysgoch (chwi).
3. Dysgo (efe).	3. Dysgont (hwy).

Form II.—I shall or will have learnt.

1. Byddaf (fi) wedi dysgu.	1. Byddwn (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Byddi (di) wedi dysgu.	2. Byddwch (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Bydd (efe) wedi dysgu.	3. Byddant (hwy) wedi dysgu.

Troi, to turn (fr. *tro*), *try*. *Tori*, to break (fr. *tor*), *tyr*. *Rhoi*, to give (fr. *rho* = rhôdd), *dyry*. *Rhoddi*, to give (fr. *rhôdd*), *rhydd*. *Ffoi*, to flee (fr. *ffo*), *ffy*. *Golchi*, to wash (fr. *golch*), *gylch*. *Dodi*, to put (fr. *dôd*), *dyd*. *Cloi*, to lock (fr. *clo*), *cly*. *Colli*, to lose (fr. *coll*), *cyll*. *Llosgi*, to burn (fr. *llosg*), *llysg*. *Cyfodi*, to rise (fr. *cyfod*), *cyfyd*. *Deffroi*, to awaken (fr. *deffro*), *deffry*. *Cyffroi*, to arouse (fr. *cyffro*), *cyffry*. *Diffodd*, extinguish, *diffydd*. *Ymdroi*, to loiter (fr. *ymdro*), *ymdry*. *Gwrthod*, to refuse, *gwrthyd*.

292. Imperative Mood.

Form I.—Learn.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. (Dysgwyf fi.)[1]	1. Dysgwn (ni).
2. Dysg *or* dysga (di).[2]	2. Dysgwch (chwi).
3. Dysged (ef *or* efe).	3. Dysgant, -ent, -ont (hwy).

Form II.—Let me learn; may I learn.

1. Bydded i mi ddysgu.	1. Bydded i ni ddysgu.
2. Bydded i ti ddysgu.	2. Bydded i chwi ddysgu.
3. Bydded iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Bydded iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Form III.—Let me learn. [*Gadael*, to let, to allow.]

Gâd—*plural*, gadewch,

1. I mi ddysgu, *let me learn.* 1. I ni ddysgu, *let us learn.*
3. Iddo (ef) ddysgu, *let him learn.* 3. Iddynt (hwy) ddysgu, *let them learn.*

(*a*) This form is a command given to the 2d pers., sing. or pl., respecting the 1st or 3d person.

Rho and *dyro* (pl. *rhowch*), give, are sometimes used; and also occasionally *moes* (pl. *moeswch*), give.

Dyro i mi wybod, *let me know.* Moes i mi glywed, *let me hear.*

293. Subjunctive Mood. [Syntax, § 612 (1), &c.]

Present Tense.

Form I.—(That) I may learn, should learn.

1. Dysgwyf *or* dysgof (fi).	1. Dysgom (ni).
2. Dysgych, -ech (di), -ot (ti).	2. Dysgoch (chwi).
3. Dysgo (efe).	3. Dysgont (hwy).

Form II.—(That) I may learn, should learn.

1. Byddo (*or* bo) i mi ddysgu.	1. Byddo (*or* bo) i ni ddysgu.
2. Byddo (*or* bo) i ti ddysgu.	2. Byddo (*or* bo) i chwi ddysgu.
3. Byddo (*or* bo) iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Byddo (*or* bo) iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Form III.—May I learn. [Optative.]

[This is often expressed by Form II. of the Imperative, "Bydded i mi ddysgu," &c. It is also expressed by the present Subjunctive of the auxiliary *gwneyd*, to do, preceded by the infin. of the other verb, and the particle *a*. Syntax, §§ 837, 838.]

1. Dysgu a wnelwyf (fi).	1. Dysgu a wnelom (ni).
2. Dysgu a wnelych (di).	2. Dysgu a wneloch (chwi).
3. Dysgu a wnelo (efe).	3. Dysgu a wnelont (hwy).

(*a*) **May**, denoting *liberty* and *power;* and *possibility;* see § 275, p. 68, notes *a* and *b*.

---

[1] We meet occasionally with a first pers. imper. "Yna *hauwyf* fi, a bwytäed arall."—Job xxxi. 8. "*Gwelwyf* dy ddialedd arnynt."—Jer. xi. 20.

[2] The second pers. sing. of the imper. may, like the third pers. sing. future indic., be made to end in *a;* as, dysg*a*, gwrthod*a*, car*a;* but the suffix is very frequently omitted, and the person made to consist of *the root of the verb;* as *dysg*, *gwrthod*, *câr*.

Imperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I would, should, might learn; (if) I learnt.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Dysgwn (i)	1. Dysgem (ni).
2. Dysgit (ti).	2. Dysgech (chwi).
3. Dysgai (efe)	3. Dysgent (hwy).

Form II.—(That) I would, should, might learn; (if) I learnt.

1. Byddai i mi ddysgu.	1. Byddai i ni ddysgu.
2. Byddai i ti ddysgu.	2. Byddai i chwi ddysgu.
3. Byddai iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Byddai iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Contracted Form.

[Usually after *pe*, if, and *O na*, would that.]

1. Bâi i mi ddysgu.	1. Bâi i ni ddysgu.
2. Bâi i ti ddysgu.	2. Bâi i chwi ddysgu.
3. Bâi iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Bâi iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Form III.—(If) I were to learn, (if) I learnt.

1. Byddwn *or* bawn (i) yn dysgu.	1. Byddem *or* baem (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Byddit *or* bait (ti) yn dysgu.	2. Byddech *or* baech (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Byddai *or* bai (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Byddent *or* baent (hwy) yn dysgu.

Form IV.—(That) I would learn. [Promise.]

Sing. 1. Gwnawn (i) ddysgu, &c. See Imperf. Subj. of "Bod," Form III., p. 69.

Form V.—(That) I should learn. [Permission and compulsion.]

Sing. 1. Cawn (i) ddysgu, &c. See Imperf. Subj. of "Bod," Form IV., p. 69.

(*a*) The **Optative** ("would that I learnt") is expressed by *O na* followed by one of the above forms.

(*b*) When **should** = *ought to*, it is rendered into W. by "*dylwn*," &c. See § 283.

(*c*) When **might** expresses *liberty*, *permission*, *power*, it is rendered by an inflection of "*gallu*." See § 282.

Perfect Tense.

Form I.—I may have learnt.

Sing. 1. Dichon fy mod (i) wedi dysgu, &c. See Perf. Subj. of "Bod," Form I., p. 69.

Form II.—I may have learnt.

Sing. 1. Dichon (ddarfod) i mi ddysgu, &c. See Perf. Subj. of "Bod," Form II., p. 69.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I would or should have learnt; (if) I had learnt.

1. Dysgaswn (i).	1. Dysgasem (ni).
2. Dysgasit (ti).	2. Dysgasech (chwi).
3. Dysgasai (efe).	3. Dysgasent (hwy).

Form II.—(If) I had learnt.

1. Buasai i mi ddysgu.	1. Buasai i ni ddysgu.
2. Buasai i ti ddysgu.	2. Buasai i chwi ddysgu.
3. Buasai iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. Buasai iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.

Form III.—(That) I would or should have learnt; (if) I had learnt.

1. Buaswn (i) yn dysgu.[1]	1. Buasem (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Buasit (ti) yn dysgu.	2. Buasech (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Buasai (efe) yn dysgu.	3. Buasent (hwy) yn dysgu.

Form IV.—(That) I would or should have learnt; (if) I had learnt.

1. Buaswn (i) wedi dysgu.[2]	1. Buasem (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Buasit (ti) wedi dysgu.	2. Buasech (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Buasai (efe) wedi dysgu.	3. Buasent (hwy) wedi dysgu.

(*a*) The **Optative** ("would that I had learnt") is expressed by *O na* followed by one of the above forms.

(*b*) When **should have** = *ought to have,* it is rendered into Welsh by "*dylaswn,*" &c. See § 283.

(*c*) When **might have** expresses *liberty, permission, power,* it is rendered by an inflection of "*gallu.*" See § 282.

294. Infinitive Mood.

Dysgu, to learn, to teach, may refer to all tenses according to the preceding verb or particle on which it depends.

Bwriadaf ddysgu, *I intend to learn.*
Bwriedais ddysgu, *I intended to learn.*
Deuaf i ddysgu, *I will come to learn.*

Present and *Imperfect.*

Bod yn dysgu, *to be learning, to learn.*

Perfect and *Pluperfect.*

Bod wedi dysgu, } *to have learnt.*
Darfod dysgu, }

Future.

Bod ar dysgu, *to be on the point of learning; to be about to learn.*
Bod ar fedr dysgu, *to be about to learn.*

Some clauses have the infinitive as their main verb. This is especially the case in an *affirmative transitive clause* (= accusative with infinitive in Latin), and in *affirmative cause* and *concessive clauses.* [These are fully explained under Syntax.]

---

[1] = I should have been learning,—*progressive.*
[2] = I should have learnt,—*past and finished.*

CONJUGATION OF A TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

Present and *Imperfect.*

That I am learning; that I was learning.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Fy mod (i) yn dysgu.	1. Ein bod (ni) yn dysgu.
2. Dy fod (di) yn dysgu.	2. Eich bod (chwi) yn dysgu.
3. Ei fod (ef) yn dysgu.	3. Eu bod (hwy) yn dysgu.
Ei bod (hi) yn dysgu.	Eu bod (hwy) yn dysgu.
Fod dyn yn dysgu.	Fod dynion yn dysgu.

Perfect and *Pluperfect.*

Form I.—That I have learnt; that I had learnt.

1. Fy mod (i) wedi dysgu.	1. Ein bod (ni) wedi dysgu.
2. Dy fod (di) wedi dysgu.	2. Eich bod (chwi) wedi dysgu.
3. Ei fod (ef) wedi dysgu.	3. Eu bod (hwy) wedi dysgu.
Ei bod (hi) wedi dysgu.	Eu bod (hwy) wedi dysgu.
Fod dyn wedi dysgu.	Fod dynion wedi dysgu.

Form II.—That I learnt; have learnt; had learnt.

1. Ddysgu o honof (fi).	1. Ddysgu o honom (ni).
2. Ddysgu o honot (ti).	2. Ddysgu o honoch (chwi).
3. Ddysgu o hono (ef).	3. Ddysgu o honynt (hwy).
Ddysgu o honi (hi).	Ddysgu o honynt (hwy).
Ddysgu o ddyn.	Ddysgu o ddynion.

Form III.—That I learnt; have learnt; had learnt.

1. (Ddarfod) i mi ddysgu.	1. (Ddarfod) i ni ddysgu.
2. (Ddarfod) i ti ddysgu.	2. (Ddarfod) i chwi ddysgu.
3. (Ddarfod) iddo (ef) ddysgu.	3. (Ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.
(Ddarfod) iddi (hi) ddysgu.	(Ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) ddysgu.
(Ddarfod) i ddyn ddysgu.	(Ddarfod) i ddynion ddysgu.

Future Tense.

Form I.—That I am about to learn, or on the point of learning.

Sing. 1. Fy mod (i) ar ddysgu, &c. See above, *Present Tense.*

Form II.—That I am about to learn.

Sing. 1. Fy mod (i) ar fedr dysgu, &c. See above, *Present Tense.*

295. PARTICIPLES.

Present. Learning.

Yn dysgu. Gan ddysgu. Dan (*or* tan) ddysgu. [§ 267.]

Past. Having learnt.

Wedi (*or* gwedi) dysgu. Ar ol dysgu. Yn ol dysgu. [§ 268.]

Future.

Ar ddysgu, *on the point of learning; about to learn.*
Ar fedr dysgu, *about to learn.*

295 (1). When the participle is followed by a personal pronoun as its object, expressed or understood, a corresponding possessive pronoun will intervene between the particle of time and the infinitive.

Present. Teaching me.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Yn **fy** nysgu *i.*	1. Yn **ein** dysgu *ni.*
2. Yn **dy** ddysgu *di.*	2. Yn **eich** dysgu *chwi.*
3. Yn **ei** ddysgu *ef.*	3. Yn **eu** dysgu *hwy.*
Yn **ei** dysgu *hi.*	Yn **eu** dysgu *hwy.*

Past. Having taught me.

1. Wedi **fy** nysgu *i.*	1. Wedi **ein** dysgu *ni.*
2. Wedi **dy** ddysgu *di.*	2. Wedi **eich** dysgu *chwi.*
3. Wedi **ei** ddysgu *ef.*	3. Wedi **eu** dysgu *hwy.*
Wedi **ei** dysgu *hi.*	Wedi **eu** dysgu *hwy.*

Future. About to teach me.

1. Ar fedr **fy** nysgu *i.*	1. Ar fedr **ein** dysgu *ni.*
2. Ar fedr **dy** ddysgu *di.*	2. Ar fedr **eich** dysgu *chwi.*
3. Ar fedr **ei** ddysgu *ef.*	3. Ar fedr **eu** dysgu *hwy.*
Ar fedr **ei** dysgu *hi.*	Ar fedr **eu** dysgu *hwy.*

PASSIVE VOICE.

296. The passive voice is expressed either by *inflection* or by *periphrasis.*

297. The **inflected** form has only one termination for each tense.

INDICATIVE.

Pres.	Imperf.	Perf.	Plup.	Fut.	Fut. perf.
Ir; as,	**Id**; as,	**Wyd**;[1] as,	**Asid**;[2] as,	**Ir**; as,	**Er**; as,
Dysg*ir.*	Dysg*id.*	Dysg*wyd.*	Dysg*asid.*	Dysg*ir.*	Dysg*er.*

IMPERATIVE—**Er**; as, Dysg*er.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.	Imperf.	Plup.
Er; as,	**Id**; as,	**Asid**;[1] as,
Dysg*er.*	Dysg*id.*	Dysg*asid.*

298. These inflections are made to agree with all persons, whether singular or plural, standing as the nominative case; so that the person and number of the verb are to be determined by the person and number of the nominative case. Thus *dysgir* when put in construction with *mi* (as *dysgir fi*)

---

[1] Sometimes *ed*; as dysg*ed.* [2] Sometimes *esid*; as dysg*esid.*

is of the first person, and sing. number; when put in construction with *chwi* (as *dysgir chwi*) it is in the second person, plural number.

299. A proposition may be expressed by this form in three different ways: (1) with the nom. after the verb; as, *dysgir fi:* (2) with the nominative case before the verb; as, *mi a ddysgir:* (3) with a possessive pronoun before the verb, with or without the nom. case after the verb; as, *fe'm dysgir; fe'm dysgir i.*

300. The **periphrastic** is formed—(1) of the inflections of *bod* with a *passive participle* of the verb specified; as, *wyf yn cael fy nysgu:* (2) of the inflections of the impersonal form of *bod* with an *active participle* of the verb; as, *ydys yn fy nysgu.*

301. Indicative Mood.

Present Tense. [Inflected.]

Form I.—I am (being) taught.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Dysgir fi.	1. Dysgir ni.
2. Dysgir di.	2. Dysgir chwi.
3. Dysgir ef.	3. Dysgir ef.
Dysgir *d*yn.	Dysgir *d*ynion.

Form II.—I am (being) taught.

1. Mi a ddysgir.	1. Ni a ddysgir.
2. Ti a ddysgir.	2. Chwi a ddysgir.
3. Efe a ddysgir.	3. Hwy a ddysgir

Observe that the particle *a* is followed by the *middle* sound.

Form III.—I am (being) taught.

1. Fe'm dysgir (i).	1. Fe'n dysgir (ni).
2. Fe'th ddysgir (di).	2. Fe'ch dysgir (chwi).
3. Fe'i dysgir (ef).	3. Fe'u dysgir (hwy).
Fe ddysgir *d*yn.	Fe ddysgir *d*ynion.

(*a*) *Fe* is an auxiliary pronoun in affirmative main sentences, and it "commonly implies that the statement begins with the verb which it introduces."[1] [*Fo* and *e* are occasionally employed; as, "*fo*'m dysgir," or "*e*'m dysgir." *Fe a'm, fe a'th*, &c., occur sometimes.]

In *negative* clauses, and in *subjoined* clauses after conjunctions *hypothetical* (*pe, ped*, if), *explanatory* (*y*, that), *temporal* (*pan*, when, *tra*, whilst), and conjunctions of *purpose* and *effect* (*mal, fal, fel*, in order that, so that), and also after *adverbs* and *adverbial phrases*, which have an antithetical signification, *fe* is dismissed, whilst the poss. pron. may be retained or

[1] Dr. Charles Williams.

omitted. (Ni'm dysgir *or* Ni ddysgir fi, *I am not taught.* Pe'm dysgid *or* Pe dysgid fi, *if I were taught.* Fel y'm dysger *or* Fel y dysger fi, *that I may be taught.*)

(*b*) Observe that the 2d person *yth* (contr. *'th*) takes the *middle* sound after it: the others take the *radical.* *Fe, fo,* and *e* take the *middle;* as, *fe ddysgir* Arthur.

(*c*) The personal pronouns are generally omitted in Form III., the possessive being thought sufficient to indicate the person; but when they are expressed, they are thus written: 1st pers. sing. **i**; 2d, **di**; 3d, **ef, e, o**: 1st pers. pl. **ni**; 2d, **chwi**; 3d, **hwy** or **hwynt.**

☞ When the student has learnt the three foregoing examples of the present of the inflected form, he will be enabled to acquire the conjugation of the other tenses without any trouble, as he has only to substitute the inflections of those tenses (see above) for that of the present.

Present Tense. [Periphrastic.]

Form I.—I am (being) taught.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Wyf (fi) yn cael fy nysgu.	1. Ym (ni) yn cael ein dysgu.
2. Wyt (ti) yn cael dy ddysgu.	2. Ych (chwi) yn cael eich dysgu.
3. Y mae (efe) yn cael ei ddysgu.	3. Y maent (hwy) yn cael eu dysgu.

Form II.—I am wont to be taught.

1. Byddaf (fi) yn cael fy nysgu.	1. Byddwn (ni) yn cael ein dysgu.
2. Byddi (di) yn cael dy ddysgu.	2. Byddwch (chwi) yn cael eich dysgu.
3. Bydd (efe) yn cael ei ddysgu.	3. Byddant (hwy) yn cael eu dysgu.

☞ A knowledge of the inflections of *bod,* together with the *passive* participles of *dysgu,* is all that is necessary to master these forms throughout.

Form III.—I am (being) taught. [Not common.]

1. Ydys yn fy nysgu (i).	1. Ydys yn ein dysgu (ni).
2. Ydys yn dy ddysgu (di).	2. Ydys yn eich dysgu (chwi).
3. Ydys yn ei ddysgu (ef).	3. Ydys yn eu dysgu (hwy).

Form IV.—I am wont to be taught. [Not common.]

1. Byddys yn fy nysgu (i).	1. Byddys yn ein dysgu (ni).
2. Byddys yn dy ddysgu (di).	2. Byddys yn eich dysgu (chwi).
3. Byddys yn ei ddysgu (ef).	3. Byddys yn eu dysgu (hwy).

☞ A knowledge of the *impersonal* form of *bod,* together with the *active* participles of *dysgu,* is all that is necessary to master the whole of these forms.

Imperfect Tense.

Form I.—I used to be taught, &c. [Generally of habit.]

Dysgid fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—I used to be taught, &c. [Generally of habit.]

Mi —, ti —, efe —, ni —, chwi —, hwy, a ddysgid.

Form III.—I used to be taught, &c. [Generally of habit.]

Fe'm dysgid (i), &c. See *Present* inflected, Form III.

Form IV.—I was (being) taught.

Oeddwn (i) yn cael fy nysgu, &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form I.

Form V.—I was (being) taught. [Not common.]

Oeddid yn fy nysgu (i), &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form III.

Form VI.—I used to be taught. [Habit or custom.]

Byddwn (i) yn cael fy nysgu, &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form II.

Form VII.—I used to be taught. [Habit. Not common.]

Byddid yn fy nysgu (i), &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form IV.

Perfect Tense.

Form I.—Indefinite. I was taught.[1]

Dysgwyd fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—Indefinite. I was taught.[1]

Mi —, ti —, efe —, ni —, chwi —, hwy, a ddysgwyd.

Form III.—Indefinite. I was taught.[1]

Fe'm dysgwyd (i), &c. See *Present* inflected, Form III.

Form IV.—I was or have been taught. [Inflection of *darfod*, § 287.]

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Darfu i mi gael fy nysgu.	1. Darfu i ni gael ein dysgu.
2. Darfu i ti gael dy ddysgu.	2. Darfu i chwi gael eich dysgu.
3. Darfu iddo (ef) gael ei ddysgu.	3. Darfu iddynt (hwy) gael eu dysgu.

Form V.—I was or have been taught. [Inflection of *cael*, § 286.]

1. Cefais (i) fy nysgu.	1. Cawsom (ni) ein dysgu.
2. Cefaist (ti) dy ddysgu.	2. Cawsoch (chwi) eich dysgu.
3. Cafodd (efe) ei ddysgu.	3. Cawsant (hwy) eu dysgu.

Form VI.—Definite. I have been taught.

1. Wyf (fi) wedi [cael[2]] fy nysgu.	1. Ym (ni) wedi [cael] ein dysgu.
2. Wyt (ti) wedi [cael] dy ddysgu.	2. Ych (chwi) wedi [cael] eich dysgu.
3. Y mae (efe) wedi [cael] ei ddysgu.	3. Y maent (hwy) wedi [cael] eu dysgu.

Form VII.—Definite. I have been taught. [Not common.]

Ydys wedi fy nysgu (i), &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form III.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—I had been taught. [See *Plup.* active, note (*a*), p. 78.]

Dysgasid fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

---

[1] Sometimes definite, = I have been taught.

[2] *Cael* is oftener inserted than omitted.

Form II.—I had been taught.

Mi —, ti —, efe —, ni —, chwi —, hwy, a ddysgasid.

Form III.—I had been taught.

Fe'm dysgasid (i), &c. See *Present* inflected, Form III.

Form IV.—I had been taught.

Oeddwn (i) wedi [cael] fy nysgu, &c. See *Perfect*, Form VI.

Form V.—I had been taught. [Not common.]

Oeddid wedi fy nysgu (i), &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form II.

Future Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will be taught.

Dysgir fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—I shall or will be taught.

Mi —, ti —, efe —, ni —, chwi —, hwy, a ddysgir.

Form III.—I shall or will be taught.

Fe'm dysgir (i), &c. See *Present* inflected, Form III.

Form IV.—I shall or will be taught. [Inflection of *cael.*]

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Caf (fi) fy nysgu.	1. Cawn (ni) ein dysgu.
2. Cei (di) dy ddysgu.	2. Cewch (chwi) eich dysgu.
3. Caiff (efe) ei ddysgu.	3. Cânt (hwy) eu dysgu.

Future-perfect Tense.

Form I.—I shall or will be taught. [In subjoined clauses.]

Dysger fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—I shall or will be taught.

Byddaf (fi) wedi [cael] fy nysgu, &c. See *Perfect*, Form VI.

Form III.—I shall or will have been taught. [Not common.]

Byddir (*or* byddys) wedi fy nysgu (i), &c. See *Present* periphrastic, Form II.

302. Imperative Mood.

Form I.—Let me be taught.

Dysger fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—Let me be taught; may I be taught.

1. Bydded i mi gael fy nysgu.	1. Bydded i ni gael ein dysgu.
2. Bydded i ti gael dy ddysgu.	2. Bydded i chwi gael eich dysgu.
3. Bydded iddo gael ei ddysgu.	3. Bydded iddynt gael eu dysgu.

Form III.—Let (= allow) me be taught. [Inflection of *gadael*]

Gad—*plural*, gadewch,

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. I mi gael fy nysgu.	1. I ni gael ein dysgu.
3. Iddo (ef) gael ei ddysgu.	3. Iddynt (hwy) gael eu dysgu.

(*a*) This form is a command given to the 2d person respecting the first or third person.

303. Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Form I.—(That) I may or should be taught.

Dysger fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—(That) I may or should be taught.

1. Y'm dysger (i).	1. Y'n dysger (ni).
2. Y'th ddysger (di).	2. Y'ch dysger (chwi).
3. Y'i (*or* ei) dysger (ef).	3. Y'u (*or* eu) dysger (hwy).

(*a*) As the Subjunctive is usually introduced by such particles as *fel* (in order that), *pe* (if), *y* (that). &c., *fe* is dismissed. "Fel y'm dysger," that I may be taught. See § 301 (*a*).

Form III.—(That) I may or should be taught.

1. Byddo i mi gael fy nysgu.	1. Byddo i ni gael ein dysgu.
2. Byddo i ti gael dy ddysgu.	2. Byddo i chwi gael eich dysgu.
3. Byddo iddo (ef) gael ei ddysgu.	3. Byddo iddynt (hwy) gael eu dysgu.

Form IV.—That I may or should be taught. [Inflection of *cael.*]

1. Caffwyf (fi) fy nysgu.	1. Caffom (ni) ein dysgu.
2. Ceffych (di) dy ddysgu.	2. Caffoch (chwi) eich dysgu.
3. Caffo (efe) ei ddysgu.	3. Caffont (hwy) eu dysgu.

Form V.—May I be taught. [Optative.]

Bydded i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. See Imperative Mood, Form II.

(*a*) When may be expresses *liberty, power*, it is rendered by an inflection of "*gallu*,"—either the active of *gallu* with the passive infinitive of the other verb, or the passive of *gallu* with the active infinitive of the other verb.

"I may be taught," gallaf gael fy nysgu; gellir fy nysgu (i).

Imperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I would, should, or might be taught;
(if) I were taught.

Dysgid fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—(That) I would, should, or might be taught;
(if) I were taught.

Y'm dysgid (i), &c. See *Present Tense*, Form II.

Form III.—(That) I would, should, or might be taught ; (if) I were taught.

Byddai i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. See *Present Tense*, Form III.

Form IV.—(That) I would, should, or might be taught ; (if) I were taught. [Inflection of *cael.*]

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Cawn (i) fy nysgu.	1. Caem (ni) ein dysgu.
2. Cait (ti) dy ddysgu.	2. Caech (chwi) eich dysgu.
3. Câi (efe) ei ddysgu.	3. Caent (hwy) eu dysgu.

(*a*) The **Optative** ("would that I were taught") is expressed by *O na*, followed by one of the above forms. [Form II. is thus conjugated : O na'm dysgid ; O na'th ddysgid ; O na ddysgid ef ; O na'n dysgid ; O na'ch dysgid ; O na ddysgid hwy.]

(*b*) When **should be**=*ought to be*, it is rendered by "*dylwn*," &c. ; either the active of *dylwn* with the infinitive passive of the other verb, or the passive *dylid* with the infinitive active of the other verb.

"I should be taught," dylwn gael fy nysgu ; dylid fy nysgu (i).

(*c*) **Might be**, expressing *liberty, power*. See *Present*, Form V.

"I might be taught," gallwn gael fy nysgu ; gellid fy nysgu (i).

Perfect Tense.

[This tense is generally expressed in Welsh by the adv. *dichon, hwyrach*, or *fe allai*, "perhaps," "possibly," followed by a transitive clause of the perfect Indicative (= *that I was* or *have been taught*).]

Form I.—I may have been taught.

1. Dichon fy mod (i) wedi [cael] fy nysgu.	1. Dichon ein bod (ni) wedi [cael] ein dysgu.
2. Dichon dy fod (di) wedi [cael] dy ddysgu.	2. Dichon eich bod (chwi) wedi [cael] eich dysgu.
3. Dichon ei fod (ef) wedi [cael] ei ddysgu.	3. Dichon eu (hwy) wedi [cael] eu dysgu.

Form II.—I may have been taught.

1. Dichon (ddarfod) i mi gael fy nysgu.	1. Dichon (ddarfod) i ni gael ein dysgu.
2. Dichon (ddarfod) i ti gael dy ddysgu.	2. Dichon (ddarfod) i chwi gael eich dysgu.
3. Dichon (ddarfod) iddo (ef) gael ei ddysgu.	3. Dichon (ddarfod) iddynt (hwy) gael eu dysgu.

*** See other forms of Passive trans. clause, §§ 767, 768.

Pluperfect Tense.

Form I.—(That) I should, would, or might have been taught ; (if) I had been taught.

Dysgasid fi, — di, — ef, — ni, — chwi, — hwy.

Form II.—(That) I should, would, or might have been taught ; (if) I had been taught.

Y'm dysgasid (i), &c. See *Present Tense*, Form II.

Form III.—(If) I had been taught; (that) I should, &c., have been taught.

Buasai i mi gael fy nysgu, &c. See *Present*, Form III.

Form IV.—(That) I should, would, or might have been taught; (if) I had been taught.

Buaswn (i) yn cael fy nysgu,[1] &c. See *Present* Indic., periphrastic, Form I.

Form V.—(That) I should, would, or might have been taught; (if) I had been taught.

Buaswn (i) wedi cael fy nysgu,[2] &c. See *Perfect* Indic., Form VI.

Form VI.—(That) I should, would, or might have been taught; (if) I had been taught. [Inflection of *cael.*]

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Cawswn (i) fy nysgu.	1. Cawsem (ni) ein dysgu.
2. Cawsit (ti) dy ddysgu.	2. Cawsech (chwi) eich dysgu.
3. Cawsai (efe) ei ddysgu.	3. Cawsent (hwy) eu dysgu.

Form VII.—(That) I should, &c.; (if) I had been, &c. [Not common.]

Buasid wedi fy nysgu, &c. See *Present* Indic., periphrastic, Form III.

(*a*) The **Optative** ("would that I had been taught") is expressed by "O na," followed by one of the above forms. [Form II: see *Imperfect*, note (*a*).]

(*b*) When **should have been** = *ought to have been*, it is rendered by "*dylaswn*," &c., or "*dylasid.*" [See *Imperfect*, Form IV.]

"I should have been taught," dylaswn gael fy nysgu; dylasid fy nysgu.

(*c*) **Might have been**, expressing *liberty, power*. See *Present*, Form V., note (*a.*)

Infinitive Mood.

304. "In Welsh there is no inflection of the verb to express the Infinitive passive; but that state is indicated by combinations of the *possessive pronouns* with the Infinitive active," with or sometimes without auxiliary verbs.

305. When the possessive refers to a personal pronoun coming after the Infinitive, expressed or understood, the verb is *active;* as, Daeth i'm dysgu (*i*), he came to teach me.[3] But when the possessive refers to the nom. case of the main verb, and does not admit of a pers. pron. after the verb, it indicates a *passive* state. Thus in the sentence,

---

1 =I should have been having my teaching,—*progressive.*

2 =I should have had my teaching,—*past and finished.*

3 In some cases the poss. is used when a pers. pron. cannot follow; as, "Yr hwn yr wyf yn *ei* garu." [See *Syntax.*]

"Haeddodd Arthur *ei* garu," *ei* refers to *Arthur*, which is the nom. case to "*haeddodd.*" So in English: "Arthur deserved *to be loved*" = *that he should be loved.*

306. The forms "*Fy nysgu,*" "*ym dysgu*" (contr. *'m dysgu*), "*cael fy nysgu,*" to be taught, may be joined to verbs of any tense. ["Cael fy nysgu" occurs much oftener than the other forms.]

Haeddaf *fy nysgu* (or *gael fy nysgu*), *I deserve to be taught.*
Daethym *i'm dysgu* (or *i gael fy nysgu*), *I came to be taught.*
Deuaf *i'm dysgu* (or *i gael fy nysgu*), *I will come to be taught.*

Some clauses have the infinitive as their main verb. [See Infinitive active, § 294.]

Present and *Imperfect.*

Fy mod i yn [cael] fy nysgu, &c., *that I am* or *was taught.*

Perfect and *Pluperfect.*

a) **Fy mod** (i) wedi [cael] fy nysgu, &c., *that I have* or *had been taught.*

b) **Gael o honof** fy nysgu, &c., *that I was, have been,* or *had been taught.*

c) (Ddarfod) **i mi gael** fy nysgu, &c., *that I was, have been,* or *had been taught.*

Future.

a) **Fy mod ar gael** fy nysgu, &c., *that I am about to be,* or *on the point of being taught.*

b) **Fy mod ar fedr cael** fy nysgu, &c., *that I am about to be taught.*

307. PARTICIPLES.

Present and *Imperfect.* Being taught.

Yn cael fy nysgu. Gan gael fy nysgu. Yn fy nysgu.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Yn cael fy nysgu.	1. Yn cael ein dysgu.
2. Yn cael dy ddysgu.	2. Yn cael eich dysgu.
3. Yn cael ei ddysgu, *m.*	3. Yn cael eu dysgu.
Yn cael ei dysgu, *f.*	Yn cael eu dysgu.

Perfect and *Pluperfect.* Having been taught.

Wedi *or* gwedi [cael] fy nysgu. Ar ol *or* yn ol [cael] fy nysgu.

1. Wedi [cael] fy nysgu.
2. Wedi [cael] dy ddysgu. } and so on, like *Present and Imperfect.*

Future.

Ar gael fy nysgu, *on the point of being taught; about to be taught.*
Ar fedr cael fy nysgu, *about to be taught.*

1. Ar fedr cael fy nysgu.
2. Ar fedr cael dy ddysgu. } and so on, like *Present and Imperfect.*

Verbal Adjectives.

Dysgedig, *taught.* Dysgadwy, *capable of being taught.*

---

308. IRREGULAR VERBS.

The verbs which exhibit the greatest irregularity of conjugation are the following: *myned; dyfod* (or *dawed*); *gwneyd* or *gwneuthur; gwybod; adwaen* or *adnabod; cael* or *caffael.*

Myned, *to go.*

Myned has no inflections. The inflected forms (except *dôs* and *cerdd* of the Imper.) are formed from the obsolete *au* and *elu*, to go. [With *au*, cf. L. *eo* or *ago*; with *elu*, cf. Gr. ελ-ευσομαι, ηλ-θον.]

309. Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

Present. I am going.

Wyf (fi) yn myned, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"[1]

Imperfect. I used to go; I was going.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Awn, elwn.	1. Aem, elem.
2. Ait, elit.	2. Aech, elech.
3. Ai, elai.	3. Aent, elent.

Perfect. I went; I have gone.

1. Aethym,[2] elais.	1. Aethom, elsom.
2. Aethost, elaist.	2. Aethoch, elsoch.
3. Aeth, elodd.	3. Aethant, elsant.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Eis.	2. Eist.	3. Aeth.
Pl.	1. Aesom.	2. Aesoch.	3. Aesant.

Pluperfect. I had gone.

1. Aethwn, elswn.	1. Aethem, elsem.
2. Aethit, elsit.	2. Aethech, elsech.
3. Aethai, elsai.	3. Aethent, elsent.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Aeswn.	2. Aesit.	3. Aesai.
Pl.	1. Aesem.	2. Aesech.	3. Aesent.

---

[1] All the periphrastic tenses of the irregular verbs are the same as those of the regular verb *dysgu.*

[2] The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perfect and pluperfect; as, *euthym, euthost*, &c.

Future. I shall or will go.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Af, elaf.	1. Awn, elwn.
2. Ai, ei, eli.	2. Ewch, elwch.
3. A, aiff, eiff, êl.	3. Ant, elant.

Future-perfect. I shall or will have gone. [In subjoined clauses.]

1. Elwyf, elof.	1. Elom.
2. Elych, elech, elot.	2. Eloch.
3. Elo.	3. Elont.

Imperative Mood. Go.

1. ———	1. Awn, elwn.
2. Dôs, cerdd.	2. Ewch, elwch, cerddwch,
3. Aed, eled, cerdded.	3. Ant, elant, cerddant.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. (That) I may go.

Elwyf *or* elof, &c. The same as *Future-perfect.*

Imperfect. (That) I might go; (if) I went.

Awn *or* elwn, &c. The same as *Imperfect* Indicative.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have gone; (if) I had gone.

Aethwn *or* elswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indicative.

Infinitive Mood. Myned, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Participles. Yn myned, &c. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

310. IMPERSONAL PASSIVE OF MYNED.

Indicative Mood.

Present. Eir, elir, *it* or *there is going.*[1]
Imperf. Eid, elid, *it was going.*
Perfect. Aed (awd), aethwyd, aethpwyd, *it is gone.*
Plup. Aethid, elsid, *it had gone.*
Future. Eir, elir, *it will go.*
Fut.-perf. Aer, eler, *it will have gone* (in subj. clauses).

Imperative Mood.

Aer, eler, *let it* or *there go.*

---

[1] The passive forms of intransitive verbs cannot be translated literally into English. They may be rendered by "we," "they," or "men," with the active voice. "Os eir yno," *if there is going there; i.e., if we,* or *they,* or *men, go there.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. Aer, eler, (*that*) *it may go.*
Imperf. Eid, elid, (*that*) *it might go.*
Plup. Aethid, elsid, (*that*) *it would have gone.*

Dyfod and Dawed, *to come.*

The inflected tenses of this verb (except *tyred* of the Imper.) are formed from *dawed* (of which *dyfod* is probably a mutation), and the obsolete *delu.*

311. Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

Present. I am coming.

Wyf (fi) yn dyfod, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect. I used to come ; I was coming.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Deuwn, delwn.	1. Deuem, delem.
2. Deuit, delit.	2. Deuech, delech.
3. Deuai, delai (dai).	3. Deuent, delent.

Perfect. I came ; I have come.

1. Daethym,[1]	1. Daethom.
2. Daethost.	2. Daethoch.
3. Daeth.	3. Daethant.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Deuais.	2. Deuaist.	3. Deuodd.
Pl.	1. Deusom.	2. Deusoch.	3. Deusant.

Pluperfect. I had come.

1. Daethwn, delswn.	1. Daethem, delsem.
2. Daethit, delsit.	2. Daethech, delsech.
3. Daethai, delsai.	3. Daethent, delsent.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Deuswn.	2. Deusit.	3. Deusai.
Pl.	1. Deusem.	2. Deusech.	3. Deusent.

Future. I shall or will come.

1. Deuaf, delaf, dôf (dawaf, döaf).	1. Deuwn, delwn, down, dewn.
2. Deui, deli, doi, dewi.	2. Deuwch, delwch, dowch, dewch.
3. Daw, deua, dêl.	3. Deuant, delant, dônt, dewant.

---

[1] The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perfect and pluperfect; as, *deuthym, deuthost,* &c.

Future-perfect.

I shall or will have come (in subjoined clauses).

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Deuwyf, delwyf (-of).	1. Deuom, delom.
2. Deuych, delych (-ech, -ot).	2. Deuoch, deloch.
3. Delo.	3. Deuont, delont.

Imperative Mood. Come.

1. ——
2. Tyred, dyred.
3. Deued, deled, doed (dawed).

} See pl. of *Future* Indicative.

Coll. 2. Tyre, dyre (S. W.); tyr'd (N. W.)

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. (That) I may come.

Delwyf *or* delof, &c. The same as *Future-perf.*

Imperfect. (That) I might come ; (if) I came.

Deuwn *or* delwn, &c. The same as *Imperfect* Indic.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have come ; (if) I had come.

Daethwn *or* delswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indic.

Infinitive Mood. Dyfod, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Participles. Yn dyfod, &c. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

312. IMPERSONAL PASSIVE OF DYFOD.

Indicative Mood.

Present.	Deuir, delir (dewir), *it* or *there is coming.*
Imperf.	Deuid, delid, *it was coming.*
Perfect.	Deuwyd, deued, daethwyd, daethpwyd, doed, *it is come.*
Plup.	Daethid, delsid, *it had come.*
Future.	Deuir, delir, doir, deir (dewir), *it will come.*
Fut.-perf.	Deuer, deler, doer (dawer), *it will have come* (in subj. clauses).

Imperative Mood.

Deuer, deler, doer (dawer), *let it* or *there come.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Deuer, deler, doer (dawer), (*that*) *it may come.*
Imperf.	Deuid, delid, doid (dewid), (*that*) *it might come.*
Plup.	Daethid, delsid, (*that*) *it would have come.*

Gwneyd, Gwneuthur, or Gwnelyd,[1]

To do, to make.

313. Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

Present. I am doing.

Wyf (fi) yn gwneyd, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect. I used to do; I was doing.

1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn.	1. Gwnaem, gwnelem.
2. Gwnait, gwnelit.	2. Gwnaech, gwnelech.
3. Gwnâi, gwnelai.	3. Gwnaent, gwnelent.

Perfect. I did; I have done.

1. Gwnaethym[2] (gwnelais).	1. Gwnaethom, gwnelsom.
2. Gwnaethost (gwnelaist).	2. Gwnaethoch, gwnelsoch.
3. Gwnaeth (gwnelodd).	3. Gwnaethant, gwnelsant.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Gwneis.	2. Gwneist.	3. Gwnaeth.
Pl.	1. Gwneusom.	2. Gwneusoch.	3. Gwneusant.

Pluperfect. I had done.

1. Gwnaethwn, gwnelswn.	1. Gwnaethem, gwnelsem.
2. Gwnaethit, gwnelsit.	2. Gwnaethech, gwnelsech.
3. Gwnaethai, gwnelsai.	3. Gwnaethent, gwnelsent.

Colloquial form.

Sing.	1. Gwneuswn.	2. Gwneusit.	3. Gwneusai.
Pl.	1. Gwneusem.	2. Gwneusech.	3. Gwneusent.

Future. I shall or will do.

1. Gwnâf, gwnelaf.	1. Gwnawn, gwnelwn.
2. Gwnèi, gwnài, gwneli.	2. Gwnewch, gwnelwch.
3. Gwnâ, gwnaiff, gwnêl.	3. Gwnânt, gwnelant.

Future-perfect. I shall or will have done (in subj. clauses).

1. Gwnelwyf, gwnelof.	1. Gwnelom.
2. Gwnelych, -ech, -ot.	2. Gwneloch.
3. Gwnelo.	3. Gwnelont

Imperative Mood. Do.

1. ——	1. Gwnawn (gwnelwn).
2. Gwnâ.	2. Gwnewch (gwnelwch).
3. Gwnaed, gwneled.	3. Gwnânt (gwnelant).

---

[1] *Gwnelyd* is obsolete except in the finite tenses.

[2] The diphthong *ae* is sometimes changed into *eu* in the perf. and pluperfect, as *deuthym*, *deuthost*, &c.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. (That) I may do.

Gwnelwyf *or* gwnelof, &c. The same as *Future-perfect.*

Imperf. (That) I might do ; (if) I did.

Gwnawn *or* gwnelwn, &c. The same as *Imperfect* Indicative.

Plup. (That) I would have done ; (if) I had done.

Gwnaethwn *or* gwnelswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indicative.

Infinitive Mood. Gwneyd *or* gwneuthur, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Participles. Yn gwneyd *or* yn gwneuthur, &c. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

314. PASSIVE FORM OF GWNEYD, GWNEUTHUR, or GWNELYD.

Indicative Mood.

Present.	Gwneir *or* gwnelir fi, &c., *I am made.* [= Passive of "*dysgu,*" p. 86.]
Imperf.	Gwneid *or* gwnelid fi, &c., *I was made.*
Perfect.	Gwnaed, gwnaethpwyd (gwnawd, gwnaethwyd) fi, &c., *I have been made.*
Plup.	Gwnaethid *or* gwnelsid fi, &c., *I had been made.*
Future.	Gwneir *or* gwnelir fi, &c., *I shall be made.*
Future-perf.	Gwnaer *or* gwneler fi, &c., *I shall have been made.* [In subj. clauses.]

Imperative Mood.

Gwnaer *or* gwneler fi, &c., *let me be made.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Gwnaer *or* gwneler fi, &c., (*that*) *I may be made.*
Imperf.	Gwneid *or* gwnelid fi, &c., (*that*) *I might be made.*
Plup.	Gwnaethid *or* gwnelsid fi, &c., (*that*) *I would have been made.*

Gwybod, *to know.*

315. Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

Present. I know.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Gwn.	1. Gwyddom.
2. Gwyddost.	2. Gwyddoch.
3. Gŵyr.	3. Gwyddant.

Imperfect. I knew.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Gwyddwn.	1. Gwyddem.
2. Gwyddit.	2. Gwyddech.
3. Gwyddai (gwyddiad, s. w.)	3. Gwyddent.

Perfect. I knew.

1. Gwybum.	1. Gwybuom.
2. Gwybuost.	2. Gwybuoch.
3. Gwybu.	3. Gwybuant.

Pluperfect. I had known.

1. Gwybuaswn.	1. Gwybuasem.
2. Gwybuasit.	2. Gwybuasech.
3. Gwybuasai.	3. Gwybuasent.

Future. I shall or will know.

1. Gwybyddaf.	1. Gwybyddwn.
2. Gwybyddi.	2. Gwybyddwch.
3. Gwybydd.	3. Gwybyddant.

Future-perfect. I shall have known (in subjoined clauses).

1. Gwybyddwyf, gwybyddof.	1. Gwybyddom.
2. Gwybyddych, -ech, -ot.	2. Gwybyddoch.
3. Gwybyddo.	3. Gwybyddont.

Contracted form.

1. Gwypwyf, gwypof.	1. Gwypom.
2. Gwypych, gwypech, gwypot.	2. Gwypoch.
3. Gwypo.	3. Gwypont.

Imperative Mood. Know.

1. ——	1. Gwybyddwn (gwypwn).
2. Gwybydd.	2. Gwybyddwch (gwypwch).
3. Gwybydded (gwyped).	3. Gwybyddant (gwypant).

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. (That) I may know.

Gwybyddwyf *or* gwybyddof, &c. The same as *Future-perfect.*

Imperfect. (That) I might know; (if) I knew.

1. Gwyddwn, gwybyddwn.	1. Gwyddem, gwybyddem.
2. Gwyddit, gwybyddit.	2. Gwyddech, gwybyddech.
3. Gwyddai, gwybyddai.	3. Gwyddent, gwybyddent.

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Gwypwn.	2. Gwypit.	3. Gwypai.
Pl. 1. Gwypem.	2. Gwypech.	3. Gwypent.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have known; (if) I had known.

Gwybuaswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indicative.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Gwybod, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn gwybod, &c. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

316. PASSIVE FORM OF GWYBOD.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Gwyddys, gwyddir (*coll.* S.W. gwŷs), *it is known.*
Imperf. Gwyddid, *it was known.*
Perfect. Gwybuwyd, (gwypwyd,) *it was* or *has been known.*
Plup. Gwybuasid, *it had been known.*
Future. Gwyddir, gwybyddir, *it will be known.*
Fut.-perf. Gwybydder, (gwyper,) *it will have been known* (in subjoined cl.)

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Gwybydder, (gwyper,) *let it be,* or *be it, known.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. Gwybydder, (gwyper,) (*that*) *it may be known.*
Imperf. Gwyddid, gwybyddid, (gwypid,) (*that*) *it might be known.*
Plup. Gwybuasid, (*that*) *it would have been known.*

Adnabod and Adwaen.[1]

To know = to be acquainted with, to recognise.

[With *gwybod* (p. 99), cf. Fr. *savoir* and Ger. *wissen;* with *adnabod* or *adwaen*, cf. Fr. *connaitre* and Ger. *kennen.*]

317. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. I know.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Adwaen.	1. Adwaenom.
2. Adwaenost.	2. Adwaenoch.
3. Edwyn.	3. Adwaenant (-ont).

Imperfect. I knew.

1. Adwaenwn.	1. Adwaenem.
2. Adwaenit.	2. Adwaenech.
3. Adwaenai.	3. Adwaenent.

Perfect. (Fr. *adnabod.*) I knew; I have known.

1. Adnabum.	1. Adnabuom, adnabuasom.
2. Adnabuost.	2. Adnabuoch, adnabuasoch.
3. Adnabu.	3. Adnabuont, adnabuasant.

Colloquial: Adwaenais, &c., like "*dysgu.*"

---

[1] *Adwaen* (quasi *adwn*) is radically finite = *I know*, and compounded of *ad* = re, and *gwn* = cognosco; but it is now popularly used as infinitive as well, = *to know.*

Pluperfect. (Fr. *adnabod.*) I had known.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Adnabuaswn.	1. Adnabuasem.
2. Adnabuasit.	2. Adnabuasech.
3. Adnabuasai.	3. Adnabuasent.

Colloquial: Adwaenaswn, &c., like "*dysgu.*"

Future. (Fr. *adnabod.*) I shall or will know.

1. Adnabyddaf.	1. Adnabyddwn.
2. Adnabyddi.	2. Adnabyddwch.
3. Adnebydd.	3. Adnabyddant.

Colloquial: Adwaenaf, &c., like "*dysgu.*"

Future-perfect. I shall have known (in subjoined cl.).

1. Adwaenwyf (-of).	1. Adwaenom.
2. Adwaenych (-ech, -ot).	2. Adwaenoch.
3. Adwaeno.	3. Adwaenont.

Or fr. *adnabod;* as,

1. Adnabyddwyf (adnapwyf).	1. Adnabyddom (adnapom).
2. Adnabyddych (adnapych).	2. Adnabyddoch (adnapoch).
3. Adnabyddo (adnapo).	3. Adnabyddont (adnapont).

Imperative Mood.

(Fr. *adnabod.*) Know.

1. ———	1. Adnabyddwn.
2. Adnebydd.	2. Adnabyddwch.
3. Adnabydded.	3. Adnabyddant.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. (That) I may know.

Adwaenwyf *or* adwaenof, &c., } The same as *Future-perfect.*
Adnabyddwyf, }

Imperfect. (That) I might know; (if) I knew.

Adwaenwn, &c. The same as *Imperfect* Indicative.

Or from *adnabod;* as,

1. Adnabyddwn.	1. Adnabyddem.
2. Adnabyddit.	2. Adnabyddech.
3. Adnabyddai.	3. Adnabyddent.

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Adnapwn.	2. Adnapit.	3. Adnapai.
Pl. 1. Adnapem.	2. Adnapech.	3. Adnapent.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have known; (if) I had known.

Adnabuaswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indicative.

Infinitive Mood. Adnabod *or* adwaen, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Participles. Yn adnabod, &c. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

318. PASSIVE FORM OF ADNABOD AND ADWAEN.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Adwaenir fi, &c., *I am known.* [=Pass. of "*dysgu.*"]
Imperf. Adwaenid fi, &c., *I was known.*
Perfect. Adnabuwyd fi, &c., *I was known.*
Plup. Adnabuasid fi, &c., *I had been known.*
Future. Adnabyddir fi, &c., *I shall be known.*
Fut.-perf. Adwaener, adnabydder, (adnaper) fi, &c., *I shall have been known* (in subjoined cl.)

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Adwaener, adnabydder, (adnaper) fi, &c., *let me be known.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. Adwaener, adnabydder, (adnaper) fi, &c., (*that*) *I may be known.*
Imperf. Adwaenid fi, &c., (*that*) *I might be known;* (*if*) *I were known.*
Plup. Adnabuasid fi, &c., (*that*) *I would have been known;* (*if*) *I had been known.*

Cael or Caffael.

To have[1] *= to obtain, to get.*

319. ACTIVE VOICE. INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. I am having.

Wyf (fi) yn cael *or* caffael, &c. The same as "*dysgu.*"

Imperfect. I used to have.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Cawn (caffwn).	1. Caem (caffem).
2. Cait, ceit (ceffit).	2. Caech (caffech).
3. Câi (caffai).	3. Caent (caffent).

Perfect. I had; I have had.

1. Cefais.	1. Cawsom.
2. Cefaist.	2. Cawsoch.
3. Cafodd (cafas).	3. Cawsant.

Contracted form.

Sing. 1. Ceis, cês. 2. Ceist, cêst. 3. Câdd, câs.

Pluperfect. I had had.

1. Cawswn.	1. Cawsem.
2. Cawsit.	2. Cawsech.
3. Cawsai.	3. Cawsent.

---

[1] *To have=to possess,* is expressed in Welsh by an inflection of *Bod* with a pronominal preposition; as, "Y mae genyf"=*there is with me.* [See §§ 331, 332.]

Future. I shall have.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Câf.	1. Cawn.
2. Cài, cèi (ceffi).	2. Cewch.
3. Ca, caiff, ceiff.	3. Cânt (caffant).

Future-perfect. I shall have had (in subjoined cl.)

1. Caffwyf (cafwyf), -of.	1. Caffom (cafom).
2. Ceffych (cefych), caffech, -ot.	2. Caffoch (cafoch).
3. Caffo (cafo).	3. Caffont (cafont).

IMPERATIVE MOOD. Let . . have.

3. Caed, caffed.	3. Cânt (caffant, caffont).

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. (That) I may have.

Caffwyf (cafwyf), -of, &c. The same as *Future-perfect.*

Imperfect. (That) I might have; (if) I had.

Cawn *or* caffwn, &c. The same as *Imperfect* Indicative.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have had; (if) I had had.

Cawswn, &c. The same as *Pluperfect* Indicative.

INFINITIVE MOOD. Cael *or* caffael. The same as "*dysgu.*"

PARTICIPLES. Yn cael *or* yn caffael. The same as "*yn dysgu.*"

320. PASSIVE FORM OF CAEL OR CAFFAEL.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. Ceir *or* ceffir fi, &c., *I am found.*[1] [=Passive of "*dysgu.*"]
Imperf. Ceid *or* ceffid fi, &c., *I was found.*
Perfect. Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, *or* cawd fi, &c., *I was found.*
Plup. Cawsid fi, &c., *I had been found.*
Future. Ceir *or* ceffir fi, &c., *I shall be found.*
Fut.-perf. Caer *or* caffer fi, &c., *I shall have been found* (in subjoined cl.)

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Caer *or* caffer fi, &c., *let me be found.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. Caer *or* caffer fi, &c., (*that*) *I may be found.*
Imperf. Ceid *or* ceffid fi, &c., (*that*) *I might be found;* (*if*) *I were found.*
Plup. Cawsid fi, &c., (*that*) *I would have been found;* (*if*) *I had been found.*

[1] This is the most usual signification of *cael* in the passive.

321. The compound verbs of BOD are conjugated like it. Most of the contractions, mentioned below, are now obsolete.

Adnabod (ad-nabod), *to recognise*, see § 317.
Canfod and canffod (can=Eng. *ken*, and bod), *to perceive.*
Clybod (clyw-bod), *to hear.* (Infin. obsolete.)
Cydfod (cyd-bod), *to agree.*
Cydnabod (cyd-nabod), *to acknowledge.*
Cyfarfod (cyfer-bod), *to meet.*
Darfod (dar-bod), *to cease to exist, to finish.*
Darganfod (dar-canfod), *to discover.*
Gorfod and gorffod (gor-bod), *to be obliged.*
Gwybod (gwydd-bod), *to know*, see § 315.
Hanfod and hanffod (han=L. *ens*, and bod), *to exist.*
Nabod (gwn=Eng. *ken*, Gr. γιν-ωσκω, and bod), *to recognise.*

(*a*) The *present* INDICATIVE of these verbs (except *gwybod*) are formed periphrastically; as, "Wyf yn canfod." Cenyw, deryw, goryw, and henyw, 3rd pers. sing. of *canfod, darfod, gorfod*, and *hanfod*, are obsolete.

(*b*) *Imperfect.* Hanoeddwn, &c. (conjugated like *oeddwn*), is an old form. So also is *daroedd*, 3rd pers. sing. Gorffai=gorfyddai. "A *orffai* ar gewri."—"I. MSS.," p. 254.

(*c*) *Perfect.* Hanbu, obsolete for *hanfu.*

(*d*) *Future.* Such as have *a* in the penult change *a* into *e* in 3rd pers. sing.: as, cenfydd, derfydd, adnebydd, cydnebydd, cyferfydd, henfydd, nebydd. *Hanfod* has a contracted form: hanffaf (=hanfyddaf), henffi, henffydd (hanbydd); hanffwn, henffwch, hanffant.

(*e*) IMPERATIVE. *Darfydded* is contracted into *derfid.* "A fyno Duw *derfid.*" *Hanfod* has a contracted form: Sing. 3. hanffed, hanboed, hanbid; Pl. 1. hanffwn, 2. hanffwch, 3. hanffant.

(*f*) *Present* SUBJUNCTIVE and *2nd future* of *canfod, darfod, gorfod, hanfod*, have contracted forms: canffwyf, darffwyf, gorffwyf, hanffwyf, &c., like *bwyf*, pres. Subj. of *Bod.*

(*g*) *Imperfect.* Darffai = darfyddai. Gorffai = gorfyddai. Hanffwn, -it, -ai; -em, -ech, -ent=hanfyddwn, &c.

(*h*) PASSIVE VOICE. *Imperfect*, Hanffid=hanfyddid. *Perfect*, Hanffwyd = hanfuwyd. *Future*, Hanffir = hanfyddir. IMPERATIVE, *2nd future*, and *present* SUBJUNCTIVE, canffer, darffer, gorffer, hanffer=canfydder, &c.

(*i*) Some modern writers change *bod* into *fydd* in the *perfect* and *pluperfect*, active and passive, and conjugate these tenses like *dysgu.* Canfyddais (=canfum); canfyddwyd (=canfuwyd); canfyddaswn (=canfuaswn); canfyddasid (= canfuasid). This is disapproved of by good critics.

322. *Ysgwyd*, "*to shake*," forms its finite tenses from } *ysgydw:* as, ysgydwaf.
Dwyn, "*to bring*," . . . *dyg* (= ducere): as, dygaf.
Cyd-ddwyn, "*to bear with*," . . *cyd-ddyg:* as, cyd-ddygaf.
Ymddŵyn, "*to behave*," "*conceive*," . *ymddyg:* as, ymddygaf.
Dianc, "*to flee*," . . . . . *diang:* as, diangaf.
Chwerthin, "*to laugh*," . . *chwardd:* as, chwarddaf.

(*a*) *Dwyn* has *dug* or *dygodd* in 3rd pers. sing. perf.; *dwg* or *dyg* in

3rd pers. sing. fut.; and *dwg* in 2nd pers. sing. Imperative. Its compounds follow the same rule.

(*b*) *Chwerthin* in colloquial language retains *th* in finite tenses: as, chwer*th*af, &c.

323. **Rhoi,** "*to give,*" has usually *dyry* (for *rho* or *rhy*) in 3rd pers. sing. fut.; and *dyro* (for *rho*) in 2nd pers. sing. Imperative.

Dywedyd, "*to say,*" has occasionally *dywawd*, *dyfod*, or *dywad* (for *dywedodd*) in 3rd pers. sing. perf.; and *dywyd*, *dyfyd*, or *dywaid* (for *dywed*) in 3rd pers. sing. present and future.

Codi, "*to raise*" or "*rise,*" has *cŵyd* (for *côd* or *coda*) in 3rd pers. sing. fut., and 2nd pers. sing. Imperative.

Cymmeryd, "*to take,*" **canu,** "*to sing,*" and **gwanu,** "*to pierce,*" make occasionally *cymmerth* for *cymmerodd*, *cânt* for *canodd*, and *gwânt* for *gwanodd*, in 3rd pers. sing. perfect.

The final **s** in **Aros,** "*to stay,*" was formerly sometimes cut off in the finite moods. **Aroais** (= **arosais**), *I stayed.* **Aroaf** (= **arosaf**), *I shall stay.*

Tewi, "*to be silent,*" had formerly *tau* as well as *taw* and *tawa* in 3rd pers. sing. future.

Tawed doeth, annoeth *ni thau, let the wise be silent, the unwise will not be silent.*
Fel y *tau* dafad, *as a sheep is silent.* Is. liii. 8.

Several verbs have **p** sometimes inserted between the root and the termination in the perfect of the passive voice; as,

Claddpwyd *for* claddwyd.	Gwanpwyd *for* gwanwyd.
Daethpwyd *for* daethwyd.	Gwnaethpwyd *for* gwnaethwyd.
Dycpwyd *for* dygwyd.	Gwelpwyd *for* gwelwyd.
Dywedpwyd *for* dywedwyd.	Lladdpwyd *for* lladdwyd.

Lladd, "*to kill,*" has sometimes *llâs* as well as **lladdpwyd** for *lladdwyd.*

"Gan y tri hyn y *llâs* traian y dynion."—Rev. ix. 18.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

324. Medd, *to say.*

Indicative Mood.

Present. Say I.		*Imperfect.* Said I.	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Meddaf.	1. Meddwn.	1. Meddwn.	1. Meddem.
2. Meddi.	2. Meddwch.	2. Meddit.	2. Meddech.
3. Medd.	3. Meddant.	3. Meddai.	3. Meddent.

325. Eb (cf. εἶπον : ἔπος), *to say* = '*quoth.*'

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present and *Past.* Say I; said I.

Sing. Ebe fi, ebe ti, ebe efe. Pl. Ebe ni, ebe chwi, ebe hwy.

(*a*) *Ebe* is also written *eb*, *ebyr*, or *ebai.*

(*b*) Its compounds *ateb*, to answer, *cyfateb*, to correspond, *gohebu*, to correspond, and *gwrtheb*, to answer, are conjugated like regular verbs.

(*c*) *Meddaf* and *ebe* are used in quotations, and are generally placed in the middle or at the end of a clause : *ebe* in quoting the exact words, and *meddaf* in quoting the sentiment or the exact words.—["Welsh Exercises," Ch. 22.]

---

326. Piau, *to own, to possess.*[1]

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present. I (=it is I) own.

Myfi, tydi, efe, biau. Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, biau.

(*a*) The particle *a* is occasionally put before the verb,—"myfi *a* biau." The initial *p* frequently remains unchanged,—"myfi *piau*." *Piau* is sometimes written *pia;* and *pioedd*, of the past, *piodd.*

Past. I owned.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
a)	Myfi, tydi, efe, bioedd.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, bioedd.
b)	Myfi, tydi, efe, oedd piau.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, oedd piau.

Future. I shall own.

[*a*)	Myfi, tydi, efe, bieufydd.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy bieufydd.[2]]
b)	Myfi, tydi, efe, fydd piau.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, fydd piau.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Imperfect. (That) I should own ; (if) I owned.

[*a*)	Myfi, tydi, efe, bieufyddai.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, bieufyddai.[2]]
b)	Myfi, tydi, efe, fyddai piau.	Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, fyddai piau.

Pluperfect. (That) I should have owned; (if) I had owned.

Myfi, tydi, efe, fuasai piau. Nyni, chwychwi, hwynt-hwy, fuasai piau.

327. Hwde (N. W.); **Hwre** (S. W.) are used only in the Imperative.

Sing. 2. Hwde *or* hwre, (*here*) *take.*
Pl. 2. Hwdiwch *or* hwriwch, (*here*) *take.*

---

[1] The clause, of which *piau* is the verb, may often be rendered into English by ". . *is mine*," or ". . *belongs to me.*" "Nyni biau'r tai hyn," *these houses are ours ; these houses belong to us.*

[2] These forms are now obsolete except occasionally in poetry.

328. **Moes**, *give*. The Imperative only is used.

Sing. 2. Moes, *give thou.* Pl. 2. Moeswch, *give ye.*

It also forms an auxiliary, similar to the Eng. "*let.*"

Moes i mi glywed, *let me hear.* Moes i ni fyned, *come, let us go.*

Byw, *to live*, and Marw, *to die.*

329. *Byw* and *marw*, having no inflections, borrow the auxiliary verb *bod* to express their various tenses.

Yr wyf yn byw, *I live.* Yr wyf yn marw, *I am dying.*

330. *Byw* and *marw* are also adjectives, corresponding to *alive* and *dead.*

When adjectives, they assume the *middle* sound after the particle *yn* ["*yn* apposition"], which is usually expressed;[1] when verbs, they preserve their *radical* initials after the particle ["*yn* participial"].

Adjectives.	*Verbs.*
Y mae yn *f*yw, *he is alive.*	Y mae yn *b*yw, *he is living.*
Y mae yn *f*arw, *he is dead.*	Y mae yn *m*arw, *he is dying.*

330 (1). When *byw* and *marw* are put in construction with the tenses *bum* (I was or have been), *byddaf* (I shall be), *bydd* (be thou), *byddwyf* (I may be), *byddwn* (I might or should be), *buaswn* (I should have been), *and unaccompanied by the particle* "yn," they are translated into English by the same tenses of the verbs *live* and *die.*

330 (2). The initial sound of *byw* and *marw* after the above-named tenses is irregular; but the general tendency is to put *byw* in the *radical* or *middle* (oftener in the *radical*), and *marw* in the *middle.*

Indicative Mood.

Perfect.

Bu efe *b*yw *or f*yw, *he lived.* Bu efe *f*arw, *he died.*

Future.

Bydd *b*yw *or f*yw, *he will live.* Bydd *f*arw, *he will die.*

Imperative Mood.

Bydded *b*yw *or f*yw, *let him live.* Bydded *f*arw, *let him die.*

---

[1] *Yn* is sometimes omitted, especially in negative propositions. "Ioseph nid yw fyw," *Joseph is not alive.*—Gen. xliii. 36.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.

Byddo *byw or fyw, he may live.* Byddo *farw, he may die.*

Imperfect.

Byddai *byw or fyw, he might live.* Byddai *farw, he might die.*

Pluperfect.

Buasai *byw or fyw, he would have lived.* Buasai *farw, he would have died.*

(*a*) When *byw* and *marw* are put in construction with any of the above-mentioned tenses, and are accompanied by "*yn* participial," they express the *progressive form* of the verbs.

Bum yn byw, *I have been living.*
Byddaf yn byw, *I shall be living.*
Pe byddwn yn byw, *if I were living, if I lived.*
Pe buaswn yn byw, *if I had been living, if I had lived.*

Y mae genyf (fi), *I have.*

331. The tenses of *have = possess*, are expressed in Welsh by the 3rd person of the verb *bod*, and *a preposition with its case.*

[*Have = get, obtain*, is expressed by *cael:* § 319.]

332. The prepositions are *gan*, with, *gyda*, with, and *i*, to; so that the sentence (*e.g.*) "I have a book," may be expressed by

a) Y mae genyf lyfr (N. W.) = *there is with me a book.*
b) Y mae gyda fi lyfr (S. W.) = *there is with me a book.*
c) Y mae i mi lyfr (S. W.) = *there is to me a book.*

(*a*) With this construction compare the Latin "*est mihi*," and the Greek *ἐμοί ἐστι.*

(*b*) When the nom. case is *indefinite*, the order of the sentence is as above, *verb—prep. with its case—nom.;* or, but less common, *verb—nom.—prep. with its case.* If the nom. is *definite*, the order is *verb—nom.—prep. with its case.*

Indef. Mae—genyf—lyfr, *I have a book.*
Mae—llyfr—genyf (less common), *I have a book.*
Definite. Mae—y llyfr—genyf, *I have the book.*

Indicative Mood.

Present. I have a book.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. Mae genyf (fi) lyfr.	1. Mae genym (ni) lyfr.
2. Mae genyt (ti) lyfr.	2. Mae genych (chwi) lyfr.
3. Mae ganddo (ef) lyfr.	3. Mae ganddynt (hwy) lyfr.
Mae ganddi (hi) lyfr.	Mae ganddynt (hwy) lyfr.

Imperfect. I had a book.

1. Yr oedd genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present.*

Perfect. I (once) had a book.

1. Bu genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present.*

Future. I shall or will have a book.

1. Bydd genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Have thou (or mayest thou have) a book.

2. Bydded genyt (ti) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present* Indicative.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present. (That) I may have a book

1. Byddo genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present* Indicative.

Imperfect. (That) I might have a book; (if) I had a book.

1. Byddai genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present* Indicative.

Pluperfect. (That) I would have had a book; (if) I had had a book.

1. Buasai genyf (fi) lyfr, &c. The same as *Present* Indicative.

333. The participle, equivalent to "*having*" = *possessing*, is expressed by *a* or *ag* (or *ac*), and *a preposition with its case.*

(*a*) The order of the words is:

Indefinite. A—chenyf—lyfr : a—llyfr—genyf, *having a book.*

Definite. A'r—llyfr—genyf, *having the book.*

Having a book.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. A chenyf (fi) lyfr.	1. A chenym (ni) lyfr.
2. A chenyt (ti) lyfr.	2. A chenych (chwi) lyfr.
3. A chanddo (ef) lyfr.	3. A chanddynt (hwy) lyfr.
A chanddi (hi) lyfr.	A chanddynt (hwy) lyfr.

Or: Ag i mi, ag i ti lyfr, ag iddo (ef) lyfr, &c.

A chyda fi lyfr, a chyda thi lyfr, a chydag ef lyfr, &c.

334. *Genyf* and (in S.W.) *gyda fi*, accompanied by the verb *bod* and a predicative adjective, express other notions; such as *to be* or *feel glad, to be* or *feel sorry, to hate, to be surprised, to doubt, to be certain*, &c.—["Welsh Exercises," Ch. 29.]

Mae yn dda genyf (*or* gyda fi) = *it is good with me; I am glad, I am fond of.*
Mae yn llawen genyf, *I am delighted.*
Mae yn ddrwg genyf, *I am sorry.*
Mae yn edifar genyf, *I am sorry* = *I regret.*
Mae yn arw genyf, *I am sorry.*
Mae yn gas genyf, *I hate.*
Mae yn ffiaidd genyf, *I abhor.*
Mae yn rhyfedd genyf, *I am surprised.*
Mae yn sicr genyf, *I am certain.*
Mae yn ammheus genyf, *I doubt.*

(*a*) ☞ The negative of *mae* in this construction is *yw* or *ydyw*. Nid *yw* yn dda genyf, *I am not glad.*

334 (1). The prep. *ar* (on or upon) with its case, accompanied by the verb *bod* and a noun, expresses (generally) *what is not pleasant to have or to bear.*

Mae arnaf ofn=*there is on me fear; I am afraid.*
Mae arnaf eisieu, *I want.*
Mae arnaf hiraeth, *I long.*
Mae arnaf ddyled, *I owe.*
Mae arnaf annwyd, *I am cold.*
Mae arnaf newyn, *I am hungry.*
Mae arnaf syched, *I am thirsty.*
Mae arnaf chwant, *I am inclined* or *have a mind.*

Mae gorfod arnaf, *I am compelled.*
Mae y ddannodd arnaf, *I have toothache,*
Mae y pâs (*or* deubas[1]) arnaf, *I have the hooping-cough.*
Mae yr annwyd arnaf, *I have a cold.*

THE ARTICLE.

335. The Welsh language has no indefinite article, corresponding to *a* or *an* of the English.

336. The *definite article* is *y*[2] or *yr* (contracted *'r*), corresponding to *the*, and like it defines a noun, or a word standing for a noun.

337. *Y* is used before a *consonant; yr* before a *vowel* and the letter *h; 'r* before a *vowel* or a *consonant*, if the preceding word ends with a vowel.

Yr aur; *yr* haul; *y* galaru; *y* cyfiawn; y tad *a'r* fam.

(*a*) The articles *y* and *yr* are to be distinguished from the affirmative adverbs *y* and *yr* (=*it is*) and the conjunctions *y* and *yr* (=*that*).

ADVERBS.

338. Adverbs may be divided into *simple* and *compound.* By "simple adverbs," we mean such as express the notion of an adverb by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary in point of etymology; as *yna, yma, allan,*

[1] *Deubas* (in the Powis dialect) is either for *dubas*, black cough, or for *dyheubas*, panting cough.
[2] *Y* is probably cognate with the Gr. article ὁ or ἡ.

ymaith, &c. By "compound adverbs" are meant such as express the notion of an adverb by two or more words; as *oddi uchod, o hyn allan.*

339. Many of the adverbs are really substantives, or substantive words in a state of construction. Some may be still looked upon as such; but others, having thrown aside the governing and the concomitant words, and preserving only the mere substantive, are conveniently reckoned as adverbs.

340. The following may be looked upon as substantives in a state of construction. *Yn y fan* = on the spot; immediately. *Ar wahan* = on a separation; apart. *Ym mron* = on the slope; nearly. *O hyn allan* = from this out; henceforth.

341. These may be reckoned as adverbs, though strictly substantives under the government of prepositions. *Sut* (for *ym mha sut*), how? *Weithian* (for *ar y waith hon*), now. *Lle* (for *ym mha le*), where?

342. *Motion to* is often expressed by the prep. *i*, with another word significant of place. *I fyny* = to the mountain; upward. *I maes* = to the field; out. *I lawr* = to the ground; downward. *I mewn* = to within; in. *I waered* = to the bottom; down.

343. *Motion from* is often expressed by *oddi* and *o*, from, with another word significant of place. *Obry* = from the hill; below. *Oddi uchod*, from above. *Oddi yma* = from here; hence. *Oddi acw*, from yonder. *Oddi isod*, from below.

344. Some adverbs are formed by uniting a whole sentence, so as to form one compound word. *Sef* (namely) is compounded of *ys*, is, and *ef*, he or it, and literally signifies *it* or *that is*. *Malpai* (as if it were) is divisible into *mal*, as, *pe*, if, *bai*, were. *Ysgatfydd* (perhaps) is formed of *ys-gad-bydd* = allow that it will be or occur.

345. *Adverbs of quality* are formed from adjectives by setting before them the particle *yn* (hence called 'yn *adverbial*,') and changing their initial consonant into the *middle* sound. [Their English equivalents are made by suffixing *ly* to the adjective.]

Uniawn, *upright.* Yn uniawn, *uprightly.* Drwg, *bad.* Yn ddrwg, *badly.*
Cyfiawn, *just.* Yn gyfiawn, *justly.* Teg, *fair.* Yn deg, *fairly.*

(*a*) These adverbs are capable of the same degrees of comparison as the adjectives, and by the same characteristic forms; as, *yn decach*, &c., more fairly.

346. *Adverbs of number* are made by adding *gwaith* or *tro* to any numeral adjective. [§§ 179, 180.]

Unwaith, *once.*	Untro, *once.*
Dwywaith, *twice.*	Deudro, *twice.*
Teirgwaith, *three times.*	Trithro, *three times.*

(*a*) These are really substantives under the government of such prep. as *ar* or *am.*

347. *Adverbs of order* are formed by setting 'yn *adverbial,*' before ordinal numbers, and the usual terms of succession.

Yn gyntaf, *first.*	Yn olaf, *lastly.*
Yn ail, *secondly.*	Yn ddiweddaf, *finally.*

CLASSIFICATION OF ADVERBS.

The principal heads into which adverbs are usually divided are the following: — **Adverbs of quality.** (See above.) **Adverbs of number.** (See above.) **Adverbs of order.** (See above.)

348. **Adverbs of place.**

Acw (= ἐκεῖ), *yonder.*	I fyny, *upward, up.*
Adref, *home.*	I lawr, *downward, down.*
Gartref, *at home.*	I waered, *downward, down.*
Allan, *out.*	Yn ol, *back.*
Fry, *above.*	Ar ol, *behind.*
Draw, *yonder.*	Ar bwys, *near.*
Hwnt, *away.*	Rhag blaen, *forward.*
Isod, *below.*	I maes, *out.* (S. W.)
Uchod, *above.*	I mewn, *within.*
Yma, *here, hither.*	Oddeutu, *about.*
Yna, *there, thither* (*in sight*).	Oddi amgylch, *about.*
Yno, *there* (*out of sight*).	Oddi yma, *hence.*
Ymaith, *hence.*	Oddi yna, *thence.*
Obry, *below.*	Oddi acw, *from yonder.*
Tanodd, *underneath.*	Oddi yno, *from that place.*
Trwodd, *through.*	Oddi uchod, *from above.*
Trosodd, *over.*	Oddi isod, *from below.*
Ym mlaen, *forward.*	Oddi fewn, *from within.*
Ar wahan, *apart.*	Oddi allan, *from without; outside.*
O'r neilldu, *aside.*	Oddi tanodd, *under.*

349. **Adverbs of showing** (governing *mid.* sound).

Dacw, *yonder* (*is*).	Llyna, *lo there.*
Dyma, *here* (*is*).	Nycha (= L. *en ecce*), *behold.*
Dyna, *there* (*is*).	Wele, *behold.*
Llyma, *lo here.*	

350. Adverbs of time.

Heddyw, *to-day.*
Heno, *to-night.*
Doe, *yesterday.*
Neithwyr, *last night.*
Echdoe (cf. Gr. *ἐχθές*), *the day before yesterday.*
Echnos, *the night before last.*
Y fory (efory), *to-morrow.*
Trenydd, *the day after to-morrow.*
Tradwy, *the day after* trenydd.
Tranoeth, *on the morrow.*
Eleni, yleni, *this year.*
Yllynedd (ellynedd), *last year.*
Weithian, *now, at length.*
Weithion, *now, at length.*
Weithiau, *at times.*
Gynt, *formerly.*
Gyneu, *a little while ago* (within a day).
Eisoes, *already.*
Allan o law (N.W.), *presently.*
Maes o law (S.W.), *presently.*
Beunydd, *daily.*
Yn union, *immediately.*
Yn union deg (*coll.* N. W.), *immediately.*
Erioed, *ever* (past time).[1]
Byth, *ever* (future time).[1]
Yn awr, *coll.* nawr (S. W.), *now.*
Yr awr hon, yr awron, *coll.* (N. W.) yrŵan, *now.*
Toc (N. W.), *presently.*
Eto, *again; yet; still.*
Drachefn, *again.*
Bob amser, *always.*
Yn wastad, *continually.*
Newydd, *newly, just.*
Ambell waith, *sometimes.*
Ambell dro, *sometimes.*
Erys talm, *long ago, for a long while* (weeks, months, or years).
Erys meityn, *for some time* (hours, or a part of a day).
Y rhawg, *for a long while* (future time).
O hyn allan, *henceforth.*
Rhag llaw, *henceforth.*
Toc a da (*coll.* N. W.), *presently and in good time.*
Ar fyr, *shortly.*
Cyhŷd, *so long.*
O'r blaen, *before.*
Ar ol, *behind.*

351. Adverbs of quantity.

Braidd, o'r braidd, *hardly, scarcely; nearly, almost.*
Bron, o'r bron, *nearly, almost.*
Prin, digon prin, *hardly, scarcely.*
(Yn) agos, *nearly, almost.*
I gyd, *wholly, altogether.*
Yng nghyd, *altogether.*
Llawer, *much.*
Llei-lai, *less and less.*
Mwy-fwy, *more and more.*

[For remarks on *braidd, bron, prin,* and *yn agos,* see Syntax, § 698 (1).]

352. Adverbs of doubting. [§ 696.]

Ef allai, Fe allai, } *perhaps, possibly.*
Dichon, Fe dichon, } *perhaps, possibly.*
Ond odid, Odid, } *probably.*
(Nid hwyrach,) Hwyrach, } *perhaps, possibly.*
Ysgatfydd, *peradventure.*

353. Adverbs of negation. [§§ 678–689.]

Ni, nid, nis, *not.*
Na, nad, nas, *not; that . . not.*
Nac, *not.*
Naddo, na ddo, *not.*
Nage (=nac-ïe), *no.*
Dim, an auxiliary negative.
Mo (dim o), an auxiliary negative.

[1] See Exercise Book, p. 180.

354. Adverbs of affirmation.

Yn ddiau, *undoubtedly.*
Yn wir, *truly, indeed.*
Yn ddilys, *certainly.*
O'r goreu, *very well.*
Purion, *very well.*
Sef, *namely.*
Do, *yes.*
Ië, *yes.*
Nid amgen, *not otherwise.*

355. Adverbs of interrogation.

A, simple interrogative. [§ 819.]
Ai, *is it?* [§ 822.]
Ai ni, nid, *or* nis, *is it not?*
Oni, onid, onis, *is it not?*
Aie (= ai ïe), *is it so? indeed?*
Sut, pa sut, *how?*
Lle, pa le, *where?*
Pam, pa ham, *why?*
Pa fodd, pa wedd, *how?*
Pa bryd, pryd, *when?*

356. Adverbs of comparison.

Cyn (can, gan), *as; so; how.*
Go, *rather, pretty.*
Iawn, *very.*
Lled, *rather, pretty.*
Mor, *as; so; how.*
Pur, *very.*
Tra, *very, pretty.*
Rhy, *too* (noting excess).
Po (= *quo*), *by how much; the.*
Digon, *sufficiently.*
Yn hytrach, *rather.*
Fel, *as.*
Felly, *so.*
Megys, *as.*
Mwy, *more.*
Llai, *less.*
Mwyaf, *most.*
Lleiaf, *least.*

357. Auxiliary affirmative adverbs. [§§ 699–722.]

A; 'Duw *a* ddywedodd.'
Y; 'Yna *y* dywedodd.'
Yd; 'Basaf dwfr man *yd* lefair.'
Ydd; 'Cyflym *ydd* a rym yr oes.'
Yr; 'Hwyr *yr* erys Duw cyn taro.'

(*a*) *E, fe,* and *fo,* called by some *auxiliary affirmative adverbs,* are more properly *auxiliary pronouns.*

358. In Welsh, as in other languages, many of the adverbs are to be distinguished from conjunctions and prepositions by their *use* and *signification,* not by their form; for it happens that the same word is in one place an adverb, and in another a conjunction or a preposition. In the sentence, "Deuaf *yna* y fory," I will come *there* to-morrow, *yna* is an adverb; but in the sentence, "Os felly, *yna* mi a ddeuaf," if so, *then* I will come, *yna* is a conjunction.

359. Conjunctional adverbs.—Such words as *cyn, pryd, pan, wedi, tra* (whilst), *hyd, hyd oni, hyd nes,* &c., are by some called *adverbs,* by others *conjunctions,* and by others *conjunctional adverbs,* on the ground that they combine the notion of both an adverb and of a conjunction. In the sentence,

"I will visit you when I return," the word *when* includes the notion of an adverb, as it refers to a *point of time;* but it includes also the notion of a conjunction, as it connects the clause "when I return," with the preceding, "I will visit you." But as these particles have an influence over their verbs, and require a particular construction, it is better to disregard their adverbial import, and classify them under conjunctions.

CONJUNCTIONS.

360. "Conjunctions are usually divided into the two principal classes of *conjunctives* and *disjunctives.*" These again are capable of subdivisions, of which the following are the most important:

α) **Copulative.**—A, ac, *and.* Hefyd, *also.*

β) **Disjunctive.**—Neu, *or.*

Naill ai . . . ai, neu, ynte, *either . . . or.*
Na *or* nac . . na *or* nac, *neither . . . . nor.*

γ) **Suppositive** (or **hypothetical**). [§ 839, &c.]—O, od, os (formerly *or*), *if.* Pe, ped, pes, pei, *if.* Oni, onid, onis, *if . . not; except, unless.* Oddieithr, oddigerth, *except.*

δ) **Concessive.** [§ 789, &c.]—Er, serch, cŷd, *although.*

ε) **Causal.** [§ 774, &c.]—O achos, o herwydd, o waith, o blegyd, o ran, am (formerly o ethryb, o blaid), *because.* Gan (can), *since, seeing that, as.* Yn gymmaint ag, *inasmuch as.* Canys, *for.*

(*a*) *O* is sometimes omitted in *o achos, o herwydd,* &c.

ζ) The conjunctions of **motive** or **purpose.**—Mal, fal, fel, megys, modd, *in order that.* Rhag, *in order that . . not.*

η) The conjunctions of **effect** or **result.**—Mal, fal, fel, *so that.*

θ) **Explanatory.** [§§ 770–772.]—Y, yr, mai, taw, *that.*

ι) **Temporal.** [§ 789, &c.]—Pan, pryd, *when.* Cyn, *before.* Wedi, gwedi, ar ol, yn ol, *after.* Tra, *whilst.* Cyhŷd ag, cŷd, cŷd ag, *as long as.* Er pan, *since.* Hyd, nes, tan,

oni, onid, onis, &c., hyd nes, *until.* Cyn gynted ag, gynted ag, er cynted ag, *as soon as.* Pryd bynag, pa bryd bynag, *whenever.* Newydd, *just when.* Gyda (cyda), *the moment that.*

κ) **Comparative.**—Na, nag (no, nog), *than.* Mal, fal, fel, megys, ys, *as.* Ag, *as.*

(*a*) *Mal, fal, fel,* and *megys* are sometimes followed by *ag : mal ag,* &c.

λ) **Adversative.**—Ond, eithr, *but.* Namyn, onid, oddieithr, oddigerth, *except.* Eto, er hyn, er hyny, *yet, notwithstanding.*

μ) **Illative (or inferring).**—Yna, *then* (= *in that case*). Ynte, *then* (= *therefore*). Am hyny, gan hyny, o achos hyny, &c., *therefore.*

PREPOSITIONS.

361. Prepositions may be divided into the following classes :—

α) **Simple prepositions** are such as express the notion of a preposition by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary as to etymology ; as, *am, mewn, gerfydd.*

β) **Compound prepositions** are such as express the notion of a preposition by two or more words ; as, *ar led, oddi amgylch, tu mewn i.*

γ) **Pronominal prepositions** are such as enter into combination with personal pronouns ; as, *genyf,* with me, from the prep. *gan,* with, and the pronoun *mi* or *fi,* me.

δ) **Inseparable prepositions,** or **prefixes,** are such as enter into combination with nouns, adjectives, &c., to form compound words ; as, *af* in *aflwydd ; gor* in *gorthrwm ; dy* in *dygynnull.*

SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

362. As the government of the prepositions is of great importance in the Welsh language, it will be useful here to arrange them under different heads, that the student may with greater facility acquaint himself with the governing power of each.

363. Prepositions proper.—Some may be denominated "prepositions proper," or those that seem to have the greatest claim to such a name, in opposition to nouns used prepositionally by an ellipsis of a particle.

364. *a*) The following govern the **radical** sound :—

Cyn, *before.*
Er, *since.*[1]
Erys, er's (vulgo *es*), *for.*[1]
Erbyn, *against ; by.*
Ger (gar), } *by, at.*
Cer (car), }
Gerfydd (cerfydd), *by.*
Gwedi, wedi, } *after.*
(Cwedi), }
Heibio, *by, past.*
Is, *below.*
Mewn, *in* (indefinite).
Myn (=μὴν), *by* (in swearing).
Rhag (=præ), *from ; for.*
Serch, *notwithstanding.*
Rhwng, *between.*
Uwch (uch), *above.*

365. *b*) The following govern the **middle** sound :—

Am (=Gr. ἀμφὶ), *about, on account of, of, for.*
Ar, *on, upon ; at.*
At, *to, close to.*
Gan, can, *with ; by ; from.*
Heb, *without.*
Hyd,[2] *as far as ; until.*
I,[3] *to, into ; for.*
Tros, dros, *over ; for.*
Trwy, drwy, *through.*
Wrth, *close to, by, at ; to.*
O,[4] *out of, from ; of.*
Tan, dan, *under, until.*

(*a*) The prep. *oddi*, from, usually governs the *middle ;* but sometimes the *radical.*

(*b*) *Idd*, to ; *odd*, and the obsolete *oc*, from, precede nouns only when they have an article or its equivalent before them ; as, *idd y tŷ ; odd eu tai.* They are peculiar to S. W.

366. *c*) The definite preposition *yn*, in, governs the **nasal** sound.

(*a*) In certain cases *yn* becomes *ym* and *yng.* [See § 97, 98.]

(*b*) "*Yn* participial" governs the *radical ;* "*yn* adverbial," and "*yn* apposition," govern the *middle.* Thus the different functions of the word *yn* are distinguished by its government.

---

[1] The difference between "er," *since*, and "erys," *for*, is explained in "Welsh Exercises," § 335.

[2] *Hyd* and *ar hyd* sometimes govern the radical. "Ar hyd *ll*wybrau uniondeb."—Ps. xxvii. 11.

[3] *I* governs the pron. *ti* and its compounds in the *radical ;* as, "peri i *t*i dewi :" it governs *mi* and its compounds, and *mewn* and *maes*, in the *rad.* or *middle ;* as, "dywed i *mi* or *i fi.*"

[4] *O* in some cases governs the *rad.* or *middle ;* as, *o* mewn or o *f*ewn ; *o t*an or o *d*an.

367. *d*) The following govern the **aspirate** of class first (*c, p, t*); and **radical** of classes second and third (*g, b, d; ll, m, rh*).

A,[1] *with.* *Ag*, before vowels.
Gyda, cyda, *with, along with.* *Gydag, cydag*, before vowels.
Tua, *towards; about.* *Tuag*, before vowels.
Efo, *with.*
Tra, *beyond.*

(*a*) A circumflex is usually placed over *a* and *ag* when prepositions; as, lladd *â* chleddyf, *to kill with a sword.*

368. Substantive prepositions.—Some prepositions may be termed "substantive prepositions," or substantives employed as prepositions.

369. A substantive, when followed by another substantive in the possessive case, governs it in the *radical* sound; e.g. "planwr gwinllan," where we see that *gwinllan* retains its *radical* sound after *planwr.*

Accordingly we find that *all substantive prepositions govern the* **radical** *sound.*

Achos (=causâ), *on account of.*
Cylch, amgylch, *about.*
Parth, parthed, *as to.*
Plegyd, *because of.*
Gwaith,[2] *because of.*
Herwydd, *because of.*
Traws, draws, *over.*

COMPOUND PREPOSITIONS.

370. Compound prepositions are made up (1) Of two or more simple prepositions; as *oddi ar, tuag at am.* (2) Of prepositions and substantives (*or* substantive words); as *ar led, tu cefn i.*

371. As some of these end with a preposition (oddi *ar*, hyd *at*), and some with a substantive (ar *led*, ger *bron*), they are hence divisible into two classes.

372. Compounds ending with a preposition.—These govern the same sound as the simple prepositions with which

---

[1] *A* and its compounds govern the pron. *mi* in the *rad.* or the *middle;* as, gyda *mi*, or gyda *fi.*
[2] Cf. Gr. ἕργω, and L. *ergo. Victoriæ ergo.*

they end. For example, *ar* governs the *middle* sound; as, ar *f*ynydd: hence its compound *oddi ar* governs the *same* sound; as, oddi ar *f*ynydd.

Am dan,[1] *about; on.*
Gor is, *below.*
Gor uwch, *above.*
O dan, *under.*
Oddi ar, } *from upon, from.*
Odd-ar, }
Oddi dan *or* tan, *from under, under.*
Oddi am,[1] }
Oddi am dan,[1] } *from about, off.*
Oddi wrth, *from beside, from.*
Ar gyfer (i), *opposite to; before.*
Ar gyferyd i, *opposite to; before.*
Cyferbyn â (âg), *opposite to.*
Cyfarwyneb â (âg), *opposite to.*
Gwydderbyn â (âg), *opposite to.*
Parth â (âg), *towards.*
Parth ag at, *towards.*
Tuag at, *towards.*
Tuag at am, *as to.*
Hyd at, *as far as.*

Hyd ar, *as far as.*
Hyd yn, *as far as.*
Yng nghyda (âg), *together with.*
Yng ngwrthwyneb i, *against.*
Oddi maes i, } *from without.*
Oddi allan i, }
Oddi mewn i, *from within, within.*
Tu blaen i, *before.*
Tu cefn i, *behind.*
Tu maes i, } *outside.*
Tu allan i, }
Tu draw i, } *beyond.*
Tu hwnt i, }
Tu isaf i, *below.*
Tu ol i, } *behind.*
Tu yn ol i, }
Tu mewn i, *within.*
Tu uchaf i, *above.*
Tu yma i, *this side.*
Tu yna i, *that side.*

373. Compounds ending with a substantive. — These govern the *radical* sound, like substantive prepositions.

Am ben[2]=*about the head; on, at.*
Ar ben[2]=*on the head; on, at.*
Ar gyfer, *opposite to; before.*
Ar hyd, *along.*
Ar led, *over.*
Ar ol, *after, behind.*
Ar draws, *over.*
Ar warthaf, *upon.*
Er mwyn, *for the sake of.*
Er gwaethaf, *in spite of.*
Ger bron, *in presence of, before.*
Ger gwydd, *in presence of, before.*
Ger wyneb, *in presence of, before.*
Ger llaw, *at hand, near, by.*
Rhag bron, *in presence of, before.*
Rhag wyneb, *in presence of, before.*
O flaen, *before.*
O fewn, *within.*
Heb law, *besides.*
Is law=*below the hand; below.*
O achos=*from the cause of; because of.*
O blegyd, *because of.*
O herwydd, *because of.*
O ethryb, *because of.*
O waith, *because of.*
O gylch, o amgylch, *about.*
Oddi amgylch, *from about, about.*
O barth, o barthed, *as to.*
Oddeutu, o beutu, *about.*
O gwmpas, *about.*
O ran, *as for, because of.*
Uwch ben=*overhead; above.*
Uwch law=*overhand; above.*
Yn ol, *behind; according to.*
Yng nghylch=*in a circle; about.*
Ym mhlith, *among.*
I blith=*to among; among.*
Ym mysg, *among.*
I fysg=*to among; among.*
Yng ngwydd, *in the presence of, before.*
Yn ymyl=*at the side of; close to.*
Yn lle, *instead of, for.*
Wrth law=*by the hand of; beside.*
Yn erbyn, *against, in opposition to.*
I . . erbyn, *against* (as, "daeth *i'm herbyn*").
Ym mhen, *in* (=*in . . 's time*; as, "*ym mhen* mis").

---

[1] See Syntax, § 749.
[2] Chwerthin *am ben* or *ar ben, to laugh at.*

PRONOMINAL PREPOSITIONS.

374. The prepositions that admit of being combined with the personal pronouns, so as to form a class of words, which *Dr. Pughe* very properly calls "pronominal prepositions," are the following:—

a) Simple: *ar; at; dar; er; gan* or *can; heb; hyd; han* or *hon* (proceeding from); *i; rhag; rhwng; tan* or *dan; tros* or *dros; trwy* or *drwy; wrth; yn.*

b) Compound: *am dan; o dan* or *tan; oddi dan* or *tan; oddi ar; oddi wrth; oddi gan; oddi am dan; oddi rhwng; ar hyd; o han* or *hon; hyd yn; hyd ar; hyd at; parth ag at; tuag at.*

375. When personal pronouns are suffixed to these particles, they suffer their vowels to be changed and inverted, to render the words more harmonious, and to give a greater variety of forms.

376. The following table exhibits the various forms which each personal pronoun assumes.

1.	Af, of (*or* wyf), yf,	fr. *fi.*	1.	Om, ym, qu.	fr. *ni.*
2.	At, ot, yt,	fr. *ti.*	2.	Och, ych,	fr. *chwi.*
3.	O, *m.*	fr. *o=e.*	3.	Ynt,	fr. *hwynt.*
	I, *f.*	fr. *hi.*			

(*a*) The 2d pers. sing. sometimes ends in *d*. ata*d*, am dana*d*, &c. The letter *t* in *ynt* is sometimes cut off in poetry. "Pan fo caledfyd *arnyn*'." —E. Prys.

377. These pronominals are classified under three distinct heads, distinguished by the termination of the first person singular. *Ataf* has *af* for its ending; *hebof* has *of* or *wyf; genyf* has *yf:* hence they belong to three different classes.

378. First class: Af.

Sing.	1.	Ataf (at-fi), *to me.*	Pl. 1.	Atom (at-ni?), *to us.*
	2.	Atat (at-ti), *to thee.*	2.	Atoch (at-chwi), *to you.*
	3.	Ato (at-o), *to him.*	3.	Atynt (at-hwynt), *to them.*
		Ati (at-hi), *to her.*		

The following belong to this class:—

Arnaf (ar-fi), *upon me.*
Darnaf (dar-fi), *upon me.*
Tanaf *or* danaf (tan-fi), *under me.*
Am danaf, *about me.*
O danaf, *under me.*
Oddi tanaf, *from under me.*
Oddi arnaf, *from upon me.*
Oddi am danaf, *from about me.*
Hyd arnaf, *even upon me.*
Hyd ataf, *up to me.*
Parth ag ataf, *towards me.*
Tuag ataf, *towards me.*

379. Second class : **Of** (or **wyf.**)

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	Erof *or* erddof (er-fi), *for me.*	1. Erom *or* erddom (er-ni?), *for us.*
2.	Erot *or* erddot (er-ti), *for thee.*	2. Eroch *or* erddoch (er-chwi), *for you.*
3.	Erddo (er-o), *for him.* / Erddi (er-hi), *for her.*	3. Erddynt (er-hwynt), *for them.*

The following belong to this class :—

Hebof (heb-fi), *without me.*
Hanof *or* honof (han-fi), *of me.*
Rhagof (rhag-fi), *before me.*
Rhyngof (rhwng-fi), *between me.*
Trosof *or* drosof (tros-fi), *over* or *for me.*
Trwyof *or* drwyof (trwy-fi), *through me.*
Hydof (hyd-fi), *over me.*
Ynof (yn-fi), *in me.*
O hanof *or* o honof, *of* or *from me.*
Hyd ynof, *even to me.*
Oddi rhyngof, *from between me.*
Ar hydof, *over me.*

(*a*) *N* and *dd* (as in ar*n*o, er*dd*o, gan*dd*o) are no parts of the original words, but are thrown in for the sake of euphony. [Cf. Gr. μη-δ-εις.] Instead of *dd* we sometimes find *th* and *t* : gan*th*o, yn*th*ynt, rhyng*th*ynt, gan*th*ynt.

(*b*) *Trwyof* often omits the *y* in 1st and 2nd persons, making *trwof, trwot; trwom, trwoch.*

Trosof has *t* in 3rd person—*trosto, trostynt;* and colloquially in all the other persons—*trostof, trostot,* &c.

O hanof, o honof, &c., are conjugated without the aid of *dd* in any person—*o hono, o honi, o honom, o honoch, o honynt. O naddynt* is sometimes found for *o honynt.*

380. Third class : **Yf.**

1.	Genyf (gan-fi), *with me.*	1. Genym (gan-ni?), *with us.*
2.	Genyt (gan-ti), *with thee.*	2. Genych (gan-chwi), *with you.*
3.	Ganddo (gan-o), *with him.* / Ganddi (gan-hi), *with her.*	3. Ganddynt (gan-hwynt), *with them.*

The following belong to this class :—

Wrthyf (wrth-fi), *to me ; by me.*
Oddi wrthyf (=*from beside me*) ; *from me.*
Oddi genyf (=*from with me*) ; *from me.*

(*a*) *Wrthyf* and *oddi wrthyf* are conjugated without the aid of *dd* in the 3rd person, making *wrtho, wrthi, wrthynt.*

381. The preposition *i* with a personal pronoun is thus written :—

Simple.

1.	Imi (im'), *to me.*	1. Ini (in'), *to us.*
2.	Iti (it'), *to thee.*	2. Ichwi (ich', iwch), *to you.*
3.	Iddo, *to him.* / Iddi, *to her.*	3. Iddynt, *to them.*

Emphatic.

1.	I mi.	1. I ni.
2.	I ti.	2. I chwi.
3.	Iddo ef *or* fo. / Iddi hi.	3. Iddynt hwy.

INTERJECTIONS.

382. Many of the particles, denominated *interjections*, are 'verbs of the Imperative mood, both in their form and abstract meaning, and mostly of the second person.' *Aro!* stop, is the Imper. of *aros*, to stop: *wela* or *wele!* behold, the Imper. of *gweled*, to see or behold: *taw!* hush, the Imper. of *tewi*, to be silent.

383. Some are nouns and adjectives out of construction: as, *ffwrdd!* avaunt; *huw!* alas; *syndod!* wonder; *dyn!* dear me; *dyn byw!* man alive; *druan!* poor thing; *druan bach!* poor little thing. Some are adverbs: as, *dyma!* here is; *dacw!* yonder; *dyna!* there; *hwnt!* avaunt; *llyma!* lo here; *llyna!* lo there; *ymaith!* avaunt, away.

384. A phrase, or a clause with a portion left out, will frequently constitute an interjection; as, *gwyn ei fyd!* would to heaven; *ysywaeth* (=which is worse), the more the pity.

385. Others are mere ejaculations which cannot be derived from any of the more substantial parts of speech.

Bw! *boh.*	Hai wchw! } *murder.*	Och! *alas.*
Dyt! *hold.*	Wchw! }	Ow! *oh.*
Ffi *or* ffei! *fie.*	Ho! *ho.*	Pw! } *pshaw.*
Ha! *hah.*	How! *alack.*	Twt! }
Hai! *hey.*	O! *oh.*	Wi! *hey.*

PREFIXES AND AFFIXES.

PREFIXES.

386. Prefixes, or inseparable prepositions, generally[1] add to or alter the meaning of the words to which they are prefixed. *Rhedeg*, to run; *cylch*-redeg, to run *round*.

A (cf. Gr. *α intensivum*) augmentative or emphatic. [Government:[2] *asp.* of *c* and *t*: *radical* and *middle* of the other letters.] Achas (cas), *odious*. Athrist (trist), *very pensive*. Abwyd (bwyd), *bait*. Agwedd (gwedd), *form*. Aball (pall), *failing*. Afach (bach), *grapple*.

---

[1] *Generally*, because some of the prefixes are sometimes redundant in point of *signification*,—serving merely to strengthen the *form* and afford a greater variety of *synonymous words*.

[2] In explaining the government of the prefixes, considerable assistance has been derived from Rev. D. S. Evans' "Llythyraeth."

It seems that *a*, like *a privativum* of the Greek, is negative in ***achlod***, from *a* and *clôd*, praise; and possibly in *afarn* (barn), bribery, and ***afrys*** (brys), slow.

A, a contraction of *an*. Anghyfiawn = annghyfiawn, *unjust*.

Ach, enhancive. [*Middle.*] Achludd (lludd), *obstruction*. Achres (rhês), *row*.

Ad, back, again = *re*. [*Mid.*] Adbrynu (prynu), *to redeem*. Adladd (lladd), *aftermath*.

Ad in several words implies negation or contrariety. Adfudd (budd), *loss*. Adffurf (ffurf), *formless*. Adfirain (mirain), *unseemly*. Adfarch (march), *gelding*. Adflas (blas), *ill taste*. Adwisg (gwisg), *disarray*.

"Pob gwledd, er y sydd heddyw,
Wedi ei wledd *adwledd* yw."

Every feast, notwithstanding what there is to-day,
After his feast is *starvation*.

Ad takes also the form *at*: as, *attalu* (talu); *ateb* (eb).

Add, enhancive. [*Mid.*] Addfain (main), *slender*. Addfwyn (mwyn), *kind*.

It seems to be a modification of *ad* in *addnaid* (naid), refuge.

In *addfed* (written also *aeddfed*), *add* is probably a corruption of *haedd*: haeddfed=*deserving* (or *ready*) *to be reaped; ripe*.

Af (probably a mutation of *am* = *an*), negative, privative, like Eng. *un* and *in*. [*Mid.*] Afreolaidd (rheolaidd), irregular. Aflwydd (llwydd), *misfortune*.

Ail, again = *re*. [*Mid.*] Ailfedyddio (bedyddio), *to rebaptize*. Ailbrynu (prynu), *to repurchase*.

Al, enhancive = *great*, *high*, or *very*. [*Radical*: sometimes *mid.*] Albrys (brys), *great haste*. Alcan (càn), *tin*. Alwen (gwen) = *very white*; the name of a river.

"It is often a prefix and affix in the names of places; as, *Alban*, *Penal*, *Alclwyd*: and rivers; as, *Alwen*, *Alun*, *Alaw*, *Alwy*."[1]

All (cf. Gr. αλλος, L. *alius*), another, other. [*Mid.* except *t*, which retains its *rad.* *M* also retains its *rad.* in *allman*, *allmor*, *allmyr*.] Allwladu (gwlad), *to banish*. Alleiriad (gair), *paraphrase*.

Am (cf. Gr. αμ-φι, L. *am-bo*, Ger. *um*), round, about, like *am*, *peri*, *circum*. [*Mid.*] Amdori (tori), *to amputate*. Amdo (to), *shroud*.

Am is a mutation of *an*. [*Nasal*, § 87.] Ammharch (parch), *disrespect*. Ammraint (braint), *dishonour*.

Am is a contraction of *aml*, many. [*Mid.*] Amliw (lliw), *parti-coloured*. Amryw (rhyw), *sundry*.

An (cf. ανευ, *in*, *un*), negative, privative, corresponding to *dis*, *mis*, *in*, *un*. [*Nasal* of *c*, *t*, *d*: *nasal* and *mid.* of *g*: *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*. Words beginning with *p* and *b* are preceded by *am*.] Anghall (call), *indiscreet*. Annoeth (doeth), *unwise*. Angraddol (graddol), *ungraduated*. Anwir

[1] Dr. Pughe's Dictionary, *sub voce* "*al*."

(gwir), *untruth.* Anllythyrenog (llythyrenog), *illiterate.* Anrhanadwy (rhanadwy), *indivisible.*

An in a few words has the force and is probably a mutation of *en.* Anllad (llawd), *wanton.* Andaw (taw), *to listen.* Anerch (arch), *to greet.* Anwir (gŵyr), *iniquitous, wicked.*

Ar, upon or over; high, great, very. [*Mid. Ll* in some words takes either *mid.* or *rad. M, p,* and *t* in a few instances retain their *rad.*] Argraff (craff), *inscription.* Arfri (bri), *high dignity.* Arloesi *or* arlloesi (lloesi), *to clear.*

Ar in a few words seems to correspond to "*præ.*" Arfaeth (maeth), *predestination.* Argoel (coel), *omen.* Arwydd (gŵydd), *sign.*

Arch (cf. Gr. ἀρχι), chief, principal. [*Mid.*] Archdeyrn (teyrn), *monarch.* Archddiagon (diagon), *archdeacon.* Archesgob (esgob), *archbishop.*

As (cf. *ex*), parting, separating, like *ex:* emphatic. [The prefixes *as, es, ys, cys, dis, dys, dos, gos,* and *hys,* govern the *rad.* of *m; mid.* of *ll* and *rh.* Their influence over the other mutable consonants has been explained under §§ 93–95.] Asgon (con), *humble.* Asgwrn (cwrn *or* corn), *bone.*

At is a mutation of *ad,* q.v. [*Middle,* except *t,* which retains its *rad. D* in many instances becomes *t* after *at.*] Atborion (pawr), *leavings.* Attwf (twf), *second growth.* Attal (dal), *to stop.*

At in a few words implies *to.* Attodiad (dodiad), *appendix.*

Cam, mis. [*Mid.*] Camddeall (deall), *to misunderstand.* Camgymmeryd (cymmeryd), *to mistake.*

Cy, cyd, cyf, cym, cyn, cys (cf. Gr. σὺν, L. *con*), conjunctive, mutual, like *co, col, com, con, cor.* [*Cyd* and *cyf* govern the *mid. Cy* occurs before *ng, ngh, f, l, th. Cym* is found before *m, mh,* and in a few words before the *mid.* of *t* and *g. Cyn,* before *n, nh.* Cys = *as,* q.v. See §§ 89–92.] Cydredeg (rhedeg), *to run together.* Cyfwerth (gwerth), *of equal value.* Cynghor (côr), *council.* Cymmrawd (brawd), *fellow.* Cymdaith (taith), *companion.* Cynnal (dâl), *to uphold.* Cystal (tâl), *of equal value.*

Cyd is generally changed into *cyt* before *t.* Cyttras (trâs), *consanguinity.*

Cyn is also cognate and synonymous with *cynt.* [*Mid.* and *nasal* of *d* and *t; rad.* or *mid.* of *rh; rad.* of *c* and *ll; mid.* of the remaining mutable consonants.] Cyndad (tâd), *first parent.* Cynnelw (delw), *pattern.* Cynrhan *or* cynran (rhan), *primary part.* Cyncad (cad), *front of battle.* Cynllun (llun), *model.* Cynfab (mab), *firstborn son.*

Cynt, first. [*Mid.*] Cyntair (gair), *omen.* Cyntanedig (ganedig), *firstborn.*

Cyt, a mutation of *cyd,* is employed before *t,* whether a radical or a hardening of *d.* Cyttir (tir), *joint land.* Cyttal (dal), *to dwell together.*

Dad (dy-ad), repetition, like *re;* the undoing of an act, like *un* and *dis.* [*Mid.*] Dadroddi (rhoddi), *to restore.* Dadwisgo (gwisgo), *to undress.*

Dad is sometimes changed into *dat,* q.v.

Dam (dy-am) = *am,* q.v. [*Mid.*] Damredeg (rhedeg), *to run about.* Damdrychu (trychu), *to amputate.*

Dar (dy-ar) = *ar*, q.v. Darbwyllo (pwyllo), *to persuade.* Darllen (lleain), *to read.*

Dar, like *ar*, corresponds sometimes to "*præ.*" Darparu (par = L. *paro*), *to prepare.* Darbod (bod), *to provide.*

Dar (di-ar), negative; diminutive. [See **Ar.**] Darfod (bod), *to cease to exist.* Dargwsg (cwsg), *slumber.* Darlosgi (llosgi), *to singe.*

Dat, a mutation of *dad*, is used before *t*, and sometimes before other letters. Dattroi (troi), *to untwist.* Datguddiad (cuddiad), *revelation.*

Ded (dy-ed) = *ed.* [*Mid.*] Dedfryd[1] (bryd), *verdict.* Dedwydd (gwydd), *happy.*

Di (cf. L. *de* in *decolor*, *deformis*, &c.), negative, privative, like *dis*, *in*, *un*, and the suffix *less.* [*Mid.*] Dilwgr (llwgr), *undefiled.* Diwerth (gwerth), *worthless.*

(*a*) The '*i*' is sometimes omitted before another vowel. Daeth (di-aeth), the reverse of *aeth;* i.e. *he came.* Dêl (di-êl), *he will come.* Daw (di-aw =au), *he will come.*

(*b*) *Di* has frequently the property of converting a substantive into an adjective; as, *dawn*, talent, *diddawn*, untalented.

Di is often intensive, for *dy.* Dioddef (goddef), *to suffer.* Dirwyn (rhwyn=rhwym), *to wind.*

Dir (dy-ar *or* er), extreme, great; extremely, greatly. [See **Ar.**] Dirboen (poen), *extreme pain.* Dirfawr (mawr), *very great.*

Dir is privative in dirmyg (myg), *contempt*, and dirwest (gwest), *abstinence.* It is probably compounded of *di* and *ar* or *er.*

Dis (di-ys; cf. L. *dis* in *dispar*, *dissimilis*, &c.), negative, undoing of an act, like *un*, *dis*, &c. [See **As.**] Disgloff (cloff), *not lame.* Disliw (lliw), *colourless.*

Dis is also intensive, for *dys.* Distaw (taw), *silent.* Disgwyl (gwyl), *to expect.*

Dos (dy-gos), intensive. [See **As.**] Dosbarthu (parthu), *to distribute.*

Dy, augmentative or intensive; iterative. [*Middle;* sometimes the *asp.* of *c.*] Dyweddi (gwedd), *spouse.* Dyfal (mal=μελ-ει), *diligent.* Dychryn (cryn), *terror.*

(*a*) *Dy* is changed into *ty* in tywyll (gwyll), *dark;* tywallt (gwallaw), *to pour;* and tywynu (gwŷn), *to shine.*

(*b*) The '*y*' is sometimes omitted before another vowel. Dethol (dy-ethol, Gr. εθελω), *to select.* Dwyn (dy-gwain), *to bring.* Deffraw (dy-effraw), *to wake.* So in the words *dyma*, *dyna*, *dacw*, *dobry*, *diso*, *ducho.*

Dym (dy-ym)=*ym*, q.v. [*Mid.*] Dymostwng (gostwng), *to humble one's self.* Dymgelu (celu), *to hide one's self.*

Dys (dy-ys), intensive. [See **As.**] Dyspeidio (peidio), *to cease.* Dysgogan (gogan), *to predict.*

---

[1] Some derive *dedfryd* from *dedd*, a law, and *bryd*, opinion: *dedfryd*= the opinion or sentence of the law.

E, intensive. [See **A.**] Echryn (cryn), *quaking.* Efryd (bryd), *study.* Edrych (drych)=δέρκω), *to look.*

Ech (cf. Gr. εκ), emphatic. [*Middle*, except ech*doe.*] Echlur (llur), *livid.* Echdywynu (tywynu), *to glitter.*

(*a*) In *echdoe* and *echnos*, it seems to signify *priority.*

Ed, iterative; intensive. [*Middle*, except ed*myg.*] Edliw (lliw), *to upbraid.* Edmyg (myg), *honour.*

Eil=*ail*, q.v. [*Mid.*] Eilfam (mam), *second mother.*

En, emphatic. [*Rad.* of *c*, *ll*, *rh*, and *t*; *mid.* of the other consonants.] Encil (cîl), *retreat.* Enllib (llib=*lib*-ellus), *slander.* Enfawr (mawr), *very large.* Enwir (gŵyr), *iniquitous.* "Cnawd difrod ar blant *enwir.*" —Myv. Arch.

Er,[1] impulsive, intensive; cause of. [See **Ar.**] Ermyg (myg), *honour.* Ergryd (cryd), *cause of trembling, dread.*

(*a*) In some few words it takes the form *erdd*; as, *erddrym* (grym); *erddrwng* (rhwng).

Es, parting, separating=*ex*; emphatic. [See **As.**] Esgymmuno=*ex-communico.* Estron = *extraneus.* Esgar (câr), *separation.* Esmwyth (mwyth), *smooth.* Esblydd (plydd), *soft.*

Ges=*gos*, q.v. Gestwng=gostwng, *to lower.*

Go, partial, slight; partly, somewhat. [*Middle:* in a few words the *asp.* of *c*, and *rad.* of *ll.*] Gobaith (paith), *hope.* Gogleisio (clais), *to tickle.* Gochel (cêl), *to beware.*

(*a*) It has no particular meaning in the following words: gofal (mal=μελει), *care;* gogonedd (conedd), *glory;* gollwng (llwng=*linquo*), *to let go;* golud (=πλοῦτος), *riches.*

(*b*) Coming before *a* it is sometimes changed into *gw:* as, *gwarchadw*, for *goarchadw; gwarchau*, for *goarchau; gwachul*, for *goachul.*—Dr. Davies. It takes also the forms *ge* and *gwo:* as, *gellwng=gollwng; gwobaith=gobaith.*

Gor, over, above, superior, extreme, very. [*Mid.* and *asp.* of *c*, *p*, *t*: *mid.* of *g*, *b*, *d*: *mid.* and sometimes *rad.* of *m*; *rad.* or *mid.* of *ll.*] Gorbwyso (pwyso), *to overweigh.* Gorphwyso (pwyso), *to rest.* Gorfawr (mawr), *very great.* Gorllawn and gorlawn (llawn), *very full.*

(*a*) It takes sometimes the forms *gwor* and *gwr.* See below.

Gos (go-ys)=*go*, q.v. [See **As.**] Gosbwyllo (pwyllo), *to decide partly.*

(*a*) It sometimes takes the forms *ges* and *gwos.*

Gw=*go*, q.v., note (*b*).

Gwor and **Gwr**=*gor*, q.v. Gworllwydd=gorllwydd, *prosperity.* Gwrfalch=gorfalch, *very proud.* Gwrandaw (andaw), *to listen.*

Gwos=*gos*, q.v. Gwosbarth=gosbarth, *distinct part.*

---

[1] "Juan, to go; *Er*-uan, to cause to go (Basque). Ouini, light; Erouini, to cause light or to enlighten (Egyptian)."—Johnes' "Philological Proofs," &c.

Gwrth, repulsive, contrary to, like *anti*, and *contra*. [*Mid.*] Gwrthddywedyd (dywedyd), *to contradict*. Gwrthfarn (barn), *contrary judgment*.

Hy (cf. Gr. εὖ), apt to, easy, worthy of, capable of, like the suffix '*-ble*.' [*Mid.*] Hygof (côf), *memorable*. Hyfaeth (maeth), *easily nourished*. Hybarch (parch), *venerable*.

(*a*) *Hy* placed before a noun converts it into an adjective,—as above.

Lled, half, partly. [*Mid.*] Lledgylch (cylch), *semicircle*. Lledfyw (byw), *half alive*.

Llet, a mutation of *lled*, is used before *t*. Llettyb (tyb), *opinion*. Llettrem (trem), *half glance*.

Pen, head, chief, supreme. [*Radical*, when used as a prefix or an adjective; when as a substantive, generally *mid.*] Penllywydd (llywydd), *chief leader*. Pentywysog (tywysog), *supreme prince*. Penfelyn (melyn)=*yellow as to the head; yellow-headed*.

Rhag, before, like *pre* and *fore*. [*Mid.*] Rhagosod (gosod), *to set before*. Rhagweled (gweled), *to foresee*.

Rhy, excessive, over. [*Mid.*] Rhybarch (parch), *extreme regard*.

(*a*) "Prefixed to the preterite of a verb, it forms the preterplup. tense; with the present tense, it implies the action done in a signal manner; and with the future it implies a time still further."—Dr. Pughe's Dict. s.v. "rhy."

Tra (cf. L. *trans*), beyond, over, like *trans* and *tra;* very, extreme. [*Asp.* of *c*, *p*, *t*: *rad.* of the other letters. Two or three words assume the *mid.*] Trachas (cas), *extreme hatred*. Tragwyddol (gŵydd), *being beyond cognizance; eternal*. Tramor (môr), *transmarine*.

Try (fr. *trwy*), through, thoroughly, like *per* and *dia*. [*Mid.*] Tryfesur (mesur), *diameter*. Tryfrith (brith), *spotted all through*.

Ym (see § 224 foot-note), reflexive; mutual. [*Mid.*] Ymguddio (cuddio), *to hide one's self*. Ymsenu (senu), *to chide mutually*.

Ys, a mutation of *es*, parting, separating, like *ex;* a lengthening of *s;* emphatic. [See As.] Ysgar = esgar, *separation*. Ystyn = estyn, *to extend*. Ysgrythyr = *scriptura*. Ysgol = *schola*. Ystafell = *stabulum*. Ysbwrial (bwrw), *refuse*. Ysgafn (cawn), *light*. Ysgarthion (carthion), *off-scourings*.

AFFIXES.

387. Noun Terminations.

Derivative nouns are formed from other simpler nouns, from adjectives, or from verbs, by the addition of a termination.

From NOUNS; as, *telynor*, from telyn; *cyfeillach*, from cyfaill.

From ADJECTIVES; as, *callineb*, from call; *gwylder*, from gŵyl.

From VERBS; as, *gwybodaeth*, from gwybod; *darllenydd*, from darllen.

388. **Abstract.**—The following are generally terminations of abstract nouns, denoting the *state*, *quality*, or *property* of the words to which they are suffixed. [English equivalents: *ance*, *ence*, *head*, *hood*, *ness*, *tude*, *ty*, &c.]

Deb: purdeb, *purity*; uniondeb, *uprightness*.

Der, ter: gwylder, *modesty*; digter, *anger*.

(*a*) *Dab* and *dwr* are sometimes used for *deb* and *der*; as, *dyndab*, *sychdwr*, *cryfdwr*.

Did, dyd, tid, tyd (cf. L. *tut* in, e.g., servi*tut*is): gwendid, *weakness*.

(*a*) *Tid* and *tyd* occur after the letter *c*; ieuenctid, angenoctyd.

Dod, dawd (cf. L. *tat* in, e.g., civi*tat*is): Duwdod, *Godhead*.

(*a*) *Dod* in simple historical prose; *dawd* in poetry and nervous prose. This remark applies equally to *od* and *awd*; *og* and *awg*.

Dra, tra: eondra, *boldness*; cyfleustra, *opportunity*.

Edd: mawredd, *greatness*; puredd, *purity*.

I: brynti, *filthiness*; caledi, *hardship*.

Iant, ant, aint: llwyddiant, *success*; maddeuant, *pardon*; digofaint, *anger*.

Id, yd (cf. L. *it* in, e.g., amici*tia*): rhyddid, *freedom*; mebyd, *infancy*.

Ineb: doethineb, *wisdom*; gwylltineb, *rage*.

Ionedd: gwirionedd, *truth*.

Ioni: daioni, *goodness*; haelioni, *liberality*.

Ni: tlysni, *beauty*; oerni, *coldness*.

Rwydd: caredigrwydd, *kindness*; perffeithrwydd, *perfection*.

Wch, wg: tawelwch, *quietness*; tywyllwg, *darkness*.

Ydd: llawenydd, *joy*; dywenydd, *pleasure*.

389. **Agent.**—The following denote *persons*, *agents*, *instruments*, &c. [English equivalents: *ar*, *er*, *yer*, *ess*, &c.]

Wr, iwr (rad. gwr, *man*), fem. **wraig**. Carwr, *lover*. Heliwr, *huntsman*. Golchwraig, *washer-woman*.

(*a*) *Iwr* is used, if the Infinitive ends in *io* or *ied*, or when verbs borrow *i* in their finite tenses. Gweithiwr (infin. vb. *gweithio*). Ystyriwr (infin. vb. *ystyried*). Heliwr (fin. vb. *heliaf*, &c.)

Ur, adur (*person* or *thing*), fem. **ures, uries, adures**. Ffoadur, *fugitive*. Gwniadur, *thimble*. Golchuries, *washer-woman*. Pechadures, *female sinner*.

(*a*) Some modern critics wish to confine *ur* and *adur* to persons, and *yr* and *adyr* to things and instruments.

Ydd (*person* or *thing*), fem. **yddes**. Darllenydd, *reader*. Berwedydd, *boiler*. Gwasanaethyddes, *maid-servant*.

Or, awr (*person*), fem. **ores**. Cantor *or* cantawr, *singer*. Cantores, *female-singer*.

Awdur, awdwr (*person*), fem. **odres**. Llywiadur *or* llywiawdwr, *governor*. Amherawdwr, *emperor*. Amherodres, *empress*. [Cf. L. *ator*, *atrix*; imperator, imperatrix.]

Awdr, odr (*person* or *thing*), fem. **odres**. Amherawdr, *emperor*. Pwysawdr *or* pwysodr, *rammer*.

Yr, adyr (*thing*, *instrument*), occur but rarely except in modern words. Canwyllyr, *chandelier*. Cysgiadyr, *opiate*.

On (*person* or *thing*). Gwyddon, *philosopher*. Byson, *ring*.

Es (cf. L. *ix*, Eng. *ess*), fem. termination added to animate objects. Dynes, *woman*. Llewes, *lioness*.

Ai (*person* or *thing*). Gwestai, *guest*. Awyrbwysai, *barometer*.

Ad, iad (*person*, or *verbal noun=ing*, see § 122). Ceidwad, *keeper*. Offeiriad, *priest*. Cadwad, *keeping*. Lladdiad, *killing*.

An (*person* or *thing*). Mudan, *dumb one*. Cryman, *sickle*.

In (*person* = yn; or *thing*). Dewin, *wizard*. Brenin, *king*. Cribin, *rake*. Melin, *mill*. Megin, *bellows*.

Arn (*instrument*) is probably a contraction of *harn* or *haiarn*, iron. Coesarn, *defence for the leg*. Canwyllarn, *candlestick*. Llwyarn, *spoon*.

El (*thing*, *instrument*). Pwyntel, *pencil*. Cantel, *rim*.

Ell (*instrument*). Ysgrafell, *scraper*. Bwyell, *axe*. Picell, *spear*.

Ol (*instrument*). Trosol, *lever*. Craffol, *writing-pen*.

390. The **Diminutive** terminations are the following: **an**, mas. or fem.; **yn**, mas., **en**, fem.; **ig, og**, and **ell**, fem. [With *ell*, cf. L. *ella* in *puella*; Eng. *el* in *satchel*.]

Llyfran, *m.*, *little book*. Bwyellan, *f.*, *small hatchet*. [See § 145.]
Bachgenyn, *little boy*. Pelen, *little ball*.
Ynysig, *islet*. Pwtog, *short little woman*. Iyrchell, *young roe*.

391. **Promiscuous.**—The following affixes are too promiscuous to be classified under distinct heads.

Ach (*reproach*; *union*, *collection*, &c.) Corach, *dwarf*. Cyfeillach, *society*. So also *blythach*, *buach*, *celach*, *bwbach*: *cyfrinach*, *cyfeddach*, *ysbleddach*, *afallach*, *nodach*, *sitrach*.

Ad and **hâd**, sometimes *äad* and *häad* (*abstract*, and sometimes *verbal noun*). Cyfiawnhâd, *justification*. Cwblhâd, *finishing*.

Awd or **od**, denotes (*a*) an *act*, *verbal noun=âd*, *iâd*. Darllenawd, *reading*. Gyrawd, *driving*. (*b*) A *thing done* (cf. L. *atum*); and when suffixed to an instrument, it denotes a blow given with that instrument. Ffonod, *a blow given with a stick*. So *gwialenod*, *cleddyfod*, *arfod*, *gorddod*.

(*a*) Compare the Portuguese suffix *ada*. "The Portuguese is characterised by possessing a distinct set of words to denote a thrust or cut with a sword or other weapon: an idea which, in most languages, cannot be expressed without circumlocution: thus, *cutiláda*, a cut with a sword; *estocáda*, a stab with a sword or dagger; *pancáda*, a blow with a stick or club; *pedráda*, a blow with a stone."—"Bible of Every Land," p. 272.

Aeg (*language*). Cymraeg, *Welsh language*. Ffrancaeg, *French language*.

Eg (*language; science* or *art*). Cernyweg, *Cornish language*. Rhesymeg, *logic*. Rheitheg, *rhetoric*.

Aeth, iaeth (*state* or *quality, abstract noun; science, art, system*, &c.) Cadwedigaeth, *salvation*. Llysieuaeth, *botany*. Ieithyddiaeth, *philology*.

Anaeth, aniaeth=*aeth, iaeth*. Gwasanaeth, *service*. Gwlybaniaeth, *wetness*. Gofaniaeth, *smith's craft*. Cryddaniaeth, *shoemaker's trade*.

Aid (=*ful* in *handful*). Basgedaid, *basketful*. Dyrnaid, *handful*. [§ 145.]

Ain=*en*. Celain, *carcase*. Putain, *harlot*. Bathain, *medal*.

As (*union, conjunction*, &c.) Teyrnas, *kingdom*. Priodas, *marriage*. Perthynas, *relation*. Galanas, *massacre*. Cymdeithas, *society*.

Au=*eu* (see § 102).

Cyn, mas., **cen**, fem. (=*yn, en*), occur only in a few words. Ffwlcyn, *silly fellow*. Ffolcen, *silly woman*.

Eb (cf. Gr. ἔπος), *expression* or *utterance*. Galareb, *elegy*. Deiseb, *petition*.

Ed (*what is done* or *suffered;* cf. L. *atum*). Adduned, *vow*. Tynged, *fate*. Colled, *loss*. Niwed, *harm*. Caethiwed, *captivity*.

En (fem. : *yn*, mas., q.v.) is added to pl. nouns to form the singular; and also to sing. nouns and adjectives. Mesen (pl. mes), *acorn*. Derwen (pl. derw), *an oak*. Hogen, *girl*. Llomen, *naked female*.

Es = *as*. Llynges, *fleet*. Llawes, *sleeve*. Buches, *milking fold*.

Eu (see § 102). Angeu, *death*. Geleu, *leech*. Ceneu, *cub*.

Fa (*place*, radical *ma*). Camfa, *stile*. Cigfa, *shamble*. Porfa, *pasture*.

(*a*) *Fa* is also used metaphorically. *Cynnulleidfa* signifies, literally, *a place of assembly;* but metaphorically, *those who assemble, congregation*. So also *ysfa, llosgfa, cnofa*, &c.

Fan (rad. man, *place*). Trigfan, *dwelling-place*.

Hâd=*âd*, q.v.

Iaeth=*aeth*, q.v.

Iar occurs only in a few obsolete words. Rhodiar, *ranger*. Toniar, *wave*. Baniar, *banner*. Ufeliar, *sulphur*.

Ing occurs only in a few words. Gwyning, *sap of timber*. Rhudding, *heart of timber*. Gweiling, *brass*.

L is sometimes suffixed to words without conveying any particular meaning. Awdl (= Gr. ᾠδή), *ode*. Banadl, *broom*. So also, *byddagl, chwibanogl, tymmestl, chwynogl*.

Lɜ (rad. lle, *place*). Gauafle, *winter quarters.*

Od = *awd*, q.v.

Og or **awg** (*one in possession of, having, full of*, &c.) Swyddog, *officer.* Marchog, *knight.* Ysgyfarnog, *hare.*

Oni, oneg, oniaeth (*science* or *art*). Barddoni, *bardic science.* Seroneg, *astronomy.* Barddoniaeth, *poetry.*

Red occurs but very seldom. Gweithred, *act.* Breithred, *conflict.*

Ryn, mas. : **ren**, fem. (= *yn, en*), occur only in a few words. Llipryn, *fribble.* Llipren, *fribble.*

W has no peculiar meaning. Tarw, *bull.* Twrw, *noise.* Agerw, *vapour.*

(*a*) Dr. Pughe says, "The *w* has a very peculiar quality, as a termination of primitive nouns, of giving a negative or contrary meaning to them. Thus *hel*, a gathering, with *w* affixed, implies what is past gathering, or a possession : *ul* implies what is humid, and with the affix *w* it implies what is divested of humidity, that is, cinders or ashes : and thus in all other instances." [1] This, however, should be received with caution, as the etymology and the explanations assigned to almost all the words, adduced to illustrate this signification, are dubious and unsatisfactory.

Wy occurs but seldom. Cynnorthwy, *help.* Brythwy, *tumult.* Macwy, *youth.* Camwy, *perversion.* Canwy, *splendour.*

Yf occurs but seldom. Peryf, *causer.* Gwyryf, *virgin ; bachelor.* Cleddyf, *sword.*

Yll (mas., perhaps connected with *ell*). Brithyll, *trout.* Curyll, *sparrow-hawk.* Cerfyll, *statue.* [Camyll = *κάμηλος* ; ffrewyll = *φραγέλλιον.*]

Yn (mas. : *en*, fem., q.v.) is added to pl. nouns to form the singular ; and also to singular nouns and adjectives. Plentyn (pl. plant), *child.* Aderyn (pl. adar), *bird.* Cardotyn, *beggar.* Coegyn, *conceited fellow.*

392. Adjective Terminations.

Adwy (*that may be, capable of* = *able, ible*). Credadwy, *credible.* Gwerthadwy, *saleable.*

Aid (*made of, covered with* = *en* or *n*). Euraid, *golden.* Arianaid, *silvered over.*

Aidd (cf. Gr. *εἶδος*: like, resembling = *ish, ly, like*). Plentynaidd, *childish.* When suffixed to adjectives, it signifies *partly, somewhat* = *ish, some.* Pruddaidd, *somewhat sorrowful.*

Ain (*full of, possessing* = *ous, ful, y*). Prydain, *beautiful.* Madiain, *bounteous.*

Awr or **or** (*full of*). Geiriawr, *full of words.*

Awg or **og** (cf L. *ox* or *oc* in *ferox*, ferocis : *abounding with, full of, possessing*). Brwynog, *abounding with rushes.* Bywiog, *vigorous.* Arfog, *armed.*

---

[1] Grammar, p. 21.

Awl or ol (cf. L. and Eng. *al: relating to; of the nature of; having*= *al*). Dynol, *human.* Gwrol, *manly.* Synwyrol, *rational.*

(*a*) *Awg* and *awl* are used mostly in poetry: *og* and *ol* in prose,—like the verbal terminations *aw*, *iaw*, and *o*, *io*. [See § 231 (*a*).]

(*b*) Some writers, in order to avoid an hiatus, prefer *awg* and *awl*, even in prose, when *o* occurs in the preceding syllable; and *og* and *ol*, in poetry, when the preceding syllable ends in *a*. Crynho*awl*, not crynhöol. Athro*faol*, not athrofäawl.

De (*full of, pervaded with*). Creudde, *mingled with gore.* Graeandde, *gravelly.* Haiarndde, *impregnated with iron.*

Ed (cf. Eng. *d*, *th*) and **fed** are the endings of the ordinal numbers = *th*. Chweched, *sixth.* Seithfed, *seventh.*

Edig (probably compounded of the verbal past passive ending *wyd* or *ed*, and the adjectival *ig*), strictly denotes the past passive participle; but the words, of which it forms a part, are generally used as adjectives =*ed*, *en*, *t*. Dysgedig, *learned.* Colledig, *lost.* Caredig, *beloved.*

Edd, fem. of *ydd*, q.v. Trydedd, *third.* Pedwaredd, *fourth.*

Fawr (rad. mawr, *great*). Clodfawr, *much praised.* Gwerthfawr, *precious.*

Fed=*ed.*

Gar (rad. câr: *fond of, addicted to, having,* or *endued with*). Gwingar, *fond of wine.* Rhyfelgar, *apt to war, warlike.*

Ig (cf. L. and Eng. *ic* in angel*ic*us, angel*ic: relating to; relating to a nation*, &c.= *ish; full of; having*). Gwledig, *rural.* Gwyddelig, *Irish.* Iuddewig, *Jewish.* Gwenwynig, *poisonous.* Bonheddig = *having a stem; noble.*

In (cf. Eng. *en: consisting* or *made of*). Priddin, *earthen.* Meinin, *stony.*

Llawn, lawn (*full of*). Digllawn, *wrathful.* Ffyddlawn, *faithful.*

(*a*) *Llawn* and *lawn* are frequently written *llon* and *lon;* as, *digllon*, *ffyddlon;* but as *llon* signifies *cheerful*, the forms *digllawn* and *ffyddlawn* are to be preferred.

Llyd, lyd, formerly fem. *lled*, *led* (cf. L. *lent* in violentus, &c.: *full of*, especially of *some disagreeable or unpleasant substance*). Gwenwynllyd, *poisonous.* Gwaedlyd, *bloody.* Tarthlyd, *foggy.* Creuled, fem. of creulyd, *bloody.*

(*a*) *Llyd* is generally used after *ng*, *m*, *n*, and *r;* *lyd* generally after *b*, *ch*, *d*, *dd*, *f*, *g*, *p*, *s*, *t*, *th*, and the *vowels*.[1]

Og = *awg*, q.v.

Ol = *awl*, q.v.

Us (cf. L. *os*, and Eng. *ous*, in vinosus, dangerous: *full of*). Ofnus, *fearful.* Rhyfygus, *presumptuous.*

Ydd, fem. *edd* (cf. Eng. *d*, *th*), the termination of the ordinals trydydd, *third*, and pedwerydd, *fourth.*

---

[1] D. S. Evans' "Llythyraeth," § 187.

393. Two adjectival terminations are sometimes joined together, the latter modifying the signification of the preceding. In many instances, however, the latter is redundant and unnecessary.

Og aidd; as, tai*ogaidd.*	*Us ol;* as, iach*usol.*
Lawn us; as, bodd*lonus.*	*Us aidd;* as, trefn*usaidd.*
Aidd ol; as, sancte*iddiol.*	*In ol;* as, gerw*inol.*
Edig ol; as, care*digol.*	*Fawr us;* as, clod*forus.*

Terminations of Infinitive Verbs have been arranged and exemplified under §§ 229–239; and of **Finite Verbs** under §§ 290, 297.

PART III.

SYNTAX.

THE ARTICLE.

394. The Welsh article has the forms *y*, *yr*, and *'r*. The difference between *y* and *yr* is somewhat similar to that which exists between *a* and *an* in English; that is, *y* precedes a consonant; as, *y dyn*, the man; *yr*, a vowel and the aspirate *h*; as, *yr awen*, the muse; *yr hâf*, the summer.

395. When a word ending in a vowel precedes the article, the contracted form *'r* is frequently used, whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant; as,

Yn awr yw'*r* amser, *now is the time.*
Y gauaf a'*r* hâf, *the winter and the summer.*
Y gwir a'*r* gau, *the true and the false.*

(*a*) This contraction is made for the sake of euphony and neatness, the phrase "*y gwir a'r gau*" being more euphonious and compact than "*y gwir ac y gau.*" But some writers, unwilling to indulge in too many contractions, use this form of the article only when it is preceded by the words *a*, *i*, *o*, *na*, *no*, *mo*, *gyda*, and *yng nghyda:* as, *y tad a'r fam*, the father and the mother; *lladd â'r cleddyf*, to kill with the sword; *myned i'r dref*, to go to the town; *dyfod o'r wlad*, to come from the country; *gyda'r gwr*, with the man.

396. The letter *w*, standing at the beginning of a word, is a consonant when it is pronounced *conjointly* with the vowel following. Hence this *w* is preceded by the form *y;* as,

Y *w*aedd, *the cry.* Y *w*ich, *the squeak.*
Y *w*eledigaeth, *the vision.* Y *w*ynfydedig forwyn, *the blessed virgin.*

(*a*) Such words as *gwlaw*, *gwlân*, *gwlêdd*, *gwlîth*, *gwlŷdd*, *gwrâch*, *gwraig*, *gwrŷf*, *gwrŷg*, are monosyllabic words: hence such of them as are feminine are, as above, preceded by the form *y;* as,

Y wlêdd, *the feast.* Y wrâch, *the hag.* Y wraig, *the woman.*

(*b*) It makes no difference with regard to the properties of *w* whether the word begins in its radical state with *gw;* as, *y wobr* (rad. *gwobr*), the reward; or simply with *w;* as, *yr 'wythnos*, the week.

397. But when *w* is sounded *by itself* (*i.e.* has the same sound as the Eng. *oo* in *good, boon*), it is a vowel, and is therefore preceded by the form *yr ;* as,

Yr wden, *the withe.* Yr wrthddadl, *the objection.*
Yr ŵyn, *the lambs.* Yr ŵyl, *the feast.*

398. In some monosyllabic words, the letter *i*, when followed by a vowel, is in S. W. considered as a consonant or a vowel; and hence is preceded either by *y* or *yr*.

Y iaith *or* yr iaith, *the language.* Y iawn *or* yr iawn, *the atonement.*
Y iwrch *or* yr iwrch, *the roebuck.* Y iar *or* yr iar, *the hen.*

"Yr wyf yn tybied fod *y iaith* yn rhwydd a deallgar."—Theo. Evans.

399. The article governs a *feminine noun singular* in the *middle* sound : it governs a *feminine noun plural*, and a *masculine noun, sing.* and *plural*, in the *radical*.

Fem. sing. Y *f*renhines (rad. *b*renhines), *the queen.*
Fem. pl. Y *b*renhinesau, *the queens.*
Mas. Y *b*renin, *the king.* Y *b*renhinoedd, *the kings.*

400. The article affects an adjective or an adverb in the same way as it affects a noun : *i.e.* the adjective or the adverb is put in the *radical* or *middle* according to the gender and number of the noun following.

Y *d*eilwng rian (rad. *t*eilwng), *the worthy lady.*
Y *dr*a theilwng rian (rad. *tr*a), *the very worthy lady.*
Y *t*eilwng rianod, *the worthy ladies.*
Y *g*oruchaf Dduw, *the supreme God.*

401. *Exceptions.*—a) The cardinal numbers, even when followed by singular substantives of the feminine gender, retain the *radical* after the article; as, y *p*um torth, *the five loaves ;* dammeg y *d*eng morwyn, *the parable of the ten virgins.* ☞ But *dau*, two, *mas.*, and *dwy*, two, *fem.*, are *softened* after the article; as, y *dd*au lyfr, *the two books ;* y *dd*wy gareg, *the two stones.*

b) **Ll** and **Rh.**—A fem. *noun* sing. having *Ll* or *Rh* for its initial, retains the *radical* sound after the article; as, y *ll*ong, *the ship ;* y *rh*wyf, *the oar.*

"Y *ll*inos wâr ar frig y llwyn."—D. S. Evans.

But a fem. *adjective* sing. is softened, as above : y *l*idiog eneth (rad. *ll*idiog), *the angry girl ;* y *r*ywiog eneth (rad. *rh*ywiog), *the kind girl.*

c) The names of *rivers*, although feminine, retain the *radical* sound after the article. Y *T*afwys (not *D*afwys), *the Thames.*

d) *Bala* (the name of a town), although of the feminine gender, retains its *radical* sound after the article. Y *B*ala.

402. *Observation.*—It has been observed, under "Etymology," that the omission of the letter *g* is the sign of its middle sound. Now, if it happens that the initial letter of a word, after the omission of *g*, is a vowel, that word must be preceded by the form *yr ;* as, yr *e*neth (rad. *g*eneth), *the girl ;* yr *a*fr (rad. *g*afr), *the goat ;* yr *w*rthddadl (rad. *g*wrthddadl), *the objection.*

But if the initial letter, after the omission of *g*, is a consonant, the word should be preceded by the form *y ;* as, y *l*ân (rad. *g*lân), *the bank ;* y *l*andeg ferch (rad. *g*landeg), *the comely girl ;* y *w*efus (rad. *g*wefus), *the lip.*

403. The article (as in English) must always precede the noun, or the noun and its concomitants, which it defines ; as,

Y dyn, *the man.* *Yr* hen ddyn, *the old man.*
Y tra thrugarog Dduw, *the very merciful God.*

404. When two or more *definite* nouns come together, one depending on, or governed by the other, the *last* noun only will admit of the article, or its equivalent ; as,

Mâb y brenin=*son of the king ; the son of the king.*
Gwâs mâb y brenin, *the servant of the son of the king.*
Tŷ fy nhâd=*house of my father ; the house of my father.*
Cronglwyd tŷ fy nhâd, *the roof of the house of my father.*

(*a*) Compare Irish. "Tighearna an domhain"=*Lord of the world ; the Lord of the world.*—Bourke's Irish Grammar, § 217.

(*b*) A '*definite noun*' is a noun preceded by an article, either really or virtually.

405. When the former of two nouns is definite, and the latter indefinite, no article is used ; as,

Mâb brenin=*son of a king ; the son of a king.*
Brenin gogoniant, *the king of glory.*

(*a*) When a demonstrative pronoun belongs to the former of two substantives, the article is sometimes placed before the first, the demonstrative pron. coming after the second substantive ; as, *y brenin gogoniant hwn*=the king of glory this ; this king of glory. This construction, however, is somewhat offensive to the Welshman's ear, and should, if possible, be avoided.

406. When neither of two nouns is definite, the construction is the same as the above, or the preposition *i* (to) will precede the latter ; as,

Mâb brenin, *a son of a king.* Mâb i frenin, *a son to a king.*

407. When the former of two nouns is indefinite, and the latter definite, the article and the preposition *i* will precede the latter ; as,

Mâb i'r brenin, *a son to the king.*

408. When two nouns come together, the latter in the genitive case, and equivalent to an adjective, the former will admit of an article before it. And in this case the genitive is treated like an adjective ; that is, it is put in the *rad.* or *mid.* sound, according to the gender and number of the noun on which it depends.

(m.) { Y pen teulu, *the householder.*
Y llyfr gweddi, *the prayer-book.*

(f.) { Y ddinas wagedd (rad. gwagedd), *the city of vanity.*
Yr awr weddi (rad. gweddi), *the hour of prayer.*
Pelydron claer y seren ddydd, *the bright rays of the day star.*

409. When two nouns are connected by the preposition *o*, the article may precede both ; as,

Y rhan fwyaf o'*r* arian, *the greatest part of the money.*

410. When two or more nouns come together, referring to the same person or thing, the article should be placed before the first only ; as,

Y pwnc neu fatter, *the subject or matter.*
Yr ysgrifenydd a thrysorydd, *the secretary and treasurer.*

411. But when two or more nouns come together, and refer to different persons or things, the article, or its equivalent, should be repeated before each ; as,

Y brenin neu'*r* frenhines=*the* king or *the* queen.
Yr ysgrifenydd a'*r* trysorydd=*the* secretary and *the* treasurer.
Y gwr, *y* wraig, a'*r* plant=*the* husband, *the* wife, and *the* children.
Yn *dy* ffydd, *dy* ofn, a'*th* gariad=in *thy* faith, *thy* fear, and *thy* love.

412. Similarly, when adjectives precede a definite noun, it is far more elegant and expressive to repeat the article, or its equivalent, before each of them ; as,

Y caredig, *yr* hynaws, a'*r* ffyddlawn gyfaill=*the* kind, *the* good-natured, and *the* faithful friend.

Fy ngharedig, *fy* hynaws, a'*m* ffyddlawn gyfaill=*my* kind, *my* good-natured, and *my* faithful friend.

413. An adjective, preceded by an article, is in Welsh, as in English, equivalent to a noun ; as,

Y cyflawn a ragora ar ei gymmydog, *the just excels his neighbour.*

414. The article, standing immediately before *hwn, neb, sawl*, &c., serves to form relative pronouns ; as, *yr hwn* = the this ; who : *y neb* = the one, whoever.

415. When a noun is accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, an article, or its equivalent, will always be placed before the noun,—the demonstrative occupying the last place ; as,

Y dyn hwn=*the man this,*
Y dyn yma=*the man here,* } *this man.*
Fy mab hwn=*my son this ; this my son.*

(*a*) In Greek the article is sometimes employed in the same manner; as,

Ἀπανέστη ἐκ τῶν χωρέων τούτων=dychwelodd o'r *cyrau hyn.*
ἡ γενέα αὕτη=*y genhedlaeth hon.* Ὁ ἀνὴρ οὗτος=*y gwr hwn.*

416. Article before proper names.—Names of *persons* have no article before them, except (*a*) When they require to be particularly referred to, in which case they are usually accompanied by an adjective; as, *Yr Haman ddichellgar*, the crafty Haman; *y Moses hwn*, this Moses. (*b*) When they are made plural; as, *Y Gwyniaid o Lan-Brân*, the Gwynnes of Glan-Brân.

(*a*) The name "Jesus" is, however, usually written *yr Iesu*=ὁ Ἰησοῦς, the Jesus.

417. Names of *rivers* have, as in English, the article generally placed before them; as,

Yr Iorddonen, *the Jordan.* Y Tafwys, *the Thames.* Y Dyfrdwy, *the Dee.* [See § 401, c.]

418. Some names of *places* (countries, towns, &c.) are preceded by the article; as,

Yr Amerig, *America.*
Yr Affrig, *Africa.*
Yr India, *India.*
Yr Aipht, *Egypt.*
Yr Eidal, *Italy.*
Yr Ysbaen, *Spain.*
Yr Almaen, *Germany.*
Yr Alban, *Scotland.*
Yr Iwerddon, *Ireland.*
Yr Amwythig, *Shrewsbury.*
Y Bala, *Bala.*
Y Wyddgrug, *Mold.*
Yr Abermaw, *Barmouth.*
Y Rhyl, *Rhyl.*

(*a*) So in Irish. An Spain=*the Spain.* An Frainc=*the France.* An Albain=*the Scotland.*—Bourke's Gr., § 214.

NOUNS.

419. Apposition.—When two nouns come together, relating to the same person or thing, the latter is said to be in apposition to the former.

420. The noun that is set in apposition retains the *radical* sound of its initial letter; as,

Paul, *g*was Iesu Grist, *Paul, the servant of Jesus Christ.*
Môn, *m*am Cymru, *Mon, the mother of Wales.*

421. The rule is the same when the sentence contains a series of appositions; *i.e.* the apposition word retains the *radical.*

Mae genym gyfeillion ffyddlawn, *b*rodyr caredig, *m*erched da, a llyfrau defnyddiol.

(*a*) If an article, a possessive pronoun, or an adjective intervenes, the apposition word will, of course, be governed by it. Buddug *y f*renhines. Arthur *fy nh*ad. Môn, *hen f*am Cymru.

422. But when a common noun, immediately following a proper noun, has acquired the character of an epithet or title, its initial letter should be changed into the *middle* sound, whether the noun to which it is added be *masculine* or *feminine;* as,

Dafydd *f*renin, *King David.* Idris *G*awr, *Idris the giant.*
Ioan *F*edyddiwr, *John the Baptist.* Mair *F*orwyn, *Mary the virgin.*

423. *Observation.*—In the phrase, "Paul, gwâs Iesu Grist," *gwâs* is distinct from the word *Paul*, and is separated from it by a comma; in the phrase "Dafydd frenin," the two words coalesce into one notion, and cannot be separated by the intervention of a comma. In other words, *gwâs* is placed *appositively; frenin* is placed *attributively.*

424. This *epithet*, or common noun (e.g. *Dafydd frenin*), is virtually definite; and hence, if it be made to precede the proper noun, an article must go before it: as,

Y brenin Dafydd=*the king David.* Y prydydd Rhys.
Y forwyn Fair. Y frenhines Fuddug. Y cawr Idris.

(*a*) If the proper noun be feminine, it is sometimes, but not necessarily, *softened.* Y forwyn *F*air (rad. *M*air).

425. The common noun may also be preceded by an article, even when it follows the proper noun; as, *Dafydd y brenin.*

Thus 'King David' may be expressed in three different ways. 'Dafydd frenin;' 'y brenin Dafydd;' 'Dafydd y brenin.'

426. **'Yn apposition.'**—The particle *yn* is employed chiefly to set the predicate of a clause in apposition to the subject, or the latter of two accusatives in apposition to the former; as,

Dafydd sydd *yn frenin, David is king.*
A Duw a alwodd *y goleuni yn ddydd*, and God called *the light day.*

*** The use of *yn* will be more copiously discussed under "Apposition Verbs" and "Participles."

427. *Mal, fal, fel*, and *megys* are strictly *modal*, corresponding to the English '*as.*'

Efe, *megys* brenin, a barodd i'w holl ddeiliaid barchu y ddelw, *he, as a king, ordered all his subjects to respect the image.*

428. Appositions, equivalent to such as are introduced by "being," are expressed in Welsh by *a cause clause;* or

a relative; or *absolutely,* thus: *a* or *ac, pers. pronoun, "yn apposition," apposition-word.*

"Arthur, being a good poet."

Arthur, *gan ei fod yn brydydd da.* (*Cause.*)
Arthur, *yr hwn sydd yn brydydd da.* (*Relative.*)
Arthur, *ac yntau yn brydydd da.* (*Absolute.*)

Pa ham y mae efe ac ereill, *a hwythau yn Iuddewon,* yn credu?
Pwy, *ac efe yn ddiniwed,* a gollwyd? Job iv. 7.

429. Two nouns are set in apposition by means of the prep. *o* (of), when the one describes the *character, occupation,* &c., of the other, and when one of them may be converted into an adjective, or, in fact, frequently omitted.

Gwr o brophwyd=gwr prophwydol=prophwyd, *a prophet.*
Llancesau o wyryfon=llancesau gwyryfol=gwyryfon, *virgins.*
Benyw o olchyddes, *or* golchyddes o fenyw=golchyddes, *a washer-woman.*

(*a*) A similar idiom occurs in English. "Such expressions as *a rogue of a lawyer, a rascal of an attorney,* &c., are equivalent to *a roguish lawyer, a rascally attorney.*"[1]

So also in Greek. Συὸς μέγα χρῆμα. Τοῦ χειμῶνος χρῆμα ἀφόρητον.

430. Appositions are sometimes made by placing *gan* before the apposition-word, if a *noun; genyf,* &c., if a *pronoun;* as,

Y milwr *gan*[2] Arthur. Y sant *gan* Bedr.
Y lleidr *genyt* ti. Y diogyn *ganddo* ef.
Dôs i ffwrdd, y lleidr *genyt ti, go away, you thief.*

431. Nominative case.—The most natural position of the nominative case, whether *emphatic* or *unemphatic,* is after the verb, which, owing to its being the 'principal word,' stands at the beginning of the sentence; as,

A dygodd *y ddaiar* egin, *and the earth brought forth grass.*
A bendithiodd *Duw* hwynt, *and God blessed them.*

432. But when the nominative is *antithetic,* and frequently even in simple narration, it is made to precede the verb, in accordance with its position in the English language.

Arthur sydd yn myned yno, **Arthur** (=*it is Arthur that*) *is going there.*
A'r *Arglwydd Dduw* a luniasai y dyn, *and the Lord God had formed the man.*

---

[1] Arnold's English Grammar.

[2] Probably *gan* here signifies '*with.*' If so, *Y milwr gan Arthur* will be translated by 'the soldier with Arthur;' that is, *dwelling with* or *in the person of Arthur.*

433. When the nominative occupies the first place in the clause, or immediately follows its verb, it retains the *radical* form; but when it follows the verb, and is separated from it by an adverb, or a phrase, its initial letter is changed into the *middle* sound; as,

{ *D*ynion dewr a ddaethant yno,
Daeth *d*ynion dewr yno,
Daeth yno *dd*ynion dewr, } *brave men came there.*

*** The syntax of the nominative case will be enlarged upon under the "Verbs."

434. **Genitive case.** — When two nouns of different relation come together, one of them is said to be in the *genitive* case.

435. In Welsh, the noun in the genitive relation is placed *after* the one on which it depends.

Mab *b*renin=*the son of a king; a king's son.*
Mab brenin Lloegr=*the son of the King of England; the King of England's son.*

(*a*) But in compounds the one that is in the genitive relation is put *first*, and governs the other in the *middle* sound. *Brenhindy*=ty brenin, a king's house. [See § 77.]

436. The genitive relation is expressed, (*a*) by *mere apposition, i.e.* by simply putting the genitive in *apposition* to the other noun without any sign indicative of a case; (*b*) by *the preposition* "*o*," of; (*c*) by *other prepositions*, such as *ar*, on, *at*, to, *am*, for, *dros*, for, *rhag*, because of, for.

437. The genitive expressed by *mere apposition* retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as,

Coron *b*renin, *a king's crown.* Olwynion cerbyd, *the wheels of a carriage.* Heol *B*abilon, *the street of Babylon.*

(*a*) But if any other word intervene between the two nouns, the genitive will, of course, be governed by it.

Ty *y f*renhines, *the queen's house.* Ty *fy nh*âd, *my father's house.*

(*b*) After *teyrnas*, kingdom, *teml*, temple, *ty*, house, *eglwys*, church, &c., the word *Duw*, God, generally takes the *middle* sound. (Eglwys *Dd*uw; ty *Dd*uw.) So also do the words *Dewi* and *Dafydd.* (Esgob Ty *Dd*ewi.) But if an adjective belongs to the former substantive, and follows it, the genitive will retain its radical. Eglwys sanctaidd *D*uw, *God's holy Church.*

438. The genitive is expressed by **mere apposition** when *possession, property*, or *relation* is denoted; such as *the relation of the possessor to the thing possessed; the relation of an agent to an action or effect; the mutual relation of persons; the relation of a whole to its several parts.*

Ty brenin, *a king's house.* Llyfr Dafydd, *David's book.* Mantell Angharad, *Angharad's mantle.* Gwaith Duw, *God's work.* Nyth aderyn, *a bird's nest.* Teml Solomon, *Solomon's temple.* Iaith plentyn, *a child's language.* Lleferydd dyn, *a man's voice.* Cŵymp Adda, *Adam's fall.* Disgrifiad y bobl, *the people's description.* Tystiolaeth cariad, *love's testimony.* Ystyr y gair, *the meaning of the word.* Rhagoroldeb iaith y Cymry, *the excellency of the language of the Welsh.* Buchedd ein Prynwr, *the life of our Redeemer.* Eisieu bwyd, *want of food.* Llyfr y Dadguddiad, *the book of Revelation.* Tâd y bachgen, *the boy's father.* Mam fy nhâd, *my father's mother.* Gwâs ei frawd, *his brother's servant.* Wyr brenhines Lloegr, *the queen of England's grandson.* Olwynion cerbyd, *the wheels of a carriage.* Hŵyl llong, *the sail of a ship.* To ty, *the roof of a house.* Sail ty mâb brenin Lloegr, *the foundation of the house of the son of the king of England.*

439. When the genitive expresses the *age* or *price* of the object described, the **mere apposition** is used: and in this case the genitive is treated like an adjective; that is, if the preceding noun be *feminine singular*, the genitive takes the *middle;* but if it be *fem. plural*, or *masculine singular* or *plural*, the genitive retains the *radical* sound.

Gwr canmlwydd=*a man of a hundred years.*
Gwraig ganmlwydd=*a woman of a hundred years.*
Llyfr ceiniog, *a penny book.* Canwyll geiniog, *a penny candle.*

440. The **mere apposition** genitive occurs after nouns pl. when it describes the *place* from which persons or objects come, or to which they belong.[1]

Gwyr Athen, *the men of Athens.* Merched Cymru, *the women of Wales.* Gwragedd Llundain. Esgidiau Amwythig. Cyllyll Caerangon.

(*a*) If the former noun be singular, the genitive is preceded by *o*, unless the genitive is an epithet, in which case it generally takes the form of *mere apposition.* Gwr o Athen. Merch o Gymru. Lewis Môn. Gruffydd Maelor.

441. When the genitive expresses the *material* or *substance*, of which a thing is made, it may be either **mere apposition**, or preceded by the preposition **o**: if mere apposition, the genitive is treated like an adjective. [§ 439.]

Ty coed, *or* ty o goed, *a house of* (=*made of*) *wood.*
Gwialen haiarn, *or* gwialen o haiarn, *a rod of iron.*
Ceffyl pren, *a wooden horse.* Sarff bres, *a brazen serpent.*

(*a*) There is the same difference between (*e.g.*) "gwialen haiarn" and "gwialen o haiarn," as there is in English between "an iron rod" and "a rod of iron."

(*b*) The prep. *o* governs the *middle:* ty o goed. After the word *mâth*, sort, the word *ar* is occasionally met with instead of *o:* "mâth *ar* liw glâs ydyw," *it is a sort of a blue colour.*

---

[1] See Dr. Davies' Grammar, p. 156.

442. When the genitive describes the *quality* or *property* of an object, it is preceded by **o**.

Dyn o ddysg, *a man of* (=*with*, *having*) *learning.*
Gwr o ddoniau mawr, *a man of great talents.*
Bachgen o daldra mawr. Adeilad o uchder rhyfeddol.

(*a*) This genitive is often equivalent to an adjective. Dyn o ddysg= dyn dysgedig=*a learned man.*

443. When the genitive is equivalent to an apposition, it is preceded by **o**. (See § 429.) [Apposition or explanatory genitive.]

Gwr o brophwyd=*a man of a prophet; a prophet.*
Gwr o saer, *a carpenter.* Cyfaill o Sais, *an English friend.*
Y pwnc o gyfiawnhâd, *the subject of justification.*
Y gelfyddyd o areithyddiaeth, *the art of elocution.*

444. When the preceding genitive, or substantive word, is contained in the genitive, the genitive is preceded by **o**. [Partitive genitive.] Such words as the following are contained in the genitive, or are *parts* of the *whole* which the genitive expresses: substantive words expressive of number and quantity; numerals; adjectives of the superlative degree; and such pronouns and substantive words as *pwy*, who, *neb*, anybody, *hyn*, this, *llawer*, much, *amryw*, several, *rhai*, some, *ychydig*, few.

Lliaws o ddynion, *a multitude of men.* Llu o filwyr, *a company of soldiers.* Rhan o'r tir, *a part of the land.* Darn o'r pren, *a piece of the timber.* Swm o arian, *a sum of money.* Ugain o wyr, *twenty men.* [See below (*b*).] Y goreu o'r cwbl, *the best of the whole.* Y flwyddyn olaf o'i deyrnasiad, *the last year of his reign.* Pwy o honoch? *which of you?* Hyn o arian, *this much of money.* Llawer o ddwfr, *much water.*

(*a*) Nouns and pronouns, denoting number and quantity (except such words as *pwy* and *neb*), and the numeral adjectives usually employed in speaking of number indefinitely, frequently change position with the genitive; and in this case their initial consonants should assume the *middle* sound; as,

Rhyfeddodau *lawer=wonders many; many wonders.*
Dwfr ddigon, *plenty of water.* Gwyr fagad, *a multitude of men.*

"Gwrandaw tonau hoff perseiniol
Adar yn y goedwig *fyrdd.*"

(*b*) Numerals, except *mil*, *myrdd*, *myrddiwn*, are used with or without *o:* if with, the following substantive is plural; if without, it is singular. Ugain *gwr;* ugain o *wyr.* (See § 490.)

(*c*) Some common adjectives are sometimes followed by *o*. Mae Arthur yn *gampus o* ysgolhaig (=yn ysgolhaig campus) = *Arthur is excellent of a scholar; Arthur is an excellent scholar.* Mae'n *gywilyddus o* beth fod Arthur yn y carchar, *it is a shameful thing that Arthur is in prison.*

445. The **objective genitive** (*i.e.* the genitive which

"would be the *object*, if the substantive and its attribute were expanded into a sentence"[1]) is sometimes expressed by *mere apposition;* but oftener by the aid of the preposition *o;* and after certain classes of words by other prepositions; such as *ar*, on, *at*, to, *am*, for, *dros*, for, *rhag*, because of.

Mere apposition.—Ofn Duw, *the fear of God.* Cariad Crist, *the love of (=to) Christ.* Rom. viii. 35. Gwybodaeth Crist Iesu fy Arglwydd, *the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord.* Phil. iii. 8. Arlun fy mrawd, *the picture of my brother.* Gofal y byd hwn, *the care of this world.* S. Matt. xiii. 22. [This form of the objective genitive is ambiguous, and hence not very often met with. "Thus *ofn y gelyn*, the fear of the enemy, may mean *the fear felt by the enemy himself*, or *the fear felt by another towards the enemy.*"[2]]

The prep. o.—Mwynhâd o gysur, *enjoyment of comfort.* Tystiolaeth o'n cariad, *a testimony of our love.* Llongddrylliad o'u ffydd, *a shipwreck of their faith.* Disgrifiad o'r bobl, *a description of the people.* Prawf o alar, *a proof of sorrow.* Arwydd o ddigllonedd, *a sign of anger.*

Other prepositions.—Serch ar ddifyrwch, *love of pleasure.* Cariad ar fy enaid, *love to my soul.* Is. xxxviii. 17. Cariad at Dduw, *love to God.* Gofal am eich bywyd, *care for your life.* S. Luke xii. 22. Gofal dros Eglwys Dduw, *care for the Church of God.* 1 Tim. iii. 5. Hiraeth am heddwch, *a longing for peace.* Ofn rhag y cleddyf, *terror by reason of the sword.* Ezek. xxi. 12.

446. The *infinitive* mood of verbs often stands as a noun in the genitive.

Amser *hau*, *the time of sowing.* Amser *medi*, *the time of reaping.* Ym mhryd *machludo* haul, *at the time of the going down of the sun.*

447. Accusative case.—The place which the accusative case most naturally occupies, both when *emphatic* and *unemphatic*, is after the verb and the nominative.

Teifl y bachgen *gareg*, *the boy will throw a stone.*
A'r dyfroedd a foddant *y lloches*, *and the waters shall overflow the hiding-place.*

448. But when it is *antithetical* (="it is . . that") it occupies the first place; as,

Dwfr a geisiodd efe, *llaeth* a roddes hithau = *water he asked for, milk she gave.* Judges v. 25.

449. When the accusative begins the sentence, or when it immediately follows an infinitive verb, it retains the *radical* sound of its initial consonant; as,

*G*wialen dy nerth a enfyn yr Arglwydd, *the rod of thy power shall the Lord send.*
Y mae efe yn moliannu *D*uw, *he praises God.*

---

[1] Arnold's Gr. Grammar (§ 824, *b*). [2] T. J. Hughes on Syntax.

450. But when the accusative comes after a finite verb, or after an infinitive separated from it by an adverb or a phrase, its initial consonant should be changed into the *middle;* as,

Y bachgen a deifl *g*areg, *the boy will throw a stone.*
Tynu ymaith *b*echodau, *to take away sins.*

451. Prepositions govern different sounds (see §§ 364–373). Hence, an accusative after a preposition must have its initial consonant placed in that sound which the preceding particle governs. For example:

Mewn and *rhwng* govern the *rad.* 'Mewn *t*y,' *in a house.* 'Rhwng *m*ynyddoedd,' *between mountains.*

Tros and *heb* govern the *middle.* 'Tros *f*ôr,' *over sea.* 'Heb *Dd*uw, heb *dd*im,' *without God, without anything.*

452. The accusative of an active, or the nominative of a passive verb is sometimes put absolutely at the beginning of the clause, a corresponding personal pronoun following the verb. This is done when particular attention is called.

A hefyd *fy ngelynion hyny,* dygwch *hwynt* yma, *and also* those my enemies, *bring* them *hither.*

Y duwiau, ni wnaethant y nefoedd, difethir *hwynt,* the gods, *that have not made the heavens,* they *shall be destroyed.*

*** The syntax of the accusative in connection with the verb will be again referred to under the "Verbs."

453. An accusative is also put absolutely after adjectives; as, "benyw deg ei phryd" = *a female fair (as to) her countenance.* [See Syntax of "Adjectives."]

454. Nouns denoting *duration* and *point of time, distance of place,* and *measure,* are put absolutely, as in English. If such nouns stand foremost in the sentence, they usually retain their *radical* form; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonant should be changed into the *middle;* as,

*D*eng wythnos yr arosais yno, } *I stayed there ten weeks.*
Arosais yno *dd*eng wythnos, }

*Ll*iw nos y daethym; daethym *ll*iw nos, *I came by night.*

*P*ymtheg cufydd yr ymgryfhäodd y dyfroedd, } *'fifteen cubits upward*
Ymgryfhäodd y dyfroedd *b*ymtheg cufydd, } *did the waters prevail.'*

455. **Vocative case.**—The vocative case is preceded by an interjection, expressed or understood; and, as all interjections govern the *middle* sound, the initial of the vocative will accordingly be *softened.*

O *D*ad trugarog! O *d*rugarog Dad! } *O merciful Father.*
*D*ad trugarog! *D*rugarog Dad! }

456. When the interjection is omitted, the vocative sometimes retains its *radical* form; as,

*D*uw Dad, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym, *O God the Father, of heaven, have mercy upon us.*—Prayer Book.

Occasionally the article, with or without an interjection, precedes the vocative; as,

O *y* Galatiaid ynfyd! *O the foolish Galatians!* Gal. iii. 1.
Yr ogoned, lâu, fendigaid Drindod, *the glorious, holy, blessed Trinity.*

457. Proper names.—Welsh critics differ with regard to the initial mutations of proper names. Some treat them like common nouns; *i.e.*, place them in *rad.*, *mid.*, *nas.*, or *asp.*, according to the governing power of the word immediately preceding in the clause. Others treat Welsh, and naturalized proper names, like common nouns; but "show regard to strangers"[1] by allowing them to remain, under all circumstances, in their original form. And others are inclined to leave many Welsh, and all foreign proper names untouched. The following rules exhibit the prevailing usage of the present day.

458. Welsh proper names of *places* (countries, towns, &c.) are governed in the same way as common nouns. Foreign proper names of places, which by continually occurring have become naturalized, follow the same rule.

Aethym o *L*undain i *F*angor. Ym *Mh*ennant.
Yng *Ngh*anaan. Yn y *G*anaan bur.

459. Foreign proper names of *places* usually retain their *radical* sound.

Aeth o *D*amascus, ac arosodd yn *C*æsarea.

460. Welsh proper names of *rivers* are governed like common nouns. [But, although fem., they retain the *rad.* after the article.]

Yr hen *D*afwys. Yn *N*yfrdwy. Y *T*eifi.

461. Proper names of *persons*, whether Welsh or foreign, *usually* retain their *radical* forms, except when preceded by an adjective, in which case they generally follow the rules of common nouns.

Dywedodd wrth *D*afydd. Aeth at *Ll*ewelyn.
Yr hen *L*ewelyn. Yr addawedig *F*essiah.

---

[1] Rev. Walter Davies.

(*a*) Names of persons beginning with *c*, *p*, or *t*, generally take the *asp.* sound after *a*, *na*, *gyda*, and *efo*. A *Ch*ain. A *Ph*edr. Silvanus a *Th*imotheus.

ADJECTIVES.

462. The agreement of adjectives with their nouns in gender and number is partial.

463. Gender.—Those which agree in gender by *vowel inflections* are certain primitive adjectives, their compounds, and some few derivatives, of which a list is given in §§ 159, 160.

Ceffyl gwyn, *white horse.* Caseg wen, *white mare.*
Tarw penwyn, *white-headed bull.* Buwch benwen, *white-headed cow.*

464. But if the adjective is in a state of comparison, or has a plural termination, or is put in construction with a plural noun, the radical form (*i.e.*, the masculine) undergoes no change, with respect to vowel inflections, to indicate gender.

Careg *drymach* (not *dromach*), *a heavier stone.*
Ceryg *trymion* (not *tromion*), *heavy stones.*
Merched *pengrych* (not *pengrech*), *curly-headed girls.*

465. When adjectives begin with one of the *mutable consonants*, and follow their nouns, their gender is also indicated by their initial consonant; as,

Ceffyl cryf, *strong horse.* Caseg *g*ref, *strong mare.*
Gwr *d*uwiol, *godly man.* Gwraig *dd*uwiol, *godly woman.*

(*a*) If the noun is *plural*, the initial consonant of the adjective undergoes no change; as,

Cesyg *gwynion.* Gwragedd *duwiol.*

466. When adjectives have no vowel inflections, and do not begin with any of the mutable consonants, they are said to be of *common gender*; as,

Gwr *hardd, a handsome man.* Gwraig *hardd, a handsome woman.*

*** See "Government of Adjectives," § 473, &c.

467. Number. — Those which agree in number are mostly primitive adjectives: sometimes compounds and derivatives.

Gwr *doeth, a wise man.* Gwyr *doethion.*
Gwr *annoeth, a foolish man.* Gwyr *annoethion.*

(*a*) Dr. Pughe, treating of the primitive adjectives, says: "The primitive adjectives may or may not agree in number with their substantives, optionally, as the euphony may require." And again of the derivatives: "The adjectives of this class seldom take the plural form, except in poetical language, when they are made to agree with plural nouns with happy effect."

A very large number of adjectives are *never* made plural; and only a few necessarily require a plural form.

Several of the adjectives which form their plural by changing a vowel or vowels, are made to agree with their pl. nouns—such as: *ieuanc*, pl. *ieuainc*, young; *bychan*, pl. *bychain*, small; *llydan*, pl. *llydain*, wide; *cyfan*, pl. *cyfain*, whole; *marw*, pl. *meirw*, dead; *cadarn*, pl. *cedyrn*, strong; *arall*, pl. *ereill*, other; *llall*, pl. *lleill*, the other. "Dwylaw *bychain*," small hands. "Dynion *meirw*," dead men.

Tlawd, poor, and *gwan*, weak, are generally made plural,—making *tlodion*, *gweiniaid*.

Most of the adjectives denoting *colours* require a plural form: *du*, pl. *duon*, black; *gwŷn*, pl. *gwŷnion*, white; *côch*, pl. *còchion*, red; *glâs*, pl. *gleision*, blue; *gwyrdd*, pl. *gwyrddion*, green; *melyn*, pl. *melynion*, yellow; *brith*, pl. *brithion*, speckled. "Ac o'i ol ef feirch *cochion*, *brithion*, *a gwynion*," *and behind him red horses, speckled, and white.* Zech. i. 8.

(*b*) Adjectives should be in the plural form when they stand as plural nouns; as,

"Y nefolion," *the heavenly ones.* "Y caredigion," *the beloved ones.*

468. Position.—The place which a common adjective in the positive state occupies in a sentence, conventionally arranged, is usually *after* the noun which it modifies; as,

Gwr *cyfiawn*, *a just man.* Merch *landeg*, *a comely woman.*

(*a*) The position of the adjective is the same in Irish, Gaelic, and Armoric.

Fear mor (=gwr mawr), *a big man.*—Bourke's Ir. Gr., § 70.
Lann geur (=llafn garw), *a sharp blade.*—Armstrong's Gaelic Gr., p. 59.
Den honest (=dyn gonest), *an honest man.*—Arch. Brit., p. 193.

(*b*) *Prif*, chief, always precedes: *unig*, only, precedes; *unig*, lonely, follows: *càm*, false, precedes; *càm*, crooked, follows: *hên*, old, and *gau*, false, most generally, and *gwir*, true, very often, precede.—"Exercise Book," Ch. 3. [In Irish, *fior* (=*gwir*), true, *priomh* (=*prif*), first, and *sean* (=*hen*), old, precede their nouns.]

469. But in poetical language and rhetorical prose, the adjective is very often made to *precede* the noun; as,

"*Hyfryd* liwiau'r bryniau a'r bronydd,
Gerddi a gweunydd gyll eu gwawr;
Prudd ddistawrwydd sy'n gyffredin,
Heb ddim lleisiau ar y llawr."—D. Davies.

(*a*) When adjectives are qualified by *go*, somewhat, rather, and *iawn*, very, they *always* follow their nouns; and *generally* when qualified by other adverbs. Dyn *go ddysgedig*, *a rather learned man.* Dyn *dysgedig iawn*, *a very learned man.*

(*b*) An adjective, joined to a noun to form a compound, generally takes the precedence. *Mawrfryd*=mawr bryd. [§ 77.]

470. Indefinite pronouns (except *arall* and *oll*), and numerals (except *cyntaf*), always precede their substantives. [§§ 214, 490, 501.]

471. "Adjectives in a state of comparison are so adapted that they may be optionally made to precede or to follow the nouns." [1]

Cyn hardded gwr, gwr cyn hardded, *as handsome a man.*
Harddach gwr, gwr harddach, *a handsomer man.*
Yr harddaf wr, y gwr harddaf, *the handsomest man.*

472. 'Several adjectives may come together, either preceding or following the noun to which they belong;' or one may precede and another follow it, according to the writer's taste.

Fy *anwyl gariadus* frodyr,
Fy mrodyr *anwyl* a *chariadus*,
Fy *anwyl* frodyr *cariadus*,
} *my dearly beloved brethren.*

473. Government. — *Positive* and *superlative* adjectives govern the *middle* [2] sound of the noun following, whether it be sing. or pl., masculine or feminine; *equal* and *comparative* adjectives govern the *radical.*

Pos. Duwiol *b*endefig, *pious nobleman.* Glân *r*ianod, *fair ladies.*
Sup. Y mwynaf *g*yfaill, *the kindest friend.* Ein grasusaf *f*renhines, *our most gracious queen.*
Equal. Cyn fwyned *g*wr, *as kind a man.* Cyn fwyned *g*wraig, *as kind a woman.*
Comp. Mwynach *g*wr, *a kinder man.* Mwynach *g*wraig, *a kinder woman.*

(*a*) If the superlative is indefinite, *i.e.*, not preceded by the article or its equivalent, it governs the *radical* sound. "A thecaf *m*erch dan haul ydoedd." "Goreu *d*iod, diod dŵr." Sometimes the superlative is followed by the radical, even when it is preceded by the article. "Y cyntaf *p*eth a welais."

(*b*) Should an article precede the comparative, the following noun may be *softened.* "Ond darfu'*r* harddach *f*erched llon."—D. S. Evans.

(*c*) The equal and comparative adjectives govern the *radical*, whether they have the inflected forms (*e.g.*, mwyn*ed*, mwyn*ach*), or are formed by putting *mor* (for equal), and *mwy* or *llai* (for comp.), before the positive state of the adjective. Cyn hardded *b*achgen, *mor hardd b*achgen, *as beautiful a boy.* Gwrolach *m*ilwr, *mwy gwrol m*ilwr, *a braver soldier.*

---

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 59.

[2] The superlatives *mwyaf* and *lleiaf* are adverbs as well as adjectives: when adverbs, they govern the radical sound. (Arthur yw y *mwyaf d*ysgedig. Y ffordd *fwyaf c*yffredin o'u cadw yn awr ydyw drwy y dawns.—Brutus.)

474. When an adjective follows a *feminine* noun *singular*, it is changed into the *middle* sound; but when it follows a *feminine plural* noun, or a *masculine* noun, *sing.* or *plural*, it retains its *radical* form.

Fem. sing.	Merch *dd*oeth, *wise girl.*	Gwraig *d*aclus, *tidy woman.*
Fem. pl.	Merched *d*oethion, *wise girls.*	Gwragedd *t*aclus, *tidy women.*
Mas.	Milwr *g*wrol, *brave soldier.*	Milwyr *g*wrol, *brave soldiers.*

(*a*) An adverb, preceding the adjective, is affected in the same way (the adjective being, of course, governed by the adverb.) Gwraig *b*ur daclus. Gwragedd *p*ur daclus. Milwr *or* milwyr *p*ur wrol.

But *go*, somewhat, *mòr*, so, *cŷn*, so, and generally *rhy*, too, retain the *radical* sound, even after a *fem. noun sing.* Gwraig *go* daclus. Gwraig *mòr* daclus. Gwraig *rhy* annhaclus. Gwraig *cŷn* annhaclused.

(*b*) In N. W. the word *bach*, little, often retains its *radical* form, even after a *fem. noun sing.* Hanes Jane *bach*, *history of little Jane.* Yr eneth *bach*, *the little girl.*

474 (1). When nouns of different genders are coupled together, and qualified by the same adjective, the adjective is made to agree with the noun next to it. [Cf. Irish. Bourke's Gr., § 235.]

Dyn a dynes *dda*, *a good man and woman.*

475. When a series of attributive adjectives are placed after a noun, the second and following adjectives assume the same sound as the first (the sound of the first depending, of course, on the substantive immediately preceding).

Dyn *d*a, *g*ostyngedig, *c*all, *a good*, *humble*, *prudent man.*
Gwragedd *d*a, *g*ostyngedig, *c*all, *good*, *humble*, *prudent women.*
Gwraig *dd*a, ostyngedig, *g*all, *a good*, *humble*, *prudent woman.*

476. But when the adjective is set in apposition to a noun, and separated from it by a comma, the adjective will retain its *radical* form, even when the noun is *feminine singular.* [The rule is the same as when one noun is set in apposition to another. § 420.]

Trwy ffydd i *iachawdwriaeth*, parod i'w datguddio. 1 S. Peter i. 5.
Cymmerodd *agwedd* ddynol, cyffelyb i'r eiddom ni.

In the phrase "iachawdwriaeth barod," *ready salvation*, "parod" is used *attributively*, and hence assumes the *middle* sound, "iachawdwriaeth" being *fem. sing.*; but in "iachawdwriaeth, parod i'w datguddio," *salvation*, *ready to be revealed*, "parod" is placed *appositively*, and therefore retains its *radical* form.

477. When an adjective follows a proper noun of either gender, as an epithet or agnomen, its initial consonant should be put in the *middle* sound; as,

Hywel *dd*a, *Hywel the good.*
Elen *b*rydferth, *Ellen the beautiful.*
Alecsander *f*awr, *Alexander the great.*
Lasarus *d*lawd, *Lazarus the poor.*

(*a*) The *position* of adjectives of this character is the same in English. (Alexander *the great.* Cato *the wise.*)

478. Accusative after adjectives.—Sometimes an adjective is followed by a noun in the accusative, expressing the thing to which the notion of the adjective belongs. In other words, the adjective is made to agree with the object spoken of, rather than with the noun which describes the quality of that object ; as,

Gwr *hardd yr olwg=a man beautiful the appearance.*
Gwraig *lân ei chalon.* Dyn *trwm ei glyw.*
Seithwyr *da eu gair.* A'r adar *llaes eu hesgyll.*
Gwyn ei fyd y gŵr=*happy* (*as to*) *his state the man.* Ps. i. 1.

In (*e.g.*) "gwr hardd yr olwg," the adj. *hardd* agrees with the word *gwr*, rather than with *golwg*, which describes its quality. Here the Welsh and English are at variance ; for in the latter the adjective is made to agree with the describing noun, and not with the noun described. (A man of a *beautiful appearance.*)

(*a*) With the above compare the Greek idiom.

Πόδας ὠκὺς Αχιλλεύς=*Achilles swift* (*as to*) *feet.*
Καλὸς τὴν ψυχήν=*beautiful* (*as to*) *the soul.*

479. Occasionally the preposition '*o*' intervenes between the adjective and the accusative ; as,

Gwr teg o bryd=*a man fair of countenance.*

480. By modern writers it is frequently made to agree with the quality of the object described, in accordance with the English idiom ; as,

Gwr o olwg hyfryd, *a man of pleasant look.*

481. Comparison.—The *equal* degree is expressed (*a*) simply by the form ending with '*ed:*' (*b*) by the same form, preceded by other particles : (*c*) by the positive state, preceded by *mŏr.* This comparison denotes sometimes *admiration* or *vague comparison;* and sometimes *equality.*

482. It will be expressed in English by the adverbs *how, so,* or *as,* with an adjective in the positive state.

"*How.*" *Wyned* yw'r eira ! } *how white the snow is!*
Cŷn wyned yw'r eira ! }
Mŏr wŷn yw'r eira ! }

"*So.*" *Cued* ganddo ei bleser, fel na ddaw, *he is so fond of his pleasure, that he will not come.*
Mae *cŷn ddoethed* fel y gŵyr y cwbl, } *he is so wise, that he knows*
Mae *mòr ddoeth* fel y gŵyr y cwbl, } *the whole.*

"*As.*" Dôs ymaith *gynted* ag y gelli, }
Dôs ymaith *cŷn gynted* ag y gelli, } *go away as soon as you can.*
Dôs ymaith *mòr fuan* ag y gelli, }

483. In general, however, the form which corresponds to *how*, marking admiration, is that which ends in *ed*, either alone or preceded by an interjection:

Duw anwyl, *fyred* einioes! *O fyred* yw'r einioes!
Och! berycled yw'r daith.

(*a*) "When the adjective is put absolutely, its initial assumes the middle form; as, Duw cadw Rys *d*eced ei rôdd."—J. W. ab Ithel.

484. *Cŷn* (*càn* or *gàn*), with the "*ed* form," and *mòr* with the positive state, are used when we express the notion implied in *so* and *as*, and in *how* when it heads a subjoined clause.

Rhedodd *cŷn gyflymed*, fel na allodd hi ei ddal, *he ran so quickly that she failed to catch him.*
Ŷ mae Arthur *cŷn hardded* a Dafydd, *Arthur is as handsome as David.*
A welwch chwi *mòr wŷn* yw'r eira? *do you see how white the snow is?*

(*a*) Observe the corresponding particles:

Cŷn *or* mòr . . . . fel=*so* . . . . . *that.*
Cŷn *or* mòr . . . . a *or* ag=*as* . . *as.*

485. When two objects are spoken of, the comparative is used in English; as, "He is the *elder* of the two." In this case the Welsh employ the superlative; as, "Efe yw'r *hynaf* o'r ddau" = he is the *eldest* of the two. "Efe yw'r *goreu* o'r ddau" = he is the *best* of the two.

486. In English "proportionate equality is marked by *the* . . *the* with comparatives. 'The *more* you study *the more* you will learn.'"[1] In Welsh this is expressed by two superlatives, the particle *po*[2] (colloquially *pwy*) preceding the former; as,

Po mwyaf yr edrychaf arno, sicraf wyf o hono=*by so much the most* I look at him, *the most certain* I am of him; the more I look at him, the more certain I am of him.

(*a*) The words *yn y byd* (in the world), *oll* or *i gyd* (all), *byth* (ever), are often placed after the latter superlative, to strengthen the assertion.

---

[1] Arnold's English Grammar.
[2] With *po* and *pwy* compare Eng. *by*, and Latin *quo*.

"Po mwyaf y carwn Grist, mwyaf *oll* y myfyriwn ar Ei gariad," *the more we love Christ, the more we meditate upon His love.*

(*b*) The two clauses are frequently inverted—especially when there is an ellipsis of one or of the two verbs; as, "Goreu po cyntaf"=*best by so much the soonest; the sooner the better.* "Goreu po cyntaf y daw," *the sooner the better he comes.*

(*c*) *Po* governs the *radical* sound. Po *m*wyaf, *the more;* po cyntaf, *the sooner;* po *g*wresocaf, *the warmer.*

487. Comparison is also expressed by *go,* partly; *lled,* partly; *digon,* sufficiently; *iawn,* very; *wrth,* to; *tra,* very; *pur,* very; *rhy,* too; *gyda,* with.

Gwr *tra* dysgedig, *a very learned man.*
Gyda'r goreu o honynt, (*equal*) *with the best of them.*
Nid yw efe yn ddim *wrth* ei frawd, *he is nothing to* (=*compared with*) *his brother.*

NUMERALS.

488. Cardinal Numbers.—Cardinals have no distinction of gender, except *dau,* two, *tri,* three, and *pedwar,* four, which have *dwy, tair,* and *pedair* for the feminine.

Dau ddyn, *two men.*	*Dwy* ddynes, *two women.*
Pum dyn, *five men.*	*Pum* dynes, *five women.*

(*a*) When two numerals are put together, either as a compound or separately, the former must be *mas.*, even when the substantive which is qualified is of the fem. gender. *Tri*gain mlynedd, or *tri* ugain mlynedd, 60 *years.* *Dau* gan mlynedd, 200 *years.*

489. Cardinals have no plural number, except when, as in English, they are used substantively. *Degau,* tens; *ugeiniau,* scores; *cannoedd,* hundreds.

Y mae yn ei lyfrgell *ugeiniau* o lyfrau, *there are in his library scores of books.*

490. Cardinals precede their nouns, which may follow either immediately or with the intervention of the preposition '*o*,' of. If the nouns follow immediately, the rule is that they should be in the *singular* number; if with the intervention of '*o*,' they must be in the *plural;* as,

Tri dyn=three man; three individual men.
Tri o ddynion=three of men, from the general class.

(*a*) Sometimes, however, the nouns are put in the plural, even when they immediately follow the numerals. Thus,

Seithwyr da eu gair. Y deuddeg *apostolion.*
Y tri *wyr* hyn. Pedwar *gwyr* rhyddion.

(*aa*) In Armoric "adjectives of number have always a substantive singular; daou den (=dau ddyn), *two men;* dec bloaz (=deg mlwydd), *ten years.*"—Arch. Brit., p. 193.

(*b*) *Mil*, a thousand, *myrdd*, a myriad, and *myrddiwn*, a myriad, and their compounds, are always followed by the preposition; as, Mil o wyr, *a thousand men*. Dwy fil o wyr, *two thousand men*.

491. Government. — Great irregularity of usage prevails with regard to the sounds which comes after the cardinal numerals, the same numeral being often made to govern two and sometimes even three different sounds. Thus we have the *rad.* in "saith *b*asgedaid," *seven baskets full*, and the *mid.* in "saith *f*ugail," *seven shepherds*. We venture, however, to lay down the following as *the rules;* and in writing Welsh the student may safely adhere to them.

492. The following govern the *radical* sound.

Un (mas.), *tair*, *pedwar* and *pedair;*
Pum, *chwêch*, *naw*, and *deunaw;*
Deg, with compounds *deuddeg*, *pymtheg;*
Ugain, with compounds *deugain*, *trigain;*
Can, with compounds *deugan*, *trichan*, &c.

Un *c*orff, *one body*. Pedwar *g*wr, *four men*. Pum *g*wraig, *five women*.

493. *Un* feminine (except before *ll* and *rh*), *dau* and *dwy*, govern the *middle*. *Ll* and *rh* retain their *rad.* after *un* fem.

Un *dd*ynes, *one woman*. Dau *dd*yn, *two men*. Dwy *dd*ynes, *two women*.

Ll and *rh*. Un *ll*aw, *one hand*. Un *rh*aw, *one spade*.

494. *Tri* and *chwe* govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class (*c*, *p*, *t*); and the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd (*g*, *b*, *d;* *ll*, *m*, *rh*).

Tri *ch*ar, *three friends*. Tri *ph*en, *three heads*. Chwe *th*arw, *six bulls*.
Tri *g*wr, *three men* Tri *b*ys, *three fingers*. Chwe *ll*ew, *six lions*.

495. *Saith* and *wyth* govern the *middle* of *c*, *p*, *t;* and the *radical* of the other consonants.

Saith *g*orn, *seven horns*. Saith *b*en, *seven heads*. Wyth *d*orth, *eight loaves*.

Saith *g*was, *seven servants*. Saith *b*ys, *seven fingers*. Wyth *ll*ong, *eight ships*.

496. *Deng*, and its comp. *deuddeng* and *pymtheng*, which are mostly used before words beginning radically with *g*, *d*, *m*, *n*, or a *vowel*, govern the *nasal* of *d;* *middle* of *g;* and *radical* of *m*.

Deng *n*afad, *ten sheep*. Deng *w*r, *ten men*. Deng *m*is, *ten months*.

(*a*) It is very probable that *deng* formerly governed *g* in the nasal, and that such phrases as *deng wr*, *deng air*, &c., were written *deng ngwr*, *deng ngair*, &c.

497. *Pum*, *saith*, *wyth*, *naw*, *deg*, *deng*, *ugain*, *can*, with their compounds, govern the words *blynedd* and *blwydd* (a year) in the *nasal;* and the word *diwrnod* (a day) in the *nasal*, or *radical.*

-Pum *m*lynedd, *five years.* Wyth *m*lynedd, *eight years.* Can *m*lwydd, *hundred years.* Saith *n*iwrnod or *d*iwrnod, *seven days.*

Deng is followed by the *nasal* of *diwrnod*, never by the *rad.* Deng *n*iwrnod.

498. Numerals with nouns sing. equal to pl.—A singular noun preceded by a numeral is equivalent to a plural. Hence,

a) It is followed by a plural verb.

Y ddau ddyn a *atebasant*, *the two men answered.*

b) The numerals (except *dau* and *dwy*) retain the radical sound after the article, even when their substantives are feminine.

Y *t*air dynes, *the three women.* Y *d*eng morwyn, *the ten virgins.*

c) The demonstratives *hwn*, *hwnw*, &c., are put in the plural.

Y tair gwaith *hyn*, *these three times.*
Y ddau filwr *hyny*, *those two soldiers.*

Exceptions.—(*a*) When a numeral is followed by a substantive and an adjective, the adjective will be singular. Dau ddyn *du*, *two black men.* Tri gwr *ieuanc*, *three young men.* (*b*) The adj. pronoun *arall* is sometimes put in the sing., and sometimes in the plural. Y ddau ddyn *arall*, *the other two men.* Y saith niwrnod *ereill*, *the other seven days.*

499. Difference between **pump** and **pum**; **chwech** and **chwe**; **deg** and **deng**; **cant** and **can.**

a) The contracted forms *pum*, *chwe* (N. W.), and *can*, are *adjectives*, and followed immediately by substantives: *pump*, *chwech*, and *cant* are *substantives.*

Pum plentyn, *five children.* Chwe dafad, *six sheep.* Can gwr, *a hundred men.*

Pump o blant=*five of children; five children.* Chwech o ddefaid, *six sheep.* Pa sawl dafad sydd genych? *Cant. How many sheep have you? A hundred.*

(*a*) The substantive *oed*, age, is preceded by the full form *pump*, *chwech*, and *cant.* Mae'r plentyn yn *bump oed*, *the child is five years old.*

(*b*) In S. W. *chwech* is both a *substantive* and an *adjective.* Chwech o blant, *or* chwech plentyn, *six children.*

b) *Deng* is an *adjective* (§ 496): *deg* is an *adjective* and a *substantive.*

Deng niwrnod, *ten days.* Deg ceiniog *or* deg o geiniogau, *ten pence.*
Pa sawl llyfr sydd genych? *Deg. How many books have you? Ten.*

500. Ordinal Numbers.—Ordinals have no distinction of gender, except *deufed*, second, *trydydd*, third, and *pedwerydd*, fourth, which have *dwyfed*, *trydedd*, and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

Y *trydydd* dydd, *the 3rd day.*
Y *pedwerydd* boreu, *the 4th morning.*
Y *pummed* mab, *the 5th son.*

Y *drydedd* awr, *the 3rd hour.*
Y *bedwaredd* bennod, *the 4th chapter.*
Y *bummed* ferch, *the 5th daughter.*

501. Ordinals *precede* their nouns; and the nouns, if *masculine*, retain the *radical*; if *feminine*, they are changed into the *middle* sound; as,

Y pummed *d*ydd. Y bummed *b*ennod (*rad. p*ennod).

(*a*) But *cyntaf*, first, is usually put *after* its noun; as, Y dyn *cyntaf.*

(*b*) *Ail*, second, is followed by the *middle* sound, even when the noun is *masculine*; as, Yr ail *dd*yn; yr ail *b*wnc.

It appears that formerly the government of *ail* was regular; that is, it governed a *mas.* noun in the *radical*, and a *fem.* in the *middle*; as,

m. { Yr ail *d*ydd, *the second day.* Gen. i. 8.
Yr ail *c*yfammod, *the second covenant.*—E. Samuel.
Yr ail *p*eth, *the second thing.*—M. Kyffin.

f. { Yr ail *f*lwyddyn, *the second year.* Num. ix. 1.
Yr ail *f*arwolaeth, *the second death.* Rev. ii. 11.

502. When the *names of the objects numbered* are joined to periphrastic numerals, they take their place immediately after the first-mentioned numeral; thus,

23 *men:* tri dyn ar hugain=three man over twenty.
The 30th day: y degfed dydd ar hugain=the tenth day over twenty.

PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

503. The different forms and modifications of personal pronouns depend, to a certain extent, upon the position assigned to them in construction. They are to be considered in their connection with *verbs*, *nouns*, and *prepositions.*

504. Connected with Verbs.—"The personal pronouns may be used or omitted with the verbs, either preceding or following them, in all their inflections. They are more particularly used when an emphasis is required on the pronoun." [1]

Simple. Gwelais y dyn. *Emphatic.* Gwelais *i* y dyn.

(*a*) When the verb is preceded by a particle (*mi*, *fe*, *nid*, &c.), the personal pronoun, even when unemphatic, is very often added in *speaking*, and pronounced as an enclitic. "Ni allaf-fi fyned," *I cannot go.*

505. *First person singular.*—When the nominative case comes after the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the tense of the verb ends in *f*, *r*, or *d*: it takes the form *i* or *innau*, if the tense ends in *n*, *m*, or *s*.

f, r, d.	Caraf fi.	Cerir fi.	Cerid finnau.
n, m, s.	Adwaen i.	Bûm i.	Cerais innau.

506. The pronoun takes the form *fi* or *finnau*, when it stands objectively *after* the verb and the nominative, the nom. being expressed or understood.

Carodd Arthur *fi* or *finnau*, *Arthur loved me* (or *me also*).
Carodd (efe) *fi* or *finnau*, *he loved me* (or *me also*).

507. ☞ But when a *possessive pronoun* precedes the verb, the nominative and the accusative take the form *i* or *innau*.

Fe'*m* cerir *i* or *innau*, *I* (or *I also*) *am loved.*
Pan y'*m* cerir *i* or *innau*, *when I* (or *I also*) *am loved.*
Dywed *fy* mod *i* yno, *he says that I was there.*
Arthur a'*m* carodd *i* or *innau*, *Arthur loved me* (or *me also*).
Y mae Iorwerth yn *fy* nysgu *i*, *Iorwerth teaches me.*

508. The pl. *ni* and *ninnau* will take any position. *Ni* or *ninnau* a ddaethom. Daethom *ni* or *ninnau*. Carasant hwy *ni* or *ninnau*.

509. *Second person singular.*—When the nominative comes after the verb, the second person takes *di* or *dithau*, if the verb is in the *imperative* mood, or ends in *ch*, *d*, *r*, or in a *vowel*; as,

Canlyn di. Fel y cery*ch di* ef.
Cara*sid di.* Ceri*r di.* Ceri *di.*

It takes *ti* or *tithau*, if the verb ends in *t*: as ceraist *ti*; carasi*t tithau*.

---

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar, p. 65.

510. The pronoun takes the form *di* or *dithau*, when it stands objectively *after* the verb and the nominative, the nom. being expressed or understood.

Canmolodd Arthur *di*, *Arthur praised thee.*
Gwelodd (efe) *dithau*, *he saw thee also.*

511. ☞ When a *possessive pronoun* precedes the verb, the nominative and the accusative take *di* or *dithau*, independently of the preceding letter.

Fe'th gerir *di* or *dithau*. Pan *y'th* gerir *di*.
Dywed *dy* fod *di* yno. Arthur *a'th* garodd *di*.
Y mae Iorwerth yn dy ddysgu *di*.

512. The pl. *chwi* and *chwithau* will take any position like *ni* and *ninnau*.

513. *Third person singular.*—When the nominative or the accusative precedes the verb, the forms usually employed are *efe* and *efo*, for the masculine. *Efe* or *efo* a ddaeth. *Efe* or *efo* a garaf fi.

514. When the nominative follows the verb, *efe*, *ef*, *e*, or *o*, are employed.

Dywedodd *efe*, *ef*, *e*, or *o*, *he said.*

(*a*) *Efe* is the safest form, and should always be used when the nom. and accus. are pronouns, third pers. sing. mas. Dysgodd *efe* ef, *he taught him.*

515. When the pronoun stands objectively *after* the verb, and also as subject *after* a passive verb, the forms *ef*, *e*, or *o*, are used.

Arthur a'i carodd *ef*, *e*, or *o*, *Arthur loved him.*
Gwelsom (ni) *ef*, *e*, or *o*, *we saw him.*
Canmolwyd *ef*, *e*, or *o*, *he was praised.*

516. The fem. *hi* and *hithau;* the mas. *yntau;* and the pl. *hwythau* and *hwyntau* will take any position, like *ni* and *ninnau*.

517. *Hwy* and *hwynt.*—*Hwynt* is for the most part an accusative *following* an active verb; or a nominative *following* a passive verb. Caraf *hwynt*. Cerir *hwynt*. But *hwy* is preferred to *hwynt* after *nt;* as, 'carant *hwy*,' not 'carant *hwynt*.'

Hwy may be used in all cases. *Hwy* a garant; carant *hwy;* Arthur a'u car *hwy*.

518. The 'antithetic' forms of all persons and numbers

(except *efe*, see above), and the 'antithetic and conjunctive,' generally precede their verbs. *Myfi* or *myfinnau* a erfyniaf. *Tydi* or *tydithau* a ddeui. *Nyni* a atolygwn i ti.

(*a*) Such expressions as "pa ham y derbyniodd gliniau *fyfi?*" "canlyn di *fyfi*," where the antithetic form is in the accusative, *following* the verb, are not often met with.

519. **Auxiliary pronouns.**—*Fe, fo,* and *e* are employed as auxiliary pronouns in affirmative propositions, and are placed before the verb when it is followed by its nominative case. They are strictly auxiliaries of the 3rd pers. singular, and in the *active voice* they seldom occur except before this person of the verb; but in the *passive voice* they can stand before all numbers and persons.

Fe weryd *ef* y cyfion, *he will deliver the righteous.*
E ddaw *fy mrawd* yma, *my brother will come here.*

Fe dybir *hyn* gan lawer, *this is thought by many.*
Fe ddywedir fod gan Arthur gleddyf, *it is said that A. has a sword.*
Fe'm or *fo*'m lluddiwyd *i*, *I was prevented.* See p. 86, note (*a*).

520. *Mi* (a corruption of *me*, the radical form of *fe*) is, in colloquial language, put before verbs of all numbers and persons when they are followed by their nom. case.

Mi feddyliais *i*. *Mi* feddyliaist *ti*. *Mi* feddyliodd *y dynion.*

(*a*) *Fe, fo, e,* and *mi,* are followed by the *middle* sound. Fe *dd*aw.

521. **Hi.**—*Hi* corresponds to *it*, standing as the nominative case to a verb, descriptive of the *weather, circumstances,* &c.

Y mae *hi* yn gwlawio, *it is raining.*
Y mae *hi* yn galed arno, *it is hard upon him.*
Dywed ei bod *hi* yn galed arno, *he says that it is hard upon him.*

522. **Connected with Nouns.**—When the possessive pronoun is to be marked with emphasis, a corresponding personal pronoun is put after the noun. The forms, which they assume when thus employed, will be seen in the following examples:—

1. Fy nhad *i*, or *innau.*	1. Ein tad *ni*, or *ninnau.*
2. Dy dad *di*, or *dithau.*	2. Eich tad *chwi*, or *chwithau.*
3. { Ei dad *ef, e, o*, or *yntau.* { Ei thad *hi*, or *hithau.*	3. Eu tad *hwy, hwynt*, or *hwythau.*

(*a*) The personal pronoun is often added when the possessive is not emphatic; but it is then read as an enclitic. "Fy nhad-i," *my father.* "Ein dillad-ni," *our clothes.*—Exercise Book, Ch. 5.

(*b*) The personal pronouns are added in the same way in Armoric. "Ma zat-me" (=fy nhad i), *my father.* "Da dat-te" (=dy dad di), *thy father.*—Arch. Brit., p. 193.

523. **Connected with Prepositions.**—The pronouns take the same forms after '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*,'[1] as those which they take after nouns.

1. O'm blaen *i*, or *innau*.	1. O'n blaen *ni*, or *ninnau*.
2. O'th flaen *di*, or *dithau*.	2. O'ch blaen *chwi*, or *chwithau*.
3. { O'i flaen *ef*, *e*, *o*, or *yntau*.	3. O'u blaen *hwy*, *hwynt*, or *hwythau*.
{ O'i blaen *hi*, or *hithau*.	

(*a*) ☞ *I* or *innau*, &c., is the proper form in every case where a *possessive pronoun is put before the verb or noun*. Fe'*m* curwyd *i*, *I was beaten*. Hi a'*m* tarawodd *i*, *she struck me*. Dywed *fy* mod *i*, *he says that I am*. Yn *fy* nysgu *i*, *teaching me*. *Fy* nhad *i*, *my father*. O'*m* blaen *i*, *before me*.

524. After *pronominal prepositions*[2] they assume the following forms :—

1. Ataf *fi*, or *finnau*.	1. Atom *ni*, or *ninnau*.
2. Atat *ti*, or *tithau*.	2. Atoch *chwi*, or *chwithau*.
3. { Ato *ef*, *fe*, *fo*, or *yntau*.	3. Atynt *hwy*, or *hwythau*.
{ Ati *hi*, or *hithau*.	

525. **Apposition and Government.**—The government of words, put in apposition with pronouns, depends on the force intended to be expressed by the apposition words. They are put either in the *radical* or the *middle* sound.

526. When a substantive, or substantive word, is put in apposition with a pronoun, and does not require to be emphatically expressed, its initial consonant is put in the *middle* sound.

Nyni, *b*awb oll, a bechasom, *we all have sinned*.
Glanhewch eich dwylaw, chwi *b*echaduriaid. S. James iv. 8.
I'ch cadw chwi, *dd*ynionach musgrell, segur.—Theo. Evans.

527. When the apposition is to be marked with emphasis, it very properly retains its *radical* and strong form ; as,

Chwi, *g*wyr y doniau mawr, a gyfeiliornasoch.

528. When one pronoun is put in apposition with another, the apposition pronoun generally retains the *radical ;* as,

Gwerthwyd ni, *m*yfi a'm pobl, *we are sold, I and my people*.
Dos [*di*] allan o'r arch, *ti* a'th wraig, *go thou out of the ark, thou and thy wife*. Gen. viii. 16.

529. **Fy hun**, &c. = *myself*. The pronouns *fy hun, dy hun*, &c., myself, thyself, &c., have generally the same position assigned to them as their corresponding words in English. [*Fy hun*, &c. = own, see § 533.]

---

[1] See § 373. [2] See §§ 374–381.

Catwg *ei hun* a'i lladdodd ef, *Cato himself killed him.*
Catwg a'i lladdodd ef *ei hun*, *Cato killed him, himself.*
Catwg a laddodd *ei hun*, *Cato killed himself.*

530. Plural for singular.—"As in English, pronouns of the *second person plural* are in ordinary conversation substituted for those of the *second person singular*. In addressing the Deity, the singular form is adhered to; also occasionally in solemn language; and in addressing inferiors, in which last its use is more frequent than in English."

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

531. Possessive pronouns (except *mau* and *tau*) *precede* the nouns or the nouns and concomitants to which they belong; as,

Fy nhad, *my father.* *Fy* anwyl dad, *my dear father.*
Gwlad *fy* mam, *my mother's country.*

532. When the possessive is required to be emphatic, a corresponding personal pronoun is by a peculiar idiom placed after the noun; as, ei dad *ef = his father of him; his father.* [See § 522.]

533. When still greater emphasis is required, the pronouns *fy hun*, *dy hun*, &c. = *own*, will be placed after the noun, with or without the personal pronoun; as,

Fy nhad *fy hun*, *my own father.*
Fy nhad *i fy hun*, *my own father.*

534. Mau and **tau** (which are obsolete except in poetry), are always placed *after* the noun which they modify, the noun being preceded by the definite article. [Order: *article, noun, pronoun.*]

Y llyfr *mau*, *my book.* Y glust *fau*, *my ear.*
Y llyfr *tau*, *thy book.* Y glust *dau*, *thy ear.*

Tro atom eilwaith y glust *dau*, *turn again thy ear to us.*—Edm. Prys.

535. Eiddof (fi), eiddot (ti), &c.
Yr eiddof (fi), yr eiddot (ti), &c. [§ 210.] } *mine, thine,* &c.; *that of, those of.*

The form *eiddof* (*fi*), &c., occurs as *predicate*, and the order of the sentence is, *generally: predicate—copula—subject.* In other circumstances, *yr eiddof* (*fi*), &c., is the proper form.

a) *Eiddof fi* yw'r holl dir yma, *all this land is mine.*
Eiddot ti yw'r deyrnas, *thine is the kingdom.*

b) Y llyfr hwn o'*r eiddof*, *this book of mine.*
Megys y gwnaeth Duw oddi wrth *yr eiddo Yntau*, *as God did from His.* Heb. iv. 10.
Yr eiddo pob prysur [sydd] at eisieu, *those of every hasty one* [*are*] *to want.* Prov. xxi. 5.
A'*r eiddo* Tobiah oedd yn dyfod atynt hwythau, *and those of Tobiah came unto them.* Neh. vi. 17.
Cânt wybod gair pwy a saif, ai *yr eiddof fi*, ai *yr eiddynt hwy*, *they shall know whose words shall stand, mine or theirs.* Jer. xliv. 28.

(*a*) This form of the possessive does not exist in the colloquial language ; and as *repetition* is a peculiarity well agreeing with the idiom of the Welsh language, some good critics doubt the propriety of admitting it as a part of Welsh Grammar. Such expressions as

"Y llyfr hwn o'*r eiddof*."
"Megys y gwnaeth Duw oddi wrth *yr eiddo* Yntau."

would undoubtedly be more idiomatically expressed in this manner :

"*Fy* llyfr *hwn*."
"Megys y gwnaeth Duw oddi wrth ei *weithredoedd* Yntau."

The above form, however, is continually met with in the Welsh Bible.

536. The possessives *fy*, *ym*, *dy*, *yth*, *ei*, &c., are by a peculiar idiom employed before verbs and participles, and between the component parts of certain compound prepositions.

Duw a'*n* (=*a ein*) gwnaeth ni, *God made us.*
Duw sydd yn *ein* cadw. Daeth ar *fy* ol i.

*** See Syntax of "Verbs," and "Compound Prepositions."

537. Government.—Ym, *my ;* ein, *our ;* eich, *your ;* eu, *their ;* and ill (*or* eill), *their ;* are followed by the *radical* sound ; as,

Mi a'*m* tâd, *I and my father.*
Ni a'*n* tâd, *we and our father.*
Efe a'*m* cospodd, *he punished me.*
Daeth i'*m* cospi, *he came to punish me.*

538. Dy and yth, *thy ;* and ei, *his*, by the *middle ;* as,

Dy dad, *thy father.*
Ei dad, *his father.*
Efe a'*th* gospodd, *he punished thee.*
Daeth i'*th* gospi, *he came to punish thee.*

539. Fy, *my*, by the *nasal* sound ; as,

Fy nhad, *my father.* Daeth i *fy* nghospi, *he came to punish me.*

540. Ei, *her*, by the *aspirate* sound ; as,

Ei thad, *her father.* Daeth *i'w* chospi, *he came to punish her.*

541. ☞ But when *ei masculine* and *ei feminine* are put before **finite** verbs, they are followed by the *radical ;* as,

Arthur a'*i* cospodd ef, *Arthur punished him.*
Arthur a'*i* cospodd hi, *Arthur punished her.*

542. Words beginning with a vowel have the aspirate *h* prefixed to them after the possessives *ym, ei fem., ein* and *eu;* as,

Myfi a'*m h*awen (rad. awen), *I and my muse.*
Efe a'*m h*andwyodd, *he ruined me.*
Daeth i'*m h*andwyo, *he came to ruin me.*

(*a*) Some words, beginning with *i* followed by a vowel, are sometimes written without the aspirate *h* when they are preceded by *ein.* Ein Iachawdwr (for ein Hiachawdwr), *our Saviour.* Ein Ior (for ein Hior), *our Lord.*

(*b*) With *ei* and *eu* compare Irish. "Going before a vowel, *a*, his, does *not* aspirate; as, *a anam*, his soul: *a*, her, does aspirate the vowel; as, *a h-anam*, her soul: *a*, their, causes *n* to be prefixed; as, *a n-anama*, their souls."—Bourke's Gr. § 101.

543. ☞ When *ei mas.* precedes a **finite** verb beginning with a vowel, the said verb should be preceded by the *aspirate;* as,

Arthur a'*i h*andwyodd ef, *Arthur ruined him.*

544. ☞ Thus

a) *Ei mas.* and *ei fem.* placed before *finite* verbs with *consonant* initials govern the *radical.*

b) *Ei mas.* placed before *infinitive* verbs with *consonant* initials governs the *middle;* but *ei fem.* governs the *aspirate.*

c) *Ei mas.* and *ei fem.* placed before *finite* verbs with *vowel* initials require the aspirate *h* to be prefixed to the said verbs.

d) *Ei fem.* placed before *infinitive* verbs with *vowel* initials requires the aspirate *h* to be prefixed to the said verbs: but *ei mas.* does not.

545. *Fy, dy, yth,* and *eich,* do not take the aspirate after them.

Fy iaith, *my language.* *Dy* iaith, *thy language.*
Ti a'*th* iaith, *thou and thy language.* *Eich* iaith, *your language.*

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

546. Demonstrative pronouns are used either by themselves, or in construction with nouns.

547. When joined to nouns or nouns and their concomitants, they take the last place, and the nouns will always be preceded by an *article* or its *equivalent;* as,

Y gwr hwn=*the man this.* Y llafur blin yma.
Fy mab hwn=*my son this.* Ein blin gaethiwed hwn.
Nis goddef *ein corff hwn* i ni fod yn philosophyddion iawn.—M. W.

(*a*) So in Irish. "An fear so"=*the man this.*

548. A singular noun with any numeral adjective above *one* requires the demonstrative to be in the plural number.

Y tri dyn *hyn, these three men.* Y ddau lyfr *hyny, those two books.*

549. **Hyn, hyny,** &c. [See §§ 195–200.] The singulars *hyn, hyny,* &c., this, that, are not, like *hwn, hon,* &c., put in construction with substantives (*e.g., y dyn hwn, y ddynes hon*); but are employed when reference is made to a *circumstance, a sentence,* or *part of a sentence,* expressed, or understood by the person spoken to.

a) Expressed. The sentence referred to may either precede or follow the clause of which *hyn,* &c., is a part.

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill : hyn sydd yn fy ngofidio.
My friend came not : this vexes me.

Hyn yw'r cwbl a ddywedais, *na ddeuwn yno.*
This is all I said, that I would not come there.

b) Understood.

Hyn sydd gyfiawnder, *this is justice.* *Hyn* yw ei werth, *this is its value.* *Hyn* yw eich ymddygiad, *this is your conduct.* *Hyn* yw ei faint, *this is its size.*

Clodforaf di o herwydd i ti wneuthur *hyn.* Ps. lii. 9.

Heblaw *hyn, besides this.* Fel *hyn, in this manner.*
O ran *hyny, as to that.* Ar *hyny, upon that.*

(*a*) In the colloquial language of S. W., *hyn* and *hyny* are put in construction with substantives, and are of common gender; *i.e.*, they are employed for *hwn, hwnw,* and *hon, hono.* Y llyfr hyn=y llyfr hwn, *this book.* Y fraich hyn=y fraich hon, *this arm.*

(*b*) In written language they are often used for *hwn* and *hwnw* after the word *peth,* a thing, and after some words expressive of time, especially *pryd.* Y peth hyn=y peth hwn, *this thing.* Y pryd hyny=y pryd hwnw, *that time.*

550. *Hyn, hyny,* &c., followed by the prep. *o,* are often found before words expressive of *quantity* or *number.*

Hyn o beth=*this of a thing; this much.* Hyn o dân, *this much fire.*
Hyn o wair. Hyn o lyfrau. Hyn o ddefaid.
Ar hyn o amser cyfarwydda a llywia.—Com. Prayer.

551. *Dyma* and *dyna,* which must always take precedence in the clause, may be substituted for *hyn, hyny,* &c., as nominative or object of a verb, *dyna* (=that) referring to what has gone before, and *dyma* (=this) to what is coming.

Dyma a ddywedir, ei fod yn euog o'r trosedd.
This is what is said, that he is guilty of the offence.

Dyna a ddywedais, ei fod yn euog o'r trosedd.
That is what I said, that he was guilty of the offence.

(*a*) *Dyma* and *dyna* are in most instances equivalent to a subject and a copula. Dyma eich ymddygiad=*hyn yw* eich ymddygiad. Dyna'r cwbl a ddywedais=*hyna yw'r* cwbl a ddywedais.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS. See "*Relative Clause.*"

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS. See "*Interrogative Clause.*"

INDEFINITE OR ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS. [§§ 213–218.]

552. **Ambell** = *some few*, is usually followed by a *singular* noun or substantive word. [But we say *ambell rai.*]

Ambell waith, *sometimes*.

(*a*) In colloquial language it is often followed by *i;* as "ambell *i* waith;" but this is not considered grammatically correct.

553. **Amryw** and **amrai** (noun and adj.) = *several, divers*, are plural.

Yr oedd amryw wedi dyfod yng nghyd, *several had come together.*
Amryw olchiadau, *divers washings.*

Amryw, adj., is sometimes followed by a noun in the singular.

Amryw fath, *divers kinds.* Amryw fesur, *divers measures.*

(*a*) *Amrai* is seldom used except by pedantic writers.

554. **Cyfryw** and **fath** (noun and adj.) = *such*, are both sing. and pl. They are for the most part preceded by *y*.

Y cyfryw ddyn, *such a man.* Y gyfryw weithred, *such an act.*
Y fath lyfr, *such a book.* Y fath beryglon, *such dangers.*
Y cyfryw ag a ddelont, *such as may come.* Y fath ag ydynt, *such as they are.*

(*a*) *Math* (or *bâth*) is always *softened* after the article. Y *f*ath ddyn, *such a man.* Y *f*ath ddynes, *such a woman.* Y *f*ath ddynion, *such men.*

(*b*) Some maintain that *cyfryw* should retain the radical after the article, even when in construction with a *fem. noun sing.* "Y cyfryw wledd nefol," *such a heavenly feast.*—Com. Prayer.

(*c*) *Y* is omitted when *y fath* and *y cyfryw* are preceded by "*yn* apposition." Y mae efe *yn fath* gybydd, *he is such a miser.*

Fath (= sort), preceded by *pa*, forms an interrogative.

Pa fath ddynion ydynt? *what sort of men are they?*

555. **Dim** (noun and adj.) = *any; anything.*

As a noun it implies *quantity* and *number*,—if *number* it is plural.

As an adjective, when qualifying nouns of quantity, abstract nouns, &c., it is *singular;* when qualifying numeral objects, it is *plural.*

Dim, preceded by a negative, is = *no* or *not any; nothing, none* or *not any.*

A oes dim bai ynddo? *is there any fault in him?*
Cyn bod dim cymmanfäau, *before there were any assemblies.*
Nid oes dim yn yr ardd, *there is nothing* or *none in the garden.*
Y mae genych chwi wyau; nid oes genyf fi ddim, *you have eggs; I have none.*
Nid wyf fi yn cael dim bai yn y dyn hwn, *I find no fault in this man.*

A . . dim? with emphasis on *dim,* is = *no* or *not any? nothing, none* or *not any?*

A oes genych chwi DDIM bara? *have you no bread?*
A oes ganddo ef DDIM ar ei helw? *has he nothing in his possession?*

In answers to questions the negative and verb are often omitted, and then *dim* is = *nothing.*

Beth a gawsoch chwi? *Dim* (= ni chefais ddim).
What did you get? Nothing (= *I got nothing*).

Dim is used as an auxiliary adverb in negative sentences, to strengthen the negation. [§ 689.]

Ni ddaeth efe ddim, *he did not come.* Nid wyf ddim yn iach, *I am not well.*

556. Holl and **oll** = *all, whole,* differ in that *holl* precedes, and *oll* follows, the noun. Each " takes a sing. or pl. noun, according as it means every part of one whole, or every individual of one species.

Y byd oll, yr holl fyd = *the whole world.*
Y dinasoedd oll, yr holl ddinasoedd = *all the cities.*"[1]

Oll is sometimes used with an ellipsis of the substantive word with which it agrees.

Daethant *oll* yma (unders. *hwy*), *they all came here.*
Ac *oll* sydd ynddynt (unders. *yr hyn*), *and all that is in them.*

Oll, preceded by *yr,* stands for a substantive word, noting number and quantity = *all.*

Mae'r oll o honynt yn dra defnyddiol, *all of them are very useful.*

557. Llawer = *many, much.*

When *llawer* is immediately followed by a sing. noun, it refers to *number,* and is = *many a.*

Llawer dyn, *many a man.* [But we say "llawer *rhai.*"]

---

[1] Hughes on "Syntax."

When it is followed by "*o*" (of), it may refer to *number* or *quantity;* if to *quantity*, the following noun is *singular;* if to *number*, the noun is *plural.*

Llawer o win, *much wine.* Llawer o afalau, *many apples.*

When it is used by itself it takes a pl. verb, like *many* in English.

Llawer a farnant fel hyn, *many think thus.*

558. Ychydig = *a few, a little* (following the verb); = *few, but few, little, but little* (preceding the verb.)

A'm clust a dderbyniodd ychydig o hono, *and mine ear received a little thereof.* Job iv. 12.

Ychydig sy'n bwriadu myned, *few intend to go.*

When referring to *quantity*, &c., it takes a sing. noun with or without *o.*

Ychydig win, ychydig o win, *little wine.*
Ychydig lesâd, ychydig o lesâd, *little benefit.*

When referring to *numerical objects*, it takes a plural noun, with or without *o.*

Ychydig ddynion, ychydig o ddynion, *a few men.*

559. Peth (noun and adj.) = *some*, noting quantity. It is strictly a noun, signifying a *thing, something;* but it is often used where the word "*some*" would be employed in English. [Cf. L. *aliquid:* "aliquid boni."]

Peth daioni a gaed ynddo (= *something of good*), *some good was found in him.*

Y mae genyf fi beth, ond nid oes genych chwi ddim, *I have some, but you have none.*

560. Naill = *the one*, and **y llall** = *the other*, pl. **y lleill** = *the others*, are correlatives.

Cymmer *y naill* neu *y llall, take the one or the other.*

[*Naill* is also a conjunction, and followed by *ai. Naill ai* tyred neu aros gartref, *either come or stay at home.*]

561. Pob = *every.* (*a*) It is most usually followed by a noun in the singular; as, *pob* dyn, *every man.* (*b*) But when signifying *every sort* or *kind*, it may have a pl. noun after it.

Ac efe a gedwis lawer o *bob anifeiliaid* = *all sorts of animals.*

562. Pawb = *all, all men, all persons*, is plural, and should not be followed by a noun.

Pawb a ddywedant hyn, *all say this.*

(*a*) Some writers erroneously consider it as the plural of the adjective *pob*, and hence write "*pawb dynion*," &c.

563. Rhyw (adj.) = *some, some sort of*, noting a person or thing, but not specific and definite. It precedes a sing. or plural noun.

Rhyw ŵr, *some man.* Rhyw wŷr, *some men.*

564. Rhai (noun and adj.) = *some*, noting a number of persons or things. It is always plural.

Rhai dynion, *some men.* Rhai a aethant, *some went.*

When accompanied by an adjective, it is equivalent to "*ones*" in English.

Rhyw rai, *some* (*ones*). Y rhai goludog, *the wealthy* (*ones*).

When preceded by *y*, and not attended by an adjective, it is used as a relative pronoun (pl. of *yr hwn* and *yr hon*).

Y gwŷr, y rhai a ddaethant, *the men, who came.*

565. Sawl[1] = *many; whoever.* When preceded by *pa* (but *pa* is frequently left out) and followed by a noun, it forms a question.

Pa *sawl* gwaith, or *sawl* gwaith? *how many times?*

When preceded by *y* and not followed by a noun, it is a relative pronoun.

Y *sawl* a ddelont, *whoever* or *such as may come.*

566. Un = *one, any.*

Un, "one," a definite numeral.

Y mae yma un, *there is one here.* Nid oes yma ond un ddafad, *there is only one sheep here.*

In a negative sentence it is frequently preceded by *yr*. Nid oes yr un ddafad yn y cae, *there is not one sheep in the field.*

Un, "any" (and "a" or "an" when = "any"), indefinite numeral, is generally preceded by *yr*. Preceded by a negative, it is = *no, not any, none.*

Gellid gweled nas meddai *yr un* galon, *it could be seen that he had no heart.*—Ellis Wynne.

Nid adwaen i *yr un, I know not any.* Is. xliv. 8.

Ni chollais i *yr un, I have lost none.* S. John xviii. 9.

Nac *yr un* o'th anifeiliaid, *nor any of thy cattle.* Deut. v. 14.

---

[1] *Sawl* was originally a substantive = "copia," "multitudo," as explained by Zeuss, Gram. Celtica, p. 408.

A . . yr un? with emphasis on *yr un*, is = *no? not one?*

A oes ganddi hi YR UN? *has she not one?*

Yr un = *the one; the same; whosoever.*

Efe yw'r un a welais ddoe, *he is the one I saw yesterday.*
Hi a ddywedodd yr un geiriau drachefn, *she said the same words again.*
Yr un a ddelo a wobrwyir, *he who comes shall be rewarded.*

(*a*) When *yr un* is equivalent to "the same," it may agree with a singular or plural noun. Yr un llyfr, *the same book.* Yr un llyfrau, *the same books.*

567. Unrhyw = *any; the same*, is both sing. and plural.

Cymmeraf unrhyw beth (*or* bethau) a fynoch, *I will take anything you like.*
Nid oes unrhyw eiriau yn yr iaith nas gall eu swnio, *there are no words in the language that he cannot pronounce.*
Nid yw pob cnawd unrhyw gnawd, *all flesh is not the same flesh.*

568. Neb = *anybody, any one.*

Neb refers to persons, and is generally singular.

Od oes neb yn caru y byd, *if any one loves the world.*

Neb, preceded by a negative, is = *nobody, no one, none.*

Ac nid oes iachawdwriaeth yn neb arall, *neither is there salvation in any other.* Acts iv. 12.

A . . neb? with emphasis on *neb*, is = *nobody? no one?*

A oes NEB yn y ty? *is there nobody in the house?*

In answers to questions the negative and verb are often omitted, and then *neb* is = *nobody, no one.*

Pwy a welsoch chwi? Neb (=ni welais neb).
Whom did you see? No one (=*I saw no one*).

(*a*) *Neb* is strictly a substantive pronoun, and hence should stand by itself. Yet we sometimes find a noun or substantive word following it, both in composition of words and separately.

Nebawd, *nobody;* nebdyn, *no person;* neble, *no place;* nebrhyw, *no, any.*
Ac nad elom mewn *neb rhyw berygl.*—Common Prayer.
Na chymmeradwywn *neb rhyw swyddogion* nad ydynt yn medru iaith y wlad.—Carnhuanawc.

Compare Cornish. "Dre nêb fordh" (= drwy neb ffordd), *through some way.*

Neb, preceded by *y*, forms a relative = *whoever.*

Y neb a wnelo hyn, *whoever does this thing.*

568 (1). Tipyn = *a little.* When a noun follows, *tipyn* is accompanied by *o.*

Y mae genym dipyn, *we have a little.*
Tipyn o wair ac o ŷd, *a little hay and corn.*

568 (2). **Chwaneg** (or **ychwaneg**), **rhagor** = *more, any more;* **mwy** = *more.* If a noun follows, these words are accompanied by *o.*

Ni chymmerai efe ychwaneg, *he would not take any more.*
Nid oes gan yr eneth ragor o gnau, *the girl has no more nuts.*
Rhoddais fwy na gwerth y tir, *I gave more than the value of the land.*

568 (3). **Cymmaint** = *as much, as many:* **cynnifer** = *as many.* When a noun follows, they are accompanied by *o.*

Y mae ganddo gymmaint, os nad mwy, *he has as much* or *as many, if not more.*
Cymmaint o drafferth, *as much trouble.* Cynnifer o dyddynod, *as many farms.*

568 (4). **Gormod** = *too much, too many.* It is accompanied by *o*, if a noun follows.

Y mae gormod cyn waethed a rhy fâch, *too much is as bad as too little.*
Yr ydych yn cadw gormod o gŵn, *you keep too many dogs.*

568 (5). **Nemmawr** (always with a negative) = *not much, not many; scarcely* or *hardly any.*

Nid oes nemmawr air nad yw efe yn ei ddeall, *there is scarcely a word that he does not understand.*
Nid oedd nemmawr o'r dynion yn foddlawn, *scarcely any of the men were willing.*

568 (6). **Fawr** (always with a negative) = *not much* or *many; little* or *few.* If a noun follows, it is generally accompanied by *o.*

Nid oes genyf fawr, *I have not much.*
Nid oes fawr o goed yma, *there are not many trees here.*

(*a*) *Fawr* (which is probably a contraction of *nemmawr*) is always in the *middle* sound.—[Welsh Exercises, Ch. 27.]

568 (7). **Arall** = *another, other,* pl. **ereill** = *other, others.* They are nouns and adjectives: when adjectives they always follow the nouns which they qualify.

Arall a ddaeth ar ei ol, *another came after him.*
Clywais yr un peth gan ereill, *I heard the same thing from others.*
A'r coelbren arall dros y bŵch diangol, *and the other lot for the scapegoat.* Lev. xvi. 8.
Neillduais chwi oddi wrth bobl ereill, *I have separated you from other people.* Lev. xx. 24.

(*a*) *Un arall* is now more common than the noun *arall*, and is preferable when in the poss. after a *sing.* noun; and *rhai ereill* is preferable to the noun *ereill* when in the poss. after a *plural* noun. "Gwas *un arall*," *another man's servant.* "Gweision *rhai ereill*," *other men's servants.*

VERBS.

569. Agreement.—*Nom. preceding.*—When the nominative case precedes the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as,

Myfi a ddywedais, *I said.*
Tydi a ddywedaist, *thou saidst.*
Efe a ddywedodd, *he said.*
Duw a ddywedodd, *God said.*
Hwy a ddywedasant, *they said.*
Y dynion a ddywedasant, *the men said.*

(*a*) This rule regards only propositions of simple narration; for when there is antithesis, or when particular emphasis is to be laid on some part of the sentence, the verb may disagree with its nom. both in number and person, as will be seen hereafter. But even in simple narration a verb in the singular number is often joined to a plural nominative.

Gerddî a gweunydd *gyll* eu gwawr.—D. Davies.
A dieifl a'i *teifl* yn y tân.—Gor. Owen.

570. *Verb preceding.*—When the nominative case is a *noun* and *follows* the verb, then the verb is put in the third person singular, whether the nominative be *singular* or *plural;* as,

Daeth y disgybl, *the disciple came.*
Daeth y disgyblion, *the disciples came.*

571. "When, however, several verbs are coupled together, and the nom. to the first is the nom. to all the others, then though the first verb be *singular* with a plural nom. in accordance with the above law, yet the nom. being now *known*, all the other verbs will be plural; as,

Crynodd y ceidwaid, ac *aethant* megys yn feirw, *the keepers trembled, and became as dead.*"[1]

572. When the nom. case is a *pronoun*, whether *preceding* or *following* the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as,

Efe a *ddaeth; daeth* efe, *he came.*
Hwy a *ddaethant; daethant* hwy, *they came.*

573. A collective noun is sometimes followed by a singular, and sometimes by a plural verb; as,

A lliaws a *ddaeth, and a multitude came.*
A'r holl liaws a *lefasant, and the whole multitude cried out.*

---

[1] T. J. Hughes on "Syntax."

574. A singular noun with a numeral adjective (except *un*) is followed by a plural verb ; as,

Y ddau ddisgybl a'i *clywsant* ef yn llefaru, *the two disciples heard him speak.*

575. When two or more singular nouns are connected together by a copulative conjunction, they are usually followed by a plural verb : sometimes by a singular ; as,

Pedr ac Ioan a *atebasant*, *Peter and John answered.*
Arthur a Dafydd a *orchfygasant* y gelynion.
Moses ac Elias a *ymddangosodd* iddynt.

(*a*) Strictly speaking, the verb should not be put in the singular except when the assertion is true of the nom. cases taken severally.

"Pedr ac Ioan a aeth"='*Pedr a aeth*,' and '*Ioan a aeth.*'

576. When pronouns of different persons, or pronouns and substantives, are coupled together by copulative conjunctions, the verb, if *following*, will be in the plural number, and refer to the nom. of the most worthy person.

The 1st person is more worthy than the 2nd ; and the 2nd than the 3rd.

Myfi a thithau a *awn*. *Tydi* ac yntau a *ewch*.
Mi a'm tylwyth a *wasanaethwn* yr Arglwydd. Josh. xxiv. 15.

577. If the verb *precede* its nominatives, it will be made to agree in number and person with the one next to it ; as,

Aethym i a thithau. *Aethost ti* ac yntau. *Aethom ni* a chwithau.

578. When antithesis or opposition is implied in the nominative case, the verb, following it, is put in the *third person singular*, for all numbers and persons. This construction will be rendered into English by '*it is*,' or (in questions) '*is it*,' with a relative sentence, or by emphasising the nominative.

Myfi a *ysgrifenodd* y llythyr hwn, (*it is*) *I* (*who*) *wrote this letter.*
Tydi a *wnaeth* hyn. Ai chwychwi ynte eich cefndyr a *ddaw ?*

579. Similarly, words connected by disjunctive conjunctions are followed by the *third person singular* of the verb, for all numbers and persons ; as,

Naill ai tydi ai myfi a *ddywedodd* hyn.
Naill ai chwychwi neu y gwŷr hyn a *ddywedodd.*

580. **Position.**—The position of words in a sentence depends on the emphasis intended to be laid on them. In Welsh, as in other languages, the most important word takes precedence. In ordinary discourse, when no particular

emphasis is intended to be expressed, or where the verb, as being the main part of the clause, may be regarded as emphatic, the order will stand thus : **verb, subject, predicate or object.**

Penodir Arthur yn frenin, *Arthur will be appointed king.*
Gwnaeth Duw y byd. Ni wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.

So in Irish. "The verb in Gaelic commonly holds the first place; the nominative, which denotes the subject, the second; the accusative, which denotes the object, the last."—Bourke's Ir. Gr. § 257.

(*a*) In English the case is quite the reverse. "Shines forth the cheerful sun," is said to be *rhetorically* arranged, whereas, in Welsh, "Ymddysgleiria'r heulwen oleu," is arranged *conventionally.*

(*b*) If the predicate is definite, the copula cannot take precedence, but the order must be either *subject, copula, predicate,* or *predicate, copula, subject.* Arthur oedd eich cyfaill, *or,* Eich cyfaill oedd Arthur, *Arthur was your friend.* [Never, *yr oedd Arthur eich cyfaill.*]

581. Some clauses will always have this order (§ 580), whether they be simple or emphatic ; such as,

Imper. Bydded goleuadau, *let there be lights.*
Interr. made by *a.* A wnaeth y brenin ddeddf?
Time. Pan wnaeth y brenin ddeddf.
Motive. Fel y gwnelo y brenin ddeddf.

582. When the verb is periphrastic, the subject, in ordinary discourse, intervenes between the auxiliary and the other part; as,

Y mae *y brenin* yn dyfod, *the king is coming.*

(*a*) Cf. the English interrogative, "Do *riches* make men happy?"

583. But if the principal part of the periphrastic verb (*i.e.*, the infinitive or participle) is antithetical, the order of the clause is **infinitive, auxiliary verb, subject.**

Dyfod y mae'r brenin=*coming is the king.* Gweu yr oedd y wraig.
Beth y mae Arthur yn ei wneyd? Dyrnu y mae.
Dywedyd yr ydwyf y pethau a wnaethym i'r brenin. Ps. xlv. 1.

(*a*) When the sentence is thus arranged, the participial sign *yn* is dismissed. Dyfod [not *yn* dyfod] y mae. But *wedi* of the perfect, and *ar* and *ar fedr* of the future, are retained. *Wedi* cychwyn y mae. *Ar* gychwyn y mae.

584. When the subject of the clause is antithetical, the order of construction will be **subject, verb, predicate or object.**

Arthur a benodir yn frenin. Duw a wnaeth y byd.
Y brenin sydd yn dyfod. Nid y brenin a wnaeth ddeddf.

(*a*) Good critics are of opinion that this arrangement should be adopted only when the subject of the verb is antithetical, as above; yet many Welsh writers (and especially translators) continually express ordinary

discourse in this manner. Occasionally, indeed, this construction is elegantly used, especially when a series of similar clauses follow one another, and where the same order of words would render the sentences too monotonous.

(*b*) If the subject is a *personal pronoun*, it is continually, in affirmative sentences, put before the verb, even when the subject is not antithetic. Mi a glywais y chwedl yna o'r blaen, *I heard that story before.*

585. When the predicate, or the object of the verb is antithetic, the clause will be thus arranged: **predicate** or **object, verb, subject.**

Yn frenin y penodir Arthur.	Y byd a wnaeth Duw.
Dyfod y mae y brenin. [See § 583.]	Nid deddf a wnaeth y brenin.

586. Some clauses will always be arranged according to the order in the two preceding rules, irrespective of emphasis; as,

Rel. { Arthur, yr hwn a'm tarawodd i.
{ Arthur, yr hwn a darewais i.

Interr. made by *ai* and *onid.* { Ai Arthur a'm tarawodd i?
{ Ai Arthur a darewais i?

Nominal Interr. made by *pwy*, &c. { Pwy a'm tarawodd i?
{ Pwy a darewais i?

587. For the sake of still greater emphasis and vivacity, a sentence may be thus arranged: **subject, predicate** or **object, verb**; or **verb, predicate** or **object, subject**; or we may completely transpose the conventional order, and have **predicate** or **object, subject, verb.**

Pob elfen ufudd-dod a roes,
Rhoes ufudd-dod bob elfen,
Ufudd-dod pob elfen a roes,
} *every element obeyed.*

588. Thus, in accordance with the foregoing observations on position, the same sentence may be arranged in six different ways.

a) *Penodir* Arthur yn frenin.
Rhoes pob elfen ufudd-dod.
} *Simple.*

b) Arthur a *benodir* yn frenin.
Pob elfen a *roes* ufudd-dod.
} *Somewhat emphatic.*

c) Yn frenin y *penodir* Arthur.
Ufudd-dod a *roes* pob elfen.

d) Arthur yn frenin a *benodir*.
Pob elfen ufudd-dod a *roes*.

e) Yn frenin Arthur a *benodir*.
Ufudd-dod pob elfen a *roes*.[1]

f) *Penodir* yn frenin Arthur.
Rhoes ufudd-dod bob elfen.

} *Rhetorical.*

[1] Or ufudd-dod, pob elfen *a'i rhoes.*

589. Government.—When the subject *immediately* follows a finite verb, it retains its *radical* initial; as,

Daeth *g*wr dieithr ataf, *a stranger came to me.*
Cerir *d*yn ffyddlawn, *a faithful man is beloved.*

(*a*) *Mi*, *ti*, and their compounds, take the *middle* sound; as, caraf *fi*; cerir *f*innau; ceri *d*i; cerir *d*ithau. [See "Personal Pronouns."]

(*b*) Some tenses of the verb *bod*, and especially *oes*, when preceded by a negative adverb, are sometimes followed by their subject in the *middle* sound; as,

Yn yr hwn *nid oes dwyll*, *in whom there is no guile.*
Efe a weddïodd *na byddai wlaw.* S. James v. 17.
Nid oes aïr o son am gael meddiant o un cwr.—Theo. Evans.

590. A *finite* verb governs its object in the *middle;* an *infinitive* verb governs its object in the *radical* sound; as,

Finite. Gwnawn *dd*yn, *let us make man.*
Ceisiaf *dd*yfod, *I will endeavour to come.*

Infin. Ofni *d*yn, *to fear man.*
Ceisio *d*yfod, *to endeavour to come.*

591. The pronoun *ti* and its compounds are *softened* after the infinitive.

Y mae yn dy garu *di*, *he loves you.* [See "Pers. Pronouns."]

592. An infinitive verb, heading a *transitive clause* (=*that* with a *finite verb*), is put in the *middle* sound, whether the verb on which it depends be *finite* or *infinitive.* [The *transitive clause* will be explained hereafter.]

Efe a ddywed *dd*arllen o hono y llyfr, *he says that he read the book.*
Dywedir *dd*arllen o hono y llyfr, *it is said that he read the book.*
Y mae yn dweyd *dd*arllen o hono y llyfr, *he says that he read the book.*

593. But the verb *bod*, even when it introduces a *transitive clause*, and is equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb*, is by many writers put in the *radical* or *middle*, according as the verb, on which it depends, is a *finite active* verb; or a *finite passive*, or an *infinitive; i.e.*, it is put in the *middle* sound after a *finite active;* but in the *radical* after a *finite passive* or an *infinitive* verb.

Efe a ddywed *f*od Arthur yn darllen,
Dywedir *b*od Arthur yn darllen,
Y mae yn dweyd *b*od Arthur yn darllen, } *that Arthur is reading.*

(*a*) This may have arisen from want of due observation of the different meanings of *bod.* In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn bwriadu *b*od yno," *bod* implies simply "*to be*," and should retain its *radical* initial. In the sentence, "Yr wyf yn meddwl *b*od Arthur yno," *bod* signifies "*that . . is*," and should, according to analogy, have its *soft* form '*fod.*'

594. If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an intervenient word or phrase, the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound.[1] The expression '*an intervenient word or phrase*,' which is here used for want of a more suitable term, stands for—

a) *An adverb.*

Yr oedd *yno ddy*nion dewr, *there were there brave men.*
Tynu *ymaith b*echodau. Bwrw *allan g*ythreuliaid.

b) *A word governed by a preposition.*[2]

Yr oedd *yn y synagog ddy*n, *there was in the synagogue a man.*
Y sychedig yn tynu o'r *ffynnon ddy*froedd iechydwriaeth.
Ni a ddylem alw *i gof f*ywyd Crist,—Nicander.
Rhoddwyd *iddo b*in ysgrifenydd buan.—W. Davies.

c) *An address or exclamation.*

Yr wyf yn bwriadu, *gyfaill, ddy*fod i'th weled, *I intend, friend, to come to see you.*

d) *An apposition word.*

Yr oedd *yn bresennol f*eddygon medrus, *there were present skilful physicians.*

e) *An auxiliary verb.*

Ceisio *y maent dd*uwiau ereill, *they seek other gods.*
Cadw *yr ydys dd*eddfau Omri, *the statutes of Omri are kept.*

595. When an *infinitive* is the subject, and is separated from its verb by a predicative noun or adjective, *unaccompanied by a preposition and its case*, or *by a phrase*, the subject-infinitive will retain its *radical* sound.

Mae yn anhawdd *d*weyd, *it is difficult to say.*
Mae yn rhaid *m*yned, *there is need to go.*

(*a*) "But if a word, which of its own nature requires another form, comes between the subject or the object and the verb, then the subject or the object will take that form which this word requires."[3]

Gwelais *ei g*wr, *I saw her husband.*
Gwelais yno *dy f*rawd, *I saw there thy brother.*

---

[1] This rule is sometimes violated in poetical works, and occasionally in prose: the word being made to retain its *radical* sound, whereas it ought to be put in the *middle*.

"Ni phrofais dan ffurfafen
*G*we mor gaeth a'r Gymraeg wen."—*E. Prys.* [*Gwe* for *we.*]

"Trwy gyfrwyddaw yn hydda *p*ob rhyw ansawdd."—*Henri Perri.* [*Pob* for *bob.*]

[2] Pronominal prepositions are here included.

[3] Dr. Davies.

Auxiliary affirmative particles.

Auxiliary affirmative pronouns. [See §§ 519, 520.]

596. The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs are a, y, yr (yd, ydd).*

A is used before the verb when the nom. or accus. of the verb precedes; as,

Duw *a* greodd y byd, *God created the world.*
Y dyn, yr hwn *a* darewaist ti, *the man whom you struck.*

597. *Y, yr* (and formerly *yd* and *ydd*) are used when the nom. and accus. follow the verb, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; as,

Yna *y* dywedodd efe = *then* (*it was*) *he said.*
I'r pentref acw *yr* aeth efe.

(*a*) *A* governs the *middle* sound. *Y* is used before a *consonant*, and followed by the *radical*: *yr* is put before a *vowel.*

*** For further explanation of auxiliary affirmative adverbs, see Syntax of "Adverbs." [§ 699.]

598. The use of Possessive Pronouns before Verbs.—There is a peculiar idiom in Welsh of employing the possessive pronouns before verbs; a point in which the language differs essentially from the Greek, Latin, and English. These possessives, or, as they are called by some, "introductory pronouns," are for the most part used in connection with personal pronouns. Sometimes they serve as harbingers indicating that another pronoun is to follow; and sometimes they reflect on a word that has gone before in the sentence. In some places they are apparently redundant; but when they are employed in a certain case before the infinitive mood, they perform an important office, namely, that of converting *active verbs* and *active participles* into *passive.*

599. These pronouns, when placed before verbs, generally suffer an elision, and are thus written:

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
'm	*'th*	*'i* (or *'w*, as i'*w*)	*'n*	*'ch*	*'u* (or *'w*, as i'*w*)
for	for	for	for	for	for
Ym	*yth*	*ei.*	*ein*	*eich*	*eu.*

600. Before Transitive Verbs.—When a personal pronoun is the object of a verb (whether finite or infinitive), and *immediately follows* it, a corresponding possessive is placed immediately before the verb, indicating that a personal

pronoun is to follow. The participles, being compounds of the infinitive, are here included.

Duw a'*n* gwnaeth *ni*, *God made us.*
Arthur a'*th* garodd *di*, *Arthur loved thee.*
Yr eneth ni'*m* gwel *i*, *the girl sees me not.*
Addawodd Arthur *fy* nysgu *i*, *Arthur promised to teach me.*
Rhag iddo *eich* dyfetha *chwi*, *lest he should destroy you.*
Y mae Arthur yn *ei* charu *hi*, *Arthur loves her.*
Duw sydd yn *fy* nghynnal *i*, *God supports me.*
Gan *ei* rwygo *ef*, *tearing him.* Wedi *ei* daraw *ef*, *having struck him.*

Compare Breton. "Me ez gar" (= mi a'*th* garaf), *I love thee.* "Te am c'har" (= ti a'*m* ceri), *thou lovest me.*—Archæologia Britannica, p. 194.

(*a*) When the possessive precedes, the personal pronoun is usually omitted, unless it is to be emphatic. (Duw a'n gwnaeth. Arthur a'th garodd. Y mae Arthur yn ei charu.)

(*b*) If the reflexive *hun* or *hunan*, self, be the object of the verb, the introductory possessive is by some employed, by others omitted; thus we may say, Arthur *a laddodd ei hun*, or Arthur *a'i* (= *a ei*) *lladdodd ei hun*, Arthur killed himself.

Yr ydym yn *ein* twyllo ein hunain. 1 S. John i. 8.
Yn *eu* galw eu hunain yn Gristionogion.—Com. Prayer.

601. When the object of the infinitive takes precedence in the clause, a possessive pronoun will be inserted immediately before the infinitive. In this case the object may be a *noun* as well as a personal pronoun.

602. The poss. pron. agrees with the preceding objective in *number* and *gender*; but the *third person* is always to be used. [This is a case in which the possessive does not indicate that a pers. pron. is *to follow*.]

Y dyn hwn yr wyf yn *ei g*aru.
Y fenyw hon yr wyf yn *ei ch*aru.
Y rhai y medraf *eu d*arllen.
Os *myfi* yr ydych yn *ei g*eisio.
Os *tydi* y maent yn *ei g*eisio.

603. When the auxiliary particles *y* and *yr* precede the verb (in which case the subject follows the verb), the possessive pronoun may or may not be expressed. When it is, the objective personal pronoun is generally omitted; when it is not, the personal pronoun should always be expressed.

Possessive expressed.	*Possessive omitted.*
Yno y'*m* daliasant.	Yno y daliasant *fi*.
Fel y'*n* gwaredai.	Fel y gwaredai *ni*.

(*a*) When the possessive is expressed, the subject coming after the verb is almost invariably omitted. Yno y'm daliasant,—not, yno y'm daliasant *hwy*. Such construction as the following is rare. "Pan *y'm* hamgylchyno *anwiredd fy sodlau*," *when the wickedness of my heels compasseth me round about.* Ps. xlix. 5. "Pan yr amgylchyno anwiredd fy sodlau *fi*" would be more intelligible.

(*b*) In the above cases some write *ym, yth, ei, ein, eich, eu,* without a mark of contraction; others employ an apostrophe, and write *y'm, y'th, y'i, y'n, y'ch, y'u.* While the former mode is the more common, the latter is certainly the more correct; for, as it is evident, the particle *y* is in the above construction present before each of the pronouns. "Yno *y'm* daliasant," *there they caught me,* would be written at full length, "Yno *y ym* daliasant."

604. The same rule (§ 603) is applicable to a negative sentence, when the subject follows the verb, expressed or understood. [§ 603 (*a*).]

Possessive expressed.	*Possessive omitted.*
Ni'*th* gerais, *I loved thee not.*	Ni cherais *di.*
Ni'*m* carodd, *he loved me not.*	Ni charodd *fi.*

(*a*) But when the 3rd person is the object of an active verb, or the subject of a passive verb, the possessive is never placed before the verb in a negative preposition.

Ni cherais *ef*, *I loved him not.*	Ni charasom *hwynt*, *we loved them not.*
Ni cherir *ef*, *he is not loved.*	Ni cherir *hwynt*, *they are not loved.*

605. Before Intransitive and Passive Verbs.—We have seen that the possessives are employed before *transitive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *objective case;* but they are employed before *intransitive* and *passive* verbs in connection with words (especially *pers. pronouns*) in the *nominative case.*

606. *a*) *Intransitive Verbs.*—The verb *Bod,* and other intransitive verbs, when used in the infinitive as the main verbs of a clause, are often followed by their subject; and if, in this case, the subject be a pers. pronoun, the infinitive will always be preceded by a corresponding possessive.

Dywed *fy* mod *i* yn gywir, *he says that I am right.*
Dywed *dy* fod *di* yn darllen, *he says that you are reading.*
O herwydd *ei* fod *ef* yn dyfod, *because [that] he is coming.*
Dywed *ei* fyned *ef* i'r dref, *he says that he is gone to town.*

607. *b*) *Passive Verbs.*—The possessives are placed before passive verbs, when these verbs precede their subjects (expressed or understood), and are themselves preceded by other words.

Fe'*m* dysgir *i*, *or* fe'*m* dysgir, *I am taught.*
Pan y'*m* dysger *i*, *or* pan y'*m* dysger, *when I am taught.*
Fel y'*m* dysger *i*, *or* fel y'*m* dysger, *that I may be taught.*

608. The Infinitive Passive.—The infinitive passive is formed by placing before the simple infinitive a possessive pronoun, corresponding to the noun or pronoun which would be the subject, if the infinitive were analysed, and

expressed by a finite verb. For example, in the expression "I came to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that I might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with that of the verb on which it depends. Again, in "I sent him to be taught," *to be taught* is equivalent to 'that he might be taught:' here the subject of the infin. is the same with the *object* of the main verb. Hence

609. If, in Welsh, the governing verb be *intransitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun corresponding to the *subject* of the governing verb.

Mi a ddaethym *i'm* dysgu = I came to *my* teaching; to be taught = that I might be taught.

610. If the governing verb be *transitive*, the infinitive will be preceded by a poss. pronoun, corresponding to the *object* of the governing verb.

Anfonais ef *i'w* ddysgu = I sent him to *his* teaching; to be taught = that he might be taught.

611. The infinitive, having thus acquired a passive signification, will consequently not admit a personal pron. after it; so that the general difference in form between a *transitive* and a *passive* infinitive is, that the former has, and the latter has not, an *objective personal pronoun*. The pron. may or may not come after a transitive, according to the degree of emphasis required; but it can never come after a passive.

Transitive. Daethym *i'w ddysgu ef*, / Daethym *i'w ddysgu*, } *I came to teach him.*
Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu ef*, / Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu*, } *I sent him to teach him.*

Passive. Daeth *i'w ddysgu*, *he came to be taught.*
Anfonais ef *i'w ddysgu*, *I sent him to be taught.*

612. The auxiliary *cael* (to have) is very often borrowed to express the infinitive passive; and in modern Welsh it is more usual to express the infin. passive with *cael* than without it.

Mi a ddaethym *i gael fy nysgu* = I came *to have* my teaching; I came to be taught.

Anfonais ef *i gael ei ddysgu* = I sent him *to have* his teaching; that he might be taught.

*** The *passive participles* being formed from the passive infinitive by prefixing certain particles to them, fall under the preceding observation. [See § 307.]

612 (1). Subjunctive Mood.—The *present* Subjunctive, in subjoined clauses, accompanies the *present*, *future*, and

perfect definite of the Indicative: the *imperfect* Subjunctive accompanies the *imperfect*, *perfect indefinite*, and *pluperfect* of the Indicative. Thus,

Yr wyf yn dyfod (*pres.*)
Deuaf (*future*)
Yr wyf wedi dyfod (*perf. def.*) } fel y *gwelwyf* ef (*pres. subj.*)

Yr oeddwn yn dyfod (*imperf.*)
Daethym (*perf. indef.*)
Daethwn (*pluperfect*) } fel y *gwelwn* ef (*imperf. subj.*)

612 (2). The verb is always put in the Subjunctive mood in the following clauses.

a) A *motive* clause, when headed by *fel*, *fal*, *mal*, *modd*, *megys* (in order that).

Af yno, fel y *gwelwyf* fy mrawd, *that I may see my brother* (pres.)
Aethym yno, fel y *gwelwn* fy mrawd, *that I might see my brother* (imp.)

b) A *non-fact supposition*, and its *apodosis*.

Byddwn ddedwydd, pe *byddai* efe yma, *I should be happy, if he were here* (imperf.)
Aethwn yno, pe *daethai* efe gyda mi, *I should have gone there, if he had come with me* (plup.)

c) A *wish* clause.

Duw a'ch *bendithio*, *may God bless you* (pres.)
O na *allwn* ysgrifenu, *would that I could write* (imperf.)
O na *welswn* ef, *would that I had seen him* (plup.)

d) A *negative transitive* clause (or "a substantive accessory sentence"[1]) after words implying *commanding, &c.*

Gorchymmyn na *chymmerwyf* y llyfr, *that I should not take the book* (pres.)
Gorchymmynodd na *chymmerwn* y llyfr, *that I should not take the book* (imperf.)

e) *Generally* in an *indefinite time* clause.

Hyd oni *ddelo*, *till he may come* (pres.) Hyd oni *ddelai*, *till he might come* (imperf.)
Pryd na *chaffo*. Crybwyll am danynt, pan *eisteddych*.
Pa bryd bynag yr *elo*. Pan y *mynont*.
Anhawdd yw genyf goelio hyny, hyd oni *welwyf* ychwaneg o eglurdeb. —Gor. Owen.

f) *Generally* in an *indefinite relative* clause.

Y neb a *hauo* anwiredd, *he that soweth iniquity* (pres.) Prov. xxii. 8.
Pwy bynag a *gredo*. Dyweded Camden a *fyno*.
Gwnaed fel y *myno*. Lle ni *byddo* cynghor. Prov. xi. 14.

612 (3). And when the state or fact, enunciated by the

[1] Arnold's English Grammar, p. 110.

verb, is *contingent* in signification, the following clauses will have their verbs in the Subjunctive.

a) A *transitive* clause.

Dywedodd y *byddai* yno, *that he would be there* (imperf.)
Dywedodd y *buasai* yno, *that he would have been there* (plup.)
Barnodd mai cyfiawn *fyddai* hyn (imperf.) : *fuasai* hyn (plup.)

b) A *cause* clause.

O herwydd y *byddai* [*buasai*] hyny yn golled, *because that would be a loss* (imperf. and plup.)
O herwydd mai cyfiawn a *fyddai* [*fuasai*] hyny (imperf. and plup.)

c) An *explanatory* cause clause.

Canys hyny a *fyddai* [*fuasai*] yn golled, *for that would be a loss* (imperf. and plup.)

d) A *concessive* clause.

Er lleied y *bo*, *though it be so small* (pres.)
Er y *byddai* [*buasai*] hyny yn gywir (imperf. and plup.)
Er mai cyfiawn *fyddai* [*fuasai*] hyny (imperf. and plup.)

e) An *effect* clause.

Cymmaint oedd ei lid fel y *lladdai* [*lladdasai*] ei frawd, *that he would kill his brother* (imperf. and plup.)

f) An *interrogative* clause.

Pwy a *ddeuai* yma? *who would come here?* (imperf.)
Pwy byth a *fuasai* yn meddwl hyny? (plup.)
Onid gwych *fyddai* cael tipyn ychwaneg?—Gor. Owen.

THE VERB BOD, *to be.*

613. Difference between sydd, mae, yw, and oes.—The Welsh language has these four different forms to express the 3rd person Indicative of *bod*. Each form has its own place and import; so that one cannot be employed optionally for the other, without altering the construction of the sentence, and, in most cases, giving it a different signification.

614. General Rule.—*Sydd* is *preceded* by its subject, and followed by an *indefinitive* predicate: *mae* is *followed* by its subject and accompanied by an *indefinitive* predicate, and is never *immediately* preceded by a negative particle: *oes* is employed in neg. supp., and predicative interr. sentences, and is *followed* by its subject, which must be *indefinitive*: *yw* (or *ydyw*) is sometimes *preceded* and sometimes *followed* by its subject.

Arthur *sydd* yn filwr,	*Arthur is a soldier.*
Y *mae* Arthur yn filwr.	Milwr *yw* Arthur.
Nid *oes* arian ganddo.	Yr hwn *yw* dy law.

Special Rules.

615. **Sydd**[1] is used when the emphasis is thrown on the *subject*, and has strictly an antithetical or exceptional force, equivalent to the English words "*it is . . that.*" It often, however, loses its antithetical force, being used in sentences where the copula implies simply '*is.*'

(*a*) *Sydd* (sometimes written *yssydd*) is probably compounded of *ys* = *is*, and *ydd* = *it*, thus literally signifying *is it* or *it is.*

616. *Sydd* is preceded by its *subject*, and followed by an *indefinitive* word or predicate. [Order: **subject, copula, predicate.**]

Arthur *sydd* yn frenin,	*Arthur is a king.*
Arthur *sydd* yn ddoeth.	Arthur *sydd* yma.
Arthur *sydd* yn darllen.	Arthur *sydd* yn y ty.

If a noun or an adjective is the predicate, it must be preceded by "*yn* apposition," either expressed or understood. Therefore, such sentences as the following, where *yn* is inadmissible, must be incorrect:—

a) "Y neb sydd ganddo ddwy bais," *he that hath two coats.*

b) "Pwy sydd arno fy eisieu," *who wants me?*

c) "Beth sydd arnaf ei eisieu," *what do I want?*

The original forms of these sentences were probably the following:—

a) "Y neb sydd *â* chanddo ddwy bais:" or, "Y neb sydd *â* dwy bais ganddo."

b) "Pwy sydd arno *â* fy eisieu:" or, "Pwy sydd *â* fy eisieu arno?"

c) "Beth sydd arnaf *â*'i eisieu?"

In constructions like the following, "yr hwn *sydd* hoff ganddo drawsder," *who delighteth in wickedness, sydd* is put for *mae:* "yr hwn *y mae* yn hoff ganddo drawsder."

617. If the predicate following the verb be *definitive*, *yw* will be substituted for *sydd.*

Indef. Arthur *sydd yn frenin.* *Def.* Arthur *yw y brenin.*

(*a*) The terms *definitive* and *indefinitive* should be explained here. By a *definitive word* is meant the *definite article*, either expressed or virtually implied in another word. In the sentence, "Arthur yw y brenin," the article is *expressed;* in "Arthur yw fy mrenin," it is implied in the pron. *fy.* An *indefinitive word* is that which has no article, either

[1] Some Welsh scholars wish to lay down as a rule that *sydd* should be placed before vowels, and *sy* before consonants. Pwy *sydd* acw? Pwy *sy* draw?—(Tegid's "Iawn Lythyreniad," p. 14.) But while this distinction conduces to euphony of expression, it tends to obscure the etymology of the word.

expressed or implied; *e.g.*, *adverbs*, *prepositions with their case*, *participles*, and *nouns* and *adjectives* admitting '*yn apposition*' before them.

618. *Negation.*—Particles of negation should *immediately* precede the words intended to be negatived. In a sentence with *sydd*, the subject is usually the negatived term. The particle will then immediately precede it; and as the verb is not affected by negative particles unless they immediately precede it, *sydd* will remain unchanged.

Affirm. Arthur *sydd* frenin. *Neg.* *Nid* Arthur *sydd* frenin.
Nid chwychwi *sydd* yn dywedyd, ond yr Ysbryd Glan. S. Mark xiii. 11.

619. Sometimes, however, the copula is the negatived term, and as '*sydd*' *can never be immediately preceded by a negative particle*, the copula *yw* (pl. *ynt*) is substituted for it.

Affirm. Yr hwn *sydd* yn caru. *Neg.* Yr hwn nid *yw* yn caru.
Cariad nid *yw* yn cenfigenu. 1 Cor. xiii. 4.
A'r gwirionedd nid *yw* ynom. 1 S. John i. 8.
Arfau ein milwriaeth ni nid *ydynt* gnawdol. 2 Cor. x. 4.

(*a*) Another way of negativing *sydd* is by retaining it, and adding "heb fod" (= *without being*); and in colloquial language "sydd ddim" occurs continually.—[Welsh Exercises, Ch. 12.]

Pwy sydd heb fod [pwy sydd ddim] yn barod, *who is not ready?*

620. *Suppositions* introduced by *od*, *os*; and *Interrogations* introduced by *a*, *onid*, &c., require the same construction as negative clauses.

Os efe sydd yn gofyn, *if it is he that asks.*
Ai efe sydd yn dyfod, *is it he that is coming?*

621. **Mae.**—*Mae* is used when 'the emphasis is on the deed or fact announced by it.' It signifies '*is*' and '*there is.*'

622. *a. Mae*, signifying '*is*,' is connected with *yw*. It must always precede its subject, and be accompanied by an *indefinite* word or predicate.

Y mae Arthur yn frenin. *Y mae* Arthur yma.
Y mae Arthur yn ddoeth. *Y mae* Arthur yn y ty.
Y mae Arthur yn darllen.

623. *Position of Predicate.*—The predicate usually comes after the subject, as in the foregoing examples. [Order: **copula, subject, predicate.**]

624. Sometimes it intervenes between the copula and the subject; as,

Y mae *yn aros* ffydd, gobaith, a chariad. 1 Cor. xiii. 13.
Mae *yn angenrheidiol* fod ynddi gyflawnder o eiriau.—Blackwell.

625. When *mae* is auxiliary, the accompanying participle and its dependents may precede it; or the object of the participle may precede, and the participle itself follow the copula.

Aros y mae ffydd. *Ei geisio ef* y mae Arthur.
Efe y mae Arthur *yn ei geisio*. *Yr hwn* y mae Arthur *yn ei geisio*.

(*a*) When the participle comes before the verb, '*yn participial*' is left out. Thus we have "*aros* y mae ffydd," for "*yn aros*," &c.

626. If prepositions and their case, or adverbs of similar import, or conjunctional adverbs, begin the sentence, the copula is *mae*.

Yma y mae Arthur, *Arthur is here*. *Tra y mae* hi yn ddydd.
Sut y mae Arthur? *At hwn y mae* Arthur yn dyfod.
Pa le y mae Arthur yn myned? *Pan y mae* yn dwyn.

Lle y mae Ysbryd yr Arglwydd, yno y mae rhyddid. 2 Cor. iii. 17.
Pa le y mae dy hen drugareddau? Ps. lxxxix. 49.

(*a*) The governing prep. is very frequently put after the verb. *Beth y mae* yn gofyn *am dano* = *what does he ask for?*

627. If a noun or adjective, having '*yn apposition*' before it, precede the copula, *yn* is sometimes retained, and the copula will be *mae;* but most usually *yn* is dropped, and then *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

'*Yn*' *retained.* *Yn* frenin *y mae* Arthur,
'*Yn*' *omitted.* Brenin *yw* Arthur, } *Arthur is king.*

(*a*) With periphrastic verbs, *yn* is retained before the predicative noun or adjective. *Yn* frenin y mae Arthur yn cael ei benodi.

628. The subject of *mae*, if it be a pronoun, is frequently omitted; as,

Y mae [*efe*] yn gwaredu, *he delivers*.

629. In the Welsh Bible the words "pa le," *where*, are sometimes left out in an interrogative sentence which has *mae* for its copula; as,

Mae Abel dy frawd (=*pa le y mae*)? *where is Abel thy brother?*
Mae yr Arglwydd dy Dduw? *where is the Lord thy God?* Micah vii. 10.
Mae hwynt? mae dy ddoethion? *where are they? where are thy wise men?* Is. xix. 12.

630. *Negation.*—*Mae* is never *immediately* preceded by a negative particle: therefore, if in a negative proposition the copula is the term to be negatived, *yw* will be substituted for *mae*.

Affirm. *Y mae* Arthur yn frenin. *Neg.* *Nid yw* Arthur yn frenin.
Y mae Arthur yn rhyfela. *Nid yw* Arthur yn rhyfela.

(*a*) But if a part of the sentence intervenes between the negative particle and the copula, *mae* is retained. Nid yma y *mae* Arthur. Nid darllen y *mae* efe.

631. *Suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*, and *Interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*, require the same construction as negative propositions.

Supp. *Os yw* Arthur yn frenin, *if Arthur is a king.*
Interr. *A ydyw* Arthur yn frenin, *is Arthur a king?*

632. *β. Mae*, signifying '*there is*,' is connected with *oes*, '*there is*.' Both words occupy the same position as *mae* = *is*; *i.e.*, they precede the subject, which must be *indefinite* (= *some*, *any*, &c.) *Mae* occurs in *affirmative* propositions; *oes* in *negative* propositions, in *suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*, and in *interrogations* introduced by *a* and *onid*.

Affirm.	*Y mae* ganddo arian.	*Affirm.*	*Y mae* rhywun yn dyfod.
Neg.	*Nid oes* ganddo arian.	*Neg.*	*Nid oes* neb yn dyfod.
Supp.	*Os oes* ganddo arian.	*Supp.*	*Os oes* rhywun yn dyfod.
Interr.	*A oes* ganddo arian?	*Interr.*	*A oes* rhywun yn dyfod?

633. In answer to a question made by '*a oes*,' the same verb is employed, and sometimes *mae* is added; as,

A oes ganddo arian? *Oes;* or *oes, y mae.*

Yw or ydyw.

634. *Affirmative Sentences.*—*Yw* is used when the emphasis is to be laid on the predicate: hence *yw* is preceded by the predicate, and followed by the subject. [Order: **predicate, copula, subject.**]

Here the predicate must be a *noun* or *adjective* unaccompanied by '*yn apposition*.'

Brenin yw Arthur. *Doeth yw* Arthur.
Ysgrifenedig yw y gair.

Cadarn yw dy law ac *uchel yw* dy ddeheulaw. Ps. lxxxix. 13.
Da yw mqliannu yr Arglwydd. Ps. xcii. 1.
Gwaith mawr yw ceisio ei foddhau.

(*a*) If '*yn apposition*,' be retained, *mae* should be employed. Yn frenin *y mae* (not *yw*) Arthur.

(*b*) If prepositions with their case, or adverbs of like import, or conjunctional adverbs, precede, the copula should be *mae*, not *yw*; as, *sut y mae* fy nghyfaill, not 'sut *yw* fy nghyfaill.' [§ 626.] Yet in the Welsh version of the Bible we occasionally meet with the copula *yw* after the conjunctional adverbs *pan*, when, and *tra*, whilst; as,

Pan *yw* yn dwyn, for "pan *y mae* yn dwyn." Heb. i. 6.
Pan *yw* fy nhad a'm mam yn fy ngwrthod. Ps. xxvii. 10.
Tra *yw* y brenin ar ei fwrdd. Cant. i. 12.
Tra yr *ydyw* hi yn ddydd. S. John ix. 4.

635. When the predicate is *definitive* by being preceded by the article, or when in its own nature it is *definitive*, it may interchange position with the subject: *i.e.*, the copula *yw* may follow the subject, and precede the predicate; or follow the predicate, and precede the subject, as above. [Order: **subject, copula, definitive predicate; or, definitive predicate, copula, subject.**]

Arthur *yw* y brenin; *or*, Y brenin *yw* Arthur.
Hi *yw* dy fywyd; *or*, Dy fywyd *yw* hi.
Cydseiniaid *yw* esgyrn geiriau; *or*, Esgyrn geiriau *yw* cydseiniaid.

Yr Arglwydd *yw* ein tarian, a Sanct Israel *yw* ein brenin. Ps. lxxxix. 18.
Yr Arglwydd *yw* yr Ysbryd. 2 Cor. iii. 17.
Yr hon *yw* gogoniant yr holl diroedd. Ezek. vi. 20.
Yr hwn *yw* dy gleddyf di. Ps. xvii. 13.
Yr hwn *yw* delw Duw. 2 Cor. iv. 4.
Diwedd y rhai *yw* distryw. Phil. iii. 19.
Cyfiawnder a barn *yw* trigfa dy orseddfainc. Ps. lxxxix. 14.
Prif ddiben y traethawd hwn *ydyw* adferu cyssondeb.—Tegid.

(*a*) But if the subject precede, and the predicate be *indefinitive*, *sydd*, not *yw*, must be used. We should therefore write,

Arthur *sydd yn frenin* (not Arthur *yw yn frenin*).
Arthur *sydd yn ddoeth* (not Arthur *yw yn ddoeth*).
Arthur *sydd yn rhyfela* (not Arthur *yw yn rhyfela*).
Arthur *sydd yn y ty* (not Arthur *yw yn y ty*).
Arthur *sydd yma* (not Arthur *yw yma*).

636. The subject or the predicate, following the copula, is sometimes omitted, when it can be supplied from the preceding sentence; as,

Can's Arglwydd noddfawr *yw* i ni.—Ed. Prys. [Unders. *efe*.]
Dywedaf am yr Arglwydd, fy noddfa a'm hamddiffynfa *ydyw*. Ps. xci. 2.

637. *Negative Sentences.*—In a proposition, of which the copula is *yw*, the term to be negatived is usually the first, whether it be the predicate or the subject.

Affirm.		*Neg.*	
Brenin yw Arthur.		*Nid brenin* yw Arthur.	
Arthur yw y brenin.		*Nid Arthur* yw y brenin.	

638. *Yw* will admit of being *immediately preceded* by a negative particle: hence it is substituted for *mae* and *sydd*, when these copulas are to be negatived.

	Affirmative.	*Negative.*
Sydd.	Yr hwn *sydd* yn darllen.	*Yw.* Yr hwn nid *yw* yn darllen.
Mae.	*Y mae* efe yn darllen.	*Yw.* Nid *yw* efe yn darllen.

Thus *yw* takes the place of *sydd* and of *mae* (= *is*); and *oes* that of *mae* (= *there is*), in *negative* sentences.

639. *Suppositions* introduced by *od* and *os*; and *Interro-*

gations introduced by *ai* and *onid*, require the same construction as negative sentences.

Os cuddiedig yw ein hefengyl ni. 2 Cor. iv. 3.
Ai cuddiedig yw ein hefengyl ni?

639 (1). **Synopsis.**—**Mae** signifies "is" and "there is." **Mae** = "is," occurs in affirmative sentences,—is followed by its subject,—and is accompanied by an indefinite predicate. Mae—Arthur—yn frenin.

(*a*) The pl. of *mae* is *maent;* but the pl. is used only when the subject is a personal pronoun. *Mae efe* yn frenin : *maent hwy* yn frenhinoedd.

(*b*) The predicate, or the complement of the sentence, may follow or precede the copula; or a part may follow and a part precede. Mae Arthur *yn ysgrifenu : ysgrifenu* y mae Arthur. Mae Arthur *yn y ty : yn y ty* y mae Arthur. *Pa beth* y mae Arthur *yn gofyn am dano? am ba beth* y mae Arthur *yn gofyn? gofyn am ba beth* y mae Arthur?

(*c*) If the predicate be a noun or adjective, preceding the copula, 'yn apposition' is most usually omitted, and then *yw* is substituted for *mae*. Thus instead of "*yn frenin* y mae Arthur," it is more usual to say "*brenin* yw Arthur."

(*d*) In negative, interrogative and suppositive sentences, *yw* (or *ydyw*) is substituted for *mae*. Mae Arthur yn frenin. *Nid* ydyw Arthur yn frenin : *a* ydyw Arthur yn frenin? *os* ydyw Arthur yn frenin. (See below.)

(*e*) If the neg., interr., or supp. particles belong to some other part of the sentence, the copula is not affected. *Nid yn y ty* y mae Arthur. *Ai yn y ty* y mae Arthur? *Os yn y ty* y mae Arthur.

639 (2). **Mae** = "there is." like *mae* = "is," is followed by its subject. It is connected with **Oes**, which occupies the same place in the sentence. *Mae* occurs in affirmative sentences : *oes* in negative, interr., and suppositive sentences. *Mae* llawer o blant yn yr ysgol. *Nid oes—a oes—os oes* llawer o blant yn yr ysgol.

639 (3). **Sydd** occurs in affirmative sentences—is preceded by its subject—and is followed by an indefinite predicate. Arthur—sydd—yn frenin.

(*a*) *Sydd* has the force of "it is . . that." But in relative, and often in other sentences, it means simply "is."

(*b*) When it is equivalent to "it is . . that," the subject is the negatived term, and hence the copula is not affected. *Nid Arthur* sydd yn frenin.

(*c*) When it means "is," *yw* (pl. *ynt*) is substituted for it in a negative sentence. Yr hwn sydd yn frenin; y rhai sydd yn frenhinoedd. Neg. Yr hwn *nid yw* yn frenin; y rhai *nid ynt* yn frenhinoedd.

(*d*) If the predicate be definite, *yw*, not *sydd*, is the copula. Arthur sydd *yn frenin* (indefinite). Arthur yw *y brenin* (definite).

639 (4). **Yw** or **ydyw** in **affirmative** sentences is preceded by the predicate—and followed by the subject; or preceded by the subject—and followed by the predicate. Brenin—yw—Arthur (predicate preceding). Hwn—yw—dy gleddyf (subject preceding).

(*a*) When an indefinite noun or adjective is the predicate, it always precedes the copula. *Brenin* yw Arthur. *Doeth* yw Arthur.

(*b*) When the predicate is definite, it may either precede or follow the copula. [In relative and nominal interr. sentences, the rel. and interr. pronouns must, of course, precede.] Hwn yw *dy gleddyf: dy gleddyf* yw hwn. Arthur yw *y brenin: y brenin* yw Arthur.

(*c*) If the predicate is indefinite, and follows the copula, *sydd*, not *yw*, should be employed. Arthur yw *y brenin* (definite). Arthur sydd *yn frenin* (indefinite).

639 (5). **Yw** or **ydyw** in **negative, interrogative,** and **suppositive** sentences is a substitute for *mae*, and it occupies the same place as *mae* in the sentence. Mae Arthur yn frenin: *nid ydyw* A. yn frenin; *a ydyw* A. yn frenin? *os ydyw* A. yn frenin. Maent hwy yn frenhinoedd: *nid* [*a, os*] *ydynt* hwy yn frenhinoedd.

(*a*) It is a substitute for **sydd** in a negative sentence when *sydd* signifies "is" and "are." Yr hwn sydd yn frenin; y rhai sydd yn frenhinoedd; yr hwn *nid yw* yn frenin; y rhai *nid ynt* yn frenhinoedd.

640. **Agreement.**—The rules laid down in § 569 respecting the agreement of verbs with their nominatives in sentences of simple narration, will apply to the tenses of *Bod.*

A'r cerddorion a *fyddant* yno. Ps. lxxxvii. 7.
Ti, Arglwydd, *fuost* yn breswylfa. Ps. xc. 1.
Tydi *wyt* ddisgybl iddo ef.

(*a*) But the occurrence of the *singular* number of this verb preceded by a *plural* nominative is so common, both in written and colloquial language, that some good critics are of opinion that a singular and a plural verb may be indifferently joined to a plural nominative.

I bawb a fu o'm blaen i, *to all that have been before me.*
Y rhai oedd yn ei lu ef, *who were in his army.*

641. When the subject of discourse is antithetical, and the predicate an *indefinitive* term, *sydd* in present tense, and the *third person singular* in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi sydd yn myned. *Tydi a fydd* yno.
Tydi sydd ddisgybl iddo ef. *Chwychwi a fydd* yno.

642. When the verb is followed by a *definitive* noun or adjective, *yw* in present tense, and the *third person singular* in other tenses, will be put for all numbers and persons.

Myfi *yw y* bugail da. Cydseiniaid *yw* esgyrn geiriau.
Tydi *yw fy* anwyl fab. Iuddewon *oedd y* gwyr hyn.
Y rhai *yw dy* law. Chwychwi *yw ein* gogoniant.
Tydi *yw y* doethaf o'r cwbl. Chwychwi *oedd y* rhai a garaswn.
Hwynt-hwy *yw y* gwir berchenogion.

643. **Sydd.**—*Sydd* is an indeclinable verb, and is put in construction both with singular and plural nominatives; as;

Y gair *sydd* wirionedd. Y milwr *sydd* yn dyfod.
Y geiriau *sydd* wirionedd Y milwyr *sydd* yn dyfod.

(*a*) Many, even of our best writers, not considering that *sydd* is itself plural as well as singular, frequently adopt *ynt* or *ydynt* as plural.

Tafodau *ydynt* arwydd. 1 Cor. xiv. 22.
Y rhai *ydynt* yn gofyn aceniad hir.—Tegid.
Hwythau *ydynt* yn gwahanu'r Sacrament.—M. Kyffin.
Ond y trigolion *ydynt* lesg.—Theo. Evans.
Y rhai *ydynt* yn ei weled ef â llygaid yr enaid.—Nicander.

(*b*) If the verb be negatived, then *ynt* or *ydynt*, being the pl. of *yw* or *ydyw* (which is the substitute of *sydd*), will very properly be used; as,

Tafodau nid *ydynt* arwydd, *tongues are not for a sign.*
A'r holl bethau dymunol nid *ydynt* gyffelyb iddi. Prov. iii. 13.

644. Ellipsis of Copula.—The Welsh language frequently admits of an ellipsis of the copula, especially the form *yw* or *ydyw*.

Digon [yw] i ni wybod hyn. Eiddo'r Arglwydd [yw] y ddaiar.
Mor gu [yw] genyf dy gyfraith di.
Onid mwy hyfryd [yw] gweled Duw gyda'r bugeiliaid?
Nid da [yw] rhy o ddim. Gwyn eu byd [yw] y rhai addfwyn.

APPOSITION VERBS.

645. In all languages there are some verbs capable of taking (*a*) two *nominatives;* namely, a subject-nominative, which must be a noun or a pronoun, and a predicative-nominative, which may be a noun or adjective: (*b*) two *accusatives*, the former a noun or pronoun, the latter a noun or adjective.

These are verbs of *being*, *becoming*, *seeming*, *calling*, *making*, *appointing*, *considering*, *thinking*, *choosing*, &c.

He is a *man*. I offer my *friend* as *witness*.
The *man* becomes *troublesome*. He calls *him* an *uncle*.
He is appointed *general*. I take *him* for a *father*.

646. 'Yn apposition.'—In Welsh, the *second nominatives* and *second accusatives* are preceded by the particle '*yn*,' which from the function it performs of setting words in apposition may be denominated '*yn*[1] *apposition*.'

(*a*) In English *a*, *an*, *as*, and *for*, are sometimes used where in Welsh *yn* would be employed.

"I offer him *as* witness"=cynnygiaf ef *yn* dyst.

To these may be added the prep. *into;* and the particle *in*, which in certain cases is exactly equivalent to *yn*, and probably of the same origin.

"Letters are divided *into* vowels and consonants"=*yn* llafariaid a chydseiniaid.

---

[1] *Yn* is probably a participle, signifying *being*, and of cognate origin with the Greek participle ὤν.

"Ye shall have their carcases *in* abomination"—*yn* ffieidd-dra.
"And smoke to roll in dusky wreaths"=*yn* amdyrch tywyllion.

(*b*) In Greek the prep. *εἰς* is sometimes found where *yn* would be employed in Welsh.

Ἀποβήσεται . . . εἰς μαρτύριον = *yn dystiolaeth.* S. Luke xxi. 13.
Πώλους εἰς δασμὸν τρεφομένους = *yn deyrnged.*—Xen.

647. The particle *yn* is used when the apposition word is an *indefinitive noun* or *adjective.* Thus *yn*, with regard to its indefinite character, resembles *a* and *an;* but *yn* can be employed before plural nouns and before predicative adjectives, whereas *a* and *an* cannot.

Examples of *yn* before the *second nominative.*

Nid yw *y rhai hyn yn feddwon.* Acts ii. 15.
Yr hwn a wnaed *yn ben* i'r gongl. Acts iv. 11.
Y mae *Arthur yn frenin* doeth.
Bydded ei *drigfan* ef *yn ddiffaethwch.* Acts i. 20.

Examples of *yn* before the *second accusative.*

A Duw a alwodd y *goleuni yn ddydd.* Gen. i. 5.
Hyd oni osodwyf dy *elynion yn droedfainc.* Acts ii. 35.
Hwn a ddyrchafodd Duw . . . *yn Dywysog.* Acts v. 31.
Pa ham y gosodaist *fi yn nod* i ti? Job vii. 20.

648. If the word following the copula be a participle, an adverb, or a preposition with its case, *yn* cannot be used; as,

Efe sydd *yn rhyfela.* Efe sydd *yma.* Efe sydd *gyda'r gwaith.*

649. But if the apposition is an adjective, *yn* may be used, even when the adjective is preceded by qualifying adverbs; as,

Y mae Arthur *yn dra dysgedig, Arthur is very learned.*
Y mae Arthur *yn wir ddysgedig, Arthur is truly learned.*

(*a*) ☞ *Mòr* and *cỳn*, which precede the equal degree, cannot be preceded by *yn.*

Arthur sydd *mor enwog* [not *yn mor enwog*].
Arthur sydd *cyn enwoced* [not *yn cyn enwoced*].

650. Government.—*Yn* governs all the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh*, in the *middle* sound. *Ll* and *rh* retain the *radical.*

Y mae Arthur *yn g*awr ac *yn b*en ar bawb.
Penodwyd Arthur *yn f*renin.
Ll and *rh.* Y mae hwn *yn ll*yfr hardd, ac *yn rh*ad.

651. Position.—*Yn* immediately precedes the word or words forming the apposition. If an adjective precede the apposition noun, *yn* stands before the adjective; if an adverb precede the apposition adjective, *yn* stands before the adverb.

Dafydd sydd *yn ddyn.* Dafydd sydd *yn hen* ddyn.
Dafydd sydd *yn ddysgedig.* Dafydd sydd *yn wir* ddysgedig.

652. In ordinary discourse, whether the verb or subject precede, the apposition words are made to follow.

Bydd hyn *yn arwydd.* Hyn a fydd *yn arwydd.*
Cyfrifir Arthur *yn ddysgedig.* Arthur a gyfrifir *yn ddysgedig.*
Cafodd Arthur geiniog *yn wobr.*

(*a*) Sometimes the first nom. and first accus. are omitted.

Bu [*efe*] yn llwyddiannus. Y maent [*hwy*] yn anffodiog.

Efe a ollyngodd [*y dyn*] yn rhydd iddynt, yr hwn a fwriasid yng ngharchar. S. Luke xxiii. 25.

653. The apposition nom. sometimes takes the first place in the clause. Here the particle *yn* may be, and most frequently is omitted, the apposition word resuming its *radical* sound.

Yn ddysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur, *or*, *D*ysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur.
*N*oeth y daethym o groth fy mam. Job i. 21.

(*a*) *Yn* affects the particle '*a*' in the same way as a preposition does: hence if the predicate with *yn*, expressed or understood, goes before the verb, '*a*' is changed into '*y*' or '*yr*:' thus,

Arthur *a* gyfrifir yn ddysgedig.

Yn ddysgedig *y* cyfrifir Arthur. Dysgedig *y* cyfrifir Arthur.

The pres. *wyf*, &c., and imperf. *oeddwn*, &c., of *bod*, however, do not admit of the particle. [See § 721.]

Cyfiawn ydyw Arthur [not *yr* ydyw].
Cyfiawn oedd Arthur [not *yr* oedd].

654. Sometimes the apposition nominative and apposition accusative precede the first nominative and first accusative.

Gwnaf *yn ddyfnion* eu dyfroedd hwynt. Ezek. xxxii. 14.
Hwnw a geidw *yn fyw* ei enaid. Ezek. xviii. 27.
Y maent yn gwneuthur *yn llydain* eu phylacterau. S. Matt. xxiii. 5.
A gyfrifwn *yn lân* un *â* chlorianau anwir? Micah vi. 11.

(*a*) In poetry the apposition word sometimes intervenes between the first nom. or first accus., and the verb; as,

"Y fesen *yn dderwen* a ddaw," *the acorn will become an oak.*

655. Omission of yn.—It has been remarked that *yn* may be omitted when the predicate takes the first place in the clause. It should be further noted that, in connection with *bod*, it is often omitted even when the predicate follows the subject and verb.

Ti wyt ben=*yn ben.* A'u tafod sydd dwyllodrus=*yn dwyllodrus.*
Ei air oedd ddigonol=*yn ddigonol.* Nid yw hyn ran fawr=*yn rhan fawr.*

(*a*) Here the predicate has its initial in the *middle* sound, although *yn* is omitted. (Ei air oedd *dd*igonol.) Sometimes, however, the predicate is put in the *radical*; as,

I'r dyn a fyddo *d*a. Eccles. ii. 26.
Gwr da a fydd *t*rugarog fwyn.—E. Prys.
A safed yn ei burdeb cyssefin pan fyddo *c*yfansawdd.—Tegid.

(*b*) Though *yn* governs *ll* and *rh* in the *radical* (§ 650), yet when *yn* is omitted, *ll* and *rh* take the *middle* sound. (Efe oedd *l*ywydd. Nid yw hyn *r*an fawr.)

656. *a*) *Exception.*—The infinitive *bod*, and the inflections *mae* and *maent*, do not admit of the omission of *yn*.

Am ei fod *yn fychan*. S. Luke xix. 2. [Not am ei *fod fychan*.]
Y mae *yn rhydd* i mi. Y maent *yn arwyddion*.

657. *b*) *Exception.*—When the subject is a noun, and the order of the sentence is *verb, subject, predicate*, '*yn*' should be retained, in order to prevent ambiguity.

Bydd Dafydd *yn frenin*. (Not 'Bydd Dafydd *frenin*.')

INFINITIVE MOOD.

658. The infinitive mood is of very extensive usage in the Welsh language. It may be translated into English sometimes by '*to*' with infinitive; sometimes by a verbal noun; and sometimes by a finite verb with or without a governing particle.

659. "It may be found in any position competent for a noun to occupy. Thus it may be the subject of discourse, or objective to the verb; it may be followed by an adjective, or governed by a preposition."[1] [With this usage of the infinitive compare the Greek.]

a) Infinitive as *subject of a verb*.

Dilyn drygioni a dywys i angeu, *the following of evil leads to death*.
Gweddus oedd iddo ef *berffeithio*. Rhaid yw *cymmeryd* poen.

"Caled ydyw *peidio* caru,
Caled hefyd *gwneuthur* hyny."—D. S. Evans.

β) Infinitive as *possessive case*.

Lloriau *dyrnu, threshing-floors*. Amser *hau, sowing-time*.

γ) Infinitive as *object to a verb*.

Dymunaf *ddysgu, I wish to learn*.
Mi a geisiaf *ymroddi, I will endeavour to devote myself*.
Efe a ddichon *gynnorthwyo*. Heb. ii. 18.

---

[1] Hughes on "Syntax."

δ) Infinitive as *object of a preposition.*

Wedi *marw* ei dad. Acts vii. 4. [Cf. Gr. *μετὰ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ.*]

Wrth *ddarostwng.* Heb. ii. 8. [Gr. *ἐν τῷ ὑποτάξαι.*]
Fy mryd ar *geisio.* Trwy *rodio* ger dy fron.
Heb *ddal* ar chwedlau. O'u *cadw* y mae gwobr lawer.

ε) Infinitive *with adjective.*

Canu da, *good singing.* *Disgwyl* ofnadwy, *fearful expectation.*

660. A noun or pronoun under government of a preposition often intervenes between the finite verb and the infinitive.

Erfyniais *ar Arthur* fy nghymmhorth.
Perodd *i mi* ddyfod ato.

(*a*) Here the infin. may be considered as both the object of the finite verb, and as the verb of the noun or pronoun under government.

661. The Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition '*i*,' *to.*

Daethym yma *i weled* Arthur. Dysgodd *i mi ddarllen.*
Ymroddodd *i feddwi.*

(*a*) After some transitive verbs it is optional whether the prep. '*i*' comes between the finite verb and the noun (or pron.) or between the noun (or pron.) and the infinitive: thus we may say,

Dysgodd *fi i ddarllen*, or, Dysgodd *i mi ddarllen.*
Cynghoraf *chwi i ddyfod*, or, Cynghoraf *i chwi ddyfod.*

662. Observation on 'i' before the Infinitive. — The remark of some grammarians, that "*i* is the sign of the Infinitive mood, like '*to*' in English," has a tendency to mislead the reader, as the former does not correspond to the latter except in certain cases.

663. *I* is *not* used before the Infinitive in the following circumstances.

a) When the Infinitive is the nominative to a verb, or an apposition (or predicative) nominative.

Dilyn drygioni a dywys i angeu = *to follow evil will lead to death.*
Cael ei wasanaethu ef sydd yn anrhydedd.
Bwriad y llyfr yw *rhoddi* hanes am frenhinoedd.
Eu harfer hwy ydyw *ffrostio* yn ddigywilydd.

b) When the Infinitive is the object to a verb.

Gregorius a benderfynodd fyned, *Gregorius determined to go.*
Haeddodd ei *gospi.* Haeddodd *gael* ei gospi.
Gall Dafydd *ddyfod.* Medraf *ysgrifenu.*

c) When the preposition is put before the accusative of the person.

Perodd *i Arthur dewi* = *he ordered to Arthur be silent; he ordered Arthur to be silent.*
Gorchymmynais *i ti aros.* Gofynodd *i mi ddyfod.*
Caniataodd *i'r dyn fyned.* Gwna *i ni gredu hyn.*
Nyni yn ufudd a atolygwn *i Ti roddi* dy râs.—Com. Prayer.
Ni ddigwyddodd *i'm llygaid ganfod* mo honoch.—Gor. Owen.

664. The principal use of '*i*' before the Infinitive is to denote object, motive or purpose = *in order that.* It occurs in the following circumstances.

a) When the Infinitive depends on a substantive or an adjective.

Cais *i dwyllo, an attempt to deceive.* Gallu *i ddyfod, power to come.*
Tuedd *i roi, an inclination to give.* Dyfodiad *i farnu, a coming to judge.*
Parod *i ateb, ready to answer.* Abl *i wneuthur, able to do.*
Addas *i esgyn, fit to ascend.* Teilwng *i fyned, worthy to go.*
Y fath gyfleusdra *i fyned* i Fon.—Gor. Owen.
Mae genyf ryw awydd diwala *i ddysgu.*—Gor. Owen.

b) When the preceding verb is followed by a noun or pronoun in the accusative; and after passive and intransitive verbs, denoting object or purpose.

Cynghoraf chwi *i ddyfod, I advise you to come.*
Heriaf ef *i ddadlu* â mi. Galluogodd fi *i fyned.*
Annogodd y dynion *i geisio* maddeuant.
Dysgwyd ef *i ddarllen, he was taught to read.*
Mi a droais *i edrych, I turned to see* = *that I might see.*
Daethym yma *i adrodd* hanesyn.
Llwyddais *i weled* fy nghyfaill.
Cyttunodd â mi *i fyned* yno.—Gor. Owen.

c) After the tenses of *Bod*, to be, when *possibility, duty, futurity*, &c., is implied.

Mae'r gair *i'w weled* yn y llyfr, *the word is to be* (= *may be*) *seen in the book.*
Yr oedd y dyn *i gychwyn* ddoe.
Yr oedd Efe *i ddyfod* y ffordd hono. S. Luke xix. 4. [Greek ἤμελλε διέρχεσθαι.]

665. The following clauses (which will be explained more minutely hereafter) may have the Infin. as their principal verb.

Trans. Gwelais *fod Arthur yno.*
Time. Aethym ymaith *wedi gweled o honof Arthur.*
Cause. *O herwydd i Arthur ddyfod.*
Motive. Daethym yma *i weled Arthur.*
Concess. *Er i Arthur ddyfod yma.*

666. 'When two or more verbs are coupled together, as dependent on the same conjunction, the first verb only will, in Welsh, be put in the indicative or the subjunctive mood, and the *second* and following verbs will be used in their *radical* forms [*i.e., the infin.*] If the subject of the second and other verbs be different from that of the first, it will, if a noun, be connected with its verb by the preposition *o*, or, if a pronoun, by a proper pronominal inflection of *o honof.*'[1]

667. If the subject of the verb be not changed, the preposition with a noun or pron. may or may not be employed: if the subject be changed, it should for the sake of perspicuity be inserted.

a) *Subject not changed.*

Fel y derbynier ef i arch Eglwys Crist, a *gallu o hono* fordwyo.—Com. Prayer.
Pan y'th ddygo yr Arglwydd dy Dduw . . . *a gyru o hono.* Deut. vii. 1.
Tra yr elwyf a *gweddïo* acw. S. Matt. xxvi. 36.
Pan ddychwelo'r annuwiol, a *gwneuthur* barn. Ezek. xviii. 27.

b) *Subject changed.*

Pan ddelych gyda ni, a *dyfod o'r daioni hwnw.* Num. x. 32.
Od aeth neb o honoch ar gyfeiliorn, a *throi o rywun ef.* S. James v. 19.
Os gwyrodd fy ngherddediad, a *myned o'm calon* ar ol fy llygaid. Job xxxi. 7.
Pan ddelo trallod i gyfarfod â ni, a *pheri o gystudd i* ni deimlo.—Nicander.

668. Government.—The Infinitive, if *immediately* followed by its object, governs it in the *radical* sound; but if an *intervenient word* or *phrase* separates the object from the infinitive, the object will be put in the *middle* sound.

Gwneuthur cyfiawnder. Casâu *d*rygioni.
Gwneuthur *o gydwybod g*yfiawnder. Casâu *mewn gwirionedd dd*rygioni.

*** For further explanation, see §§ 592–594.

The Infinitive passive: see §§ 608–612.

PARTICIPLES.

669. Participles have the same influence over their object as the infinitive verb has; that is, they govern the *radical* sound.

---

[1] Hughes on "Syntax."

670. The *present* participle is formed by setting before the infinitive verb *yn; gàn* (*càn*); *dàn* or *tàn:* the *past* by *gwedi* (*cwedi*), *wedi; ar ol* or *yn ol:* and the *future* by *ar* or *ar fedr.*

The difference between **yn, gan,** *and* **dan.**

671. *α*) *Yn* with infinitive forms the participle employed in periphrastic verbs. In this circumstance *gan* and *dan* can never be used.

Y mae efe *yn dysgu.* Dafydd sydd *yn myned.*

(*a*) If the participle precedes the verb, *yn* is most usually omitted. Dysgu y mae efe.

β) *Yn* with infinitive may stand in apposition to a noun or pron. in any case.

Nom. { *Efe* a fu yno *yn ei demtio* gan Satan. S. Mark i. 13.
Ni fedra *Cymro yn meddu* deall cyffredin, byth gam-osod yr acen.—Tegid.

Gen. Llef *un yn llefain* yn y diffaethwch. S. Mark i. 3.

Accus. { Mi a glywais *lef yn dywedyd.* Job iv. 16.
Mewn *pethau yn perthyn* i Dduw. Heb. ii. 17.

γ) *Yn* with infinitive is used in the *case absolute.*

A Duw yn cyd-dystiolaethu. Heb. ii. 4.
A hwy yn gweled, nid ydynt yn gweled.

672. *α*) *Gan* (or *can*).—"When the participle explains the act implied in another verb, *gan* is used."[1]

Efe, *gan ateb,* a ddywedodd.
Duw a orchymmynodd, *gan ddywedyd.*

β) When intensity or certainty is to be expressed in past or future time, this is done by *gan* with infin., accompanied by the same verb in a finite mood.

Gan ddyfod y daw, nid oeda. Hab. ii. 3.
Gan fendithio y'th fendithiaf. Gen. xxii. 17.
O gan bwyso na phwysid fy ngofid. Job vi. 2.
Gan ddryllio yr ymddrylliodd y ddaiar, *gan rwygo* yr ymrwygodd y ddaiar, *gan symmud* yr ymsymmudodd y ddaiar. Is. xxiv. 19.

γ) *Gan* with infin. is for the most part set in apposition to a noun or pron. in the *nominative* case.

Thus in the sentence, "Yna y dyry y mab fodrwy i'r ferch, *gan ei dodi* ar y llyfr," the participle *gan ei dodi* refers to *mab,* being the nominative, not to the word *ferch,* which is in the accusative.

(*a*) The form *càn* occurs after *a,* and, as; and after *na,* nor, than: in other circumstances the form *gàn* is preferred.

---

[1] Hughes on Syntax.

673. *Dan* or *tan* with infin. implies that an act is *continuous*, extending over the space of time occupied by the finite verb.

Dyna hi yn myned *tan ganu*. *Tan ymdyru* ataf.
Bwyty *dan chwyrnu*. Aeth ymaith *dan felldithio*.

(*a*) *Tàn* occurs after *a*, and, as; and after *na*, nor, than: in other circumstances it is immaterial whether this, or the lighter form *dàn*, be used.

674. The participle "*having*" will be expressed in Welsh by *â* or *ag* (or *a*, *ac*) with an inflection of *genyf* (or *cenyf*) = *with me*, or of *i mi* = *for me*.

Os yw neb yn ddiargyhoedd, *a chanddo blant ffyddlawn*. Titus i. 6.
Ag aur ganddynt. Job iii. 15. Dinas *ac iddi sylfeini*. Heb. xi. 10.
Pa fodd yr oedd yn treulio ei amser, *ac yntau heb lyfrau ganddo*. —Nicander.

675. If an adverb intervene between the particle and the infinitive, the adverb will have its sound regulated by the particle, while the infinitive will be put in the *middle* sound.

Yn *p*eraidd *g*anu. Gan *b*eraidd *g*anu. Dan *b*eraidd *g*anu.
Wedi *p*eraidd *g*anu. Ar *b*eraidd *g*anu.

ADVERBS.

676. Position.—Some adverbs have one and only one place assigned to them in all sentences.

Adverbs of negation immediately precede the negatived words; as, *Ni ddaeth* yma; *Nid yma* y daeth; *Nid efe* a ddaeth.

Adverbs of interrogation begin the sentence; as, *A* ddaeth eich brawd? *Sut* y mae eich brawd?

Adverbs of comparison (except *iawn* and *digon*) immediately precede the adjectives and adverbs modified by them; as, *Tra doeth* yw Arthur.

The *auxiliary affirmative adverbs* immediately precede finite verbs: Efe *a ddaeth;* yn awr *y daeth*.

677. But adverbs of *quality*, of *number*, *order*, *place*, *time*, *quantity*, and of *doubting*, will, in general, have their position determined by emphasis. "They may either precede or

follow the verb, the subject, and the object, or come between them. The words

'Dos *nesnes* i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail glêd rhed *yn rhwydd*'

may also be expressed thus—

Nesnes dos i'r cynnhesrwydd, i'r adail gled *yn rhwydd* rhed.
Nesnes i'r cynnhesrwydd dos, rhed *yn rhwydd* i'r adail gled.
I'r cynnhesrwydd *nesnes* dos, rhed i'r adail gled *yn rhwydd*."[1]

The following classes of adverbs require a more detailed explanation.

Adverbs of negation.

678. The negative adverbs *ni, nid, nis, na, nad, nas, nac,* immediately precede the words to which they belong. They all negative *finite* verbs, except *nid* and *nad,* which negative other words also. [See § 683.]

679. The following are used before *finite* verbs having *consonant* initials : *ni, nis, na, nas.*

(*a*) *Ni* and *na* are, however, often found before words that begin radically with vowels; as,

Pa ham *na* ysgrifenwch, *why do you not write?*
O *na* argreffid hwynt mewn llyfr! Job xix. 23.

680. *Ni* and *na* govern the *first* class of mutable consonants (*c, p, t*) in the *aspirate;* the *second* (*g, b, d*) and *third* (*ll, m, rh*) in the *middle.* *Nis* and *nas* govern the *radical* of all classes.

(1st cl.) Ni *ch*ar, ni *ph*aid, ac ni *th*aw efe.
(2nd cl.) Ni ofala (rad. *gofala*), ni *f*eiddia, ac ni *dd*aw.
(3rd cl.) Ni *l*einw, ni *f*eithrin, ac ni *r*eola.
Nis *c*ar, nis *g*ofala, ac nis *ll*einw.

(*a*) The inflections of the verb *bod* are, after *ni* and *na*, put sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical.*

Ni *f*ydd efe yno. Dywedodd na *f*u ei frawd yno.
Efe a weddïodd na *b*yddai wlaw, ac ni *b*u gwlaw. S. James v. 17.
Ac ni *f*ydd flin genym o'n rhan ninnau.—Theo. Evans.

(*b*) The above example "*ni ofala,*" requires explanation, *ni* being here used before a vowel. It was before remarked that the *omission* of the letter *g* is the sign of its *middle* sound; and as the next letter often happens to be a vowel (as in the present example), *ni* and *na*, which govern the *middle* sound, will accordingly be employed before a vowel. Some writers, however, considering this as a deviation from, rather than, as it really is, a strict adherence to rule, often employ *nid* and *nad* in such cases. (*Nid all* efe ddyfod.)

[1] Dr Pughe's Grammar, p. 122.

681. *Nid* and *nad* are placed before *finite* verbs with *vowel* initials; as,

Nid aeth efe, *he did not go.*
Dywed *nad aeth* efe, *he says that he did not go.*

682. *Na* and *nac* are used (*a*) before imperative verbs (= *μη, ne*); (*b*) in negative answers, *na* preceding a *consonant*, and *nac* a *vowel* initial. [*Na* has the same government as *ni* and *na* in § 680.]

(*a*) *Na* ladd, *kill not.* *Nac* ofna, *fear not.*
(*b*) A ydyw Arthur yna? *Nac* ydyw.

683. The preceding rules regard *finite* verbs; but if the *infinitive* verb, or *any other part of speech*, be the negatived term, *nid* and *nad* solely can be employed, which in this case may be followed by *consonants* as well as *vowels*, and will always require the *radical* sound after them.

Nid canu yr oedd. *Nid arwain* y fyddin yr oedd.
Nid bardd yw. *Nid pwyllog* yw.
Dywed *nad yno* y mae.

684. *Ni, nid, nis* (= *οὐ, non, not*), head *main clauses*, and are followed by the *Indicative* mood.

Ni ddaeth fy nghyfaill. *Nid aeth* fy nghyfaill. *Nis daeth* fy nghyfaill.

685. *Ni, nid,* and *nis* are also the negatives in simple relative clauses, when the relative heading is expressed; and in explanatory cause clauses.

Yn yr hwn *nid* oes dwyll, *in whom there is no guile.*
Canys *ni* welais erioed mo hono, *for I have never seen him.*

686. The transitives *mai* and *taw* (that) are followed by *nid;* and the suppositives *os, pe,* &c. (if), when separated from the negatives by the nominative, &c., are followed by *ni, nid, nis.*

Sylwer mai *nid* hawdd bod yn gywir. Os chwi *ni* ddeuwch.

687. *Na, nad, nas* (= *μη, that not; not*), head *subjoined clauses*, and are followed by the *Subjunctive* mood in some, and by the *Indicative* in other clauses.

Transitive clause.	Gwn *na* ddaw.
Cause clause.	O herwydd *nad* oes ganddo lyfrau.
Concessive clause.	Er *nas* clywais air oddi wrtho.
Time clause.	Pryd *nad* oedd plentyn iddo.
Motive clause.	Fel *na* phwyswn arnoch.
Effect clause.	Ffyddlawn oedd fel *na* chaed ynddo fai.
Supposition clause.	Os *nad* yw efe yn dyfod.

Indefinite relative, and simple rel. when the rel. heading is omitted.	Y neb *na* ddelo. Hwn yw'r dyn *na* wadodd.
Inter. adverbs.	Pa ham *nad* aethoch?
Wish clause.	O *nad* ysgrifenid fy ngeiriau!

688. Double negatives do not destroy one another, as they do in English. [In this the Welsh resembles the Greek.]

Nid oes na chaeth na rhydd. *Ni* chaf *na* gloes na drygfyd.
Heb na rhuthro i mewn, *na* myned allan. Ps. cxliv. 14.

689. "The adverbs *dim* and *mo* are used as a species of auxiliaries to other negatives; and sometimes both may occur together in the same sentences." [1]

Ni ddaw Dafydd *ddim* yma, *David will not come here.*
Yr hwn *nid* adnabuasai *mo* Ioseph. Ex. i. 8.
Ni fedrant ganfod *mo* ddichellion dynion.—Edw. Samuel.
Ni wiw i ti *ddim mo* son am hyny.

(*a*) *Dim* governs the radical sound; as, "Ni fynwn i *ddim* cadw'r plentyn." *Mo* governs the *middle*. "*Mo dd*ichellion."

(*b*) *Dim* (always in the *middle* sound) is employed when the subject follows the verb; and it is put after the subject, expressed or understood.

Nid ydym (ni) *ddim* yn ei adnabod, *we do not know him.*
Nis gallaf (fi) *ddim* taflu'r gareg, *I cannot throw the stone.*

When the verb is transitive, having a noun or pronoun as object, *dim* may be put after the object of the verb,—not, as in the preceding examples, after the subject; and when it occupies this position, it is often more than a mere expletive, being nearly = *at all.* [Welsh Exercises, §§ 79, 249.]

Nid adwaen i ef *ddim*, *I do not know him at all.*
Nid ydym yn eich deall chwi *ddim*, *we do not understand you at all.*

(*c*) *Mo* is a contraction of "*dim o*" = *nothing of.* It is used in connection with a transitive verb, followed by a *definitive* object. See Welsh Exercises, § 249, &c.

Nid adwaen i *mo'r* dyn = nid adwaen i y dyn.
Nid wyf yn adnabod *mo'r* dyn = nid wyf yn adnabod y dyn.
Nis medraf *mo'ch* deall chwi = nis medraf eich deall chwi.

Mo honof is a form used instead of the accusative personal pronoun: the pronoun may or may not be inserted after *mo honof.*

Nid ydynt yn adnabod *mo honoch* (chwi) = nid ydynt yn eich adnabod (chwi).

Mo and *honof* often coalesce into one word; thus,

Mo'nof = *mo honof.*	Mo'nom = *mo honom.*
Mo'not = *mo honot.*	Mo'noch = *mo honoch.*
Mo'no = *mo hono.*	Mo'nynt = *mo honynt.*
Mo'ni = *mo honi.*	

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar.

Adverbs of comparison.

690. *Cyn* (*càn*, *gàn*), *digon*, *go*, *iawn*, *lled*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, *mor*, *po*, *pur*, *rhy*, and *tra*, qualify adjectives and other adverbs; and all, except *digon* and *iawn*, precede the words qualified by them. *Iawn* always follows: *digon* generally precedes, but sometimes follows, and then assumes the *middle* sound.

Cyn ddoethed. Doeth iawn. Digon doeth, doeth ddigon.
Mi a wn yn dda *dd*igon.—D. Ionawr.

691. *Tra* governs the 1st class of mutable consonants in the *aspirate*; the 2nd and 3rd in the *radical*. *Digon*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, and *po*, govern the *radical*. The others govern the *middle*.

Tra *ch*ryf.	Tra *g*wyn.	Tra *ll*awn.
Digon cryf.	Po *m*wyaf.	Llai *g*alluog.
Cyn *g*ryfed.	Go *b*ur.	Lled *d*eg.

(*a*) *Cyn*, *mor*, and *pur*, may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*.

*Cyn l*oned or *ll*oned.	*Cyn r*wydded or *rh*wydded.
*Mor l*on or *ll*on.	*Mor r*wydd or *rh*wydd.
*Pur l*on or *ll*on.	*Pur r*wydd or *rh*wydd.

692. When they qualify adverbs, compounded of *yn* with an adjective (*e.g.*, *yn ddoeth*), they will be placed between *yn* and the adjective; as,

Llefarodd yn *bur* ddoeth. Bucheddodd yn *dra* rhinweddol.

(*a*) But *cyn* and *mor* dismiss the particle *yn*; as,

Llefarodd *cyn ddoethed*. Llefarodd *mor ddoeth*.

693. Adverbs of quality (which are formed by prefixing *yn adverbial* to a common adjective, see § 345), when they begin a sentence, generally throw off *yn*, and assume the *radical* sound. Thus, instead of saying '*yn gywir* yr atebaist,' we usually say, '*cywir* yr atebaist.'

694. Adverbs of this character, if they *immediately* precede the words modified by them, require the *middle* sound after them; as,

*Awyddus dd*isgwyliais am eich gweled.

695. There is a class of words, such as *hynod*, *neillduol*, *nodedig*, *rhagorol*, &c. (= especially, exceedingly), which may stand either before the qualified word with or without *o*, or after it.

Hynod o gymmeradwy,
Hynod gymmeradwy,
Cymmeradwy hynod, } *eminently acceptable.*

Gweithiodd y dyn yn nodedig o dda (yn nodedig dda, yn dda nodedig), *the man worked exceedingly well.*

696. Adverbs of doubting (see § 352) if they begin a sentence, are followed by a transitive clause (§ 758, &c.); but if they are placed in the middle of the sentence, they do not affect the construction.

Hwyrach *fod Arthur yn dyfod, perhaps* [*that*] *Arthur is coming.*
Arthur, hwyrach, sydd yn dyfod, *Arthur, perhaps, is coming.*

697. Adverbs of showing.—The copula "is" or "are" is included in the adverbs of showing, which are *dacw, dyma, dyna, llyma, llyna, nycha, wele.*

698. Like finite verbs, these adverbs govern the *middle* sounds of such words as depend on them.

Dyma geffyl hardd, *here is a handsome horse.*
Dacw ddau offeiriad, *yonder are two clergymen.*

Dyma and *dyna* are frequently used for demonstrative pronouns. [See §§ 201, 551.]

698 (1). Adverbs of quantity.—The adverbs *braidd, prin, bron,* and (*yn*) *agos,* require explanation.

Prin, digon prin, braidd, with *y* or *yr,* and placed *before* the finite verb, are = *hardly, scarcely.*

Ni . . prin, ni . . braidd, ni . . bron, placed *after* the finite verb, are = *hardly, scarcely.*

"It was hardly possible to cross the river."
Prin (or *braidd*) *yr* oedd yn ddichonadwy croesi'r afon.
Nid oedd *braidd* (or *prin*) yn ddichonadwy croesi'r afon. }

Os *braidd y* mae'r cyfiawn yn gadwedig, *if the righteous scarcely be saved.* 1 S. Peter iv. 18.
Braidd y bydd neb farw dros un cyfiawn, *scarcely will one die for a righteous man.* Rom. v. 7.

Braidd na, prin na, bron na, agos na, placed *before* the finite verb, are = *nearly, almost.*

Braidd, bron, (*yn*) *agos,* placed *after* the finite verb, are = *nearly, almost.*

"It was almost impossible to unlock the door."
Braidd nad oedd yn amichonadwy dadgloi'r drws.
Yr oedd *braidd* yn annichonadwy dadgloi'r drws. }

Braidd na lithrodd fy nhraed: *prin na* thripiodd fy ngherddediad, *my feet were almost gone: my treadings had well-nigh slipped.* Ps. lxxiii. 2.

(*a*) *O'r braidd* and *o'r bron* are often used instead of *braidd* and *bron*. Yr ydym *o'r bron* yn barod, *we are nearly ready.*

(*b*) *Nearly* before numerals is best expressed in Welsh by (*yn*) *agos i*. Mi a gerddais (*yn*) *agos i* ddeng milltir, *I walked nearly ten miles.*

(*c*) *Not . . nearly* will be expressed by *nid . .* (*yn*) *agos*. Nid yw efe *yn agos* mor foesgar a'i frodyr, *he is not nearly so polite as his brothers.*

(*d*) *Yn agos*, with perfect indefinite, requires the impersonal form "*bu i mi*," &c. *Bu* yn agos *i mi syrthio, I nearly fell.*

(*e*) *Bron a*, and (*yn*) *agos a*, with present of *Bod* and the infinitive of the other verb, are in some cases = *perfect definite:* so also will these adverbs, with the first future of *Bod* and the infinitive of the other verb, express the *future-perfect*. Yr ydym *bron a* gorphen, *we have nearly finished.* Byddwn (*yn*) *agos a* gorphen, *we shall have nearly finished.*

[These adverbs are more fully exemplified in the Welsh Exercises, Ch. 50.]

Auxiliary affirmative adverbs.

699. The particles of affirmation, called by the old grammarian *Edeyrn* "rhagweision berfau," are *a, y, yr*, and formerly *yd* and *ydd*. They immediately precede *finite* verbs in affirmative sentences.

700. A is a mere expletive, and has no equivalent in English.[1] It is placed immediately before the verb, when the subject or the object, either alone, or accompanied by other words, goes before the verb.

Subject preceding. Duw *a* greodd y byd. Y doeth *a* wrendy.
Efe *a* gyfrifir yn ddysgedig. Duw pob gras *a*'ch perffeithio chwi.
Yr hwn o'th ddwyfol ddarbodaeth *a* osodaist.—Com. Prayer.

Object preceding. Yr us *a* lysg efe. Yr hwn *a* darewaist ti.
Ti, Dduw, *a* folŵn. Ammheu *a* wnaethant.

(*a*) Compare Armoric and Cornish. *Arm.*, "Pe tra benag *a* lafaro" (= pa dra bynag a lafaro), *whatsoever he saith.* S. John ii. 5. *Corn.*, "Mi *a* dhanfon," *I will send:* "mi *a* wŏr," *I know.*—(Gerlyvyr Cernewec, s.v. "*A.*")

(*b*) When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs (see § 598, &c.), and are preceded by *a*, they are written thus:

Sing. A'm = *a ym.*	Pl. A'n = *a ein.*
A'th = *a yth.*	A'ch = *a eich.*
A'i = *a ei.*	A'u = *a eu.*

Efe *a'm* tarawodd, *he struck me.*

---

[1] It is a most erroneous observation, made even by the learned Tegid, that *a*, as a verbal agent, corresponds to *will* and *did* in English.—("Defence of Welsh Orthography," p. 17.) Dr. Davies very properly remarks, "A item est adverbium seu particula verbis preposita *nihil significans.*"

(*c*) If the verb precede, the particle is not employed. Creodd Duw y byd. Cyfrifir ef yn ddysgedig.

701. The present Indic. of *bod*, and the imperfect tense *oeddwn*, &c., do not require the particle when the subject precedes.

Myfi *wyf* yn rhedeg, *I am running.*
Arthur *oedd* yno, *Arthur was there.*
Dyn *sydd* debyg i wagedd. Ps. cxliv. 4.

(*a*) But the particle *y* is sometimes found before *sydd*.

Bywyd y byd *y* sydd ar ddyfod.—Com. Prayer.
Gan fy nghas *y* sydd o'm cwmpas innau.—Edm. Prys.

702. If, in conjoined clauses, *a* occurs in the first, it will be repeated in the clauses that follow, unless the order of construction be changed.

Ni *a* awn i gyfryw ddinas, ac *a* aroswn, ac *a* farchnatawn, ac *a* ynnillwn. S. James iv. 13.

(*a*) If, however, the particle does not occur in the first clause, it is questionable whether it may be properly inserted in the second, unless the subject or object precede it. The sentence, "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *a*'u hachub hwynt," would, in the opinion of some good critics, be more correctly expressed thus: "Gwrendy eu llefain ac achub hwynt;" or "Gwrendy eu llefain ac *efe a*'*u* hachub hwynt."

703. When the auxiliary pronouns *fe*, *fo*, *e*, are placed before verbs, *a* may or may not be employed.

Fe a gospir y dyn; or *fe* gospir y dyn, *the man will be punished.*
Fe a'*m* tarawodd â chareg; or *fe*'m tarawodd â chareg.

704. In a sentence, where the verb is negatived, *a* is dispensed with; but if the subject or object be the negatived term, then *a* is employed.

Verb negatived. Yr hwn ni ddêl. (*Aff.* Yr hwn *a* ddêl.)
Subject negatived. Nid hwn *a* ddêl, ond arall.
Object negatived. Nid yr us *a* lysg efe â thân.

705. *A* is put before vowel and consonant initials, and is followed by the *middle* sound; as,

Arthur *a aeth* ymaith. Arthur *a ddaeth* yma.

706. As *a* is a mere expletive, it is very often omitted; but the verb still takes the *middle* sound.

Nos *d*aenodd dros ei lygaid, *night spread over his eyes.*—D. S. Evans.
Amser y cenhedloedd *f*ydd efe, *it shall be the time of the heathen.* Ezek. xxx. 3.

(*a*) But when in a relative clause the relative heading is omitted, *a* is then almost invariably inserted.

Gwelais y dyn *a* laddwyd. Gwelais y dyn *a* laddasant.

707. **Y** and **yr** (formerly **yd** and **ydd**) are used when the preceding words are antithetical. They are often equivalent to the English phrase "*it is.*"

(*a*) The oldest forms of these particles seem to be *yd* and *ydd* (= Lat. *id*, Eng. *it*), which are probably old pronouns standing as nominative to a suppressed inflection of *bod;* such as *yw* or *ys*. If this conjecture be right, the meaning now assigned to them is etymologically correct. (*Ydd ys=id est=it is.*)

708. *Yr* is put before a *vowel; y* before a *consonant*, and governs the *radical* sound; *ydd* before a *vowel; yd* before a *vowel* or *consonant*, and governs the *middle* sound of the consonant.

Hwyr *yr e*rys Duw cyn taro,
Llwyr *y d*ial pan y delo.
Cyflym *ydd a* rym yr *o*es.—Gor. Owen.
Basaf dwfr man *yd l*efair.—Adage.

709. It has been remarked that *a* is used when the subject or the object of the verb precedes it (§ 700); *y* and *yr*, on the contrary, should be employed *when the subject and object follow the verb*, but some other part of the sentence precedes it; as,

710. *α*) *A preposition with its case.*

Yn y dechreuad y creodd Duw y nefoedd, *in the beginning God created the heavens.*
Arno yntau y blodeua ei goron. *I gredu yr hyn* y gorfodir fi.

(*a*) The participial signs *yn*, *gan*, and *dan*, are regarded here as prepositions: hence if they with their case precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn darllen y bum. *Dan ganu yr* aeth.

Yn is most generally omitted; yet *y* is still used. *Darllen y* bum.

(*b*) '*Yn apposition*' also is regarded as a preposition: hence if it, expressed or understood, precede the verb, *y* or *yr* will be employed.

Yn bla y cawsom y gwr hwn. *Dysgedig y* cyfrifir Arthur.

But if *yn* be omitted before certain tenses of *bod, a* will be used. See below.

711. In relative and interrogative clauses the prep. is frequently placed after the verb, the governed word occupying the first place; but the particle will still precede the verb, independently of the position assigned to the preposition.

Y wlad *yr hon y*'m ganed *ynddi*. *Yr hwn y* mae y mab *ganddo*.
Beth y gorfodir fi *i'w gredu? Pa beth y* daethoch i ymoralw *am dano?*

(*a*) The relative heading is often omitted, and sometimes the prep. also.

Y wlad [*yr hon*] *y* daethost allan o honi.
Yn y dydd [*yn yr hwn*] *y* gwnaeth yr Arglwydd y ddaiar.
Ym mhob cyflwr [*yr hwn*] *y* byddom [*ynddo*].

(*b*) The prep. is usually omitted before words signifying duration or part of time or space, &c.

Llawer gwaith y'm cystuddiwyd. *Wythnos yr* arosais.

712. β) *An adverb* or *an adverbial phrase.*

Yma y daeth. *Yno yr* aeth. *Toc y* darfu.
Echdoe y gwelais ef. *Ebrwydd yr* aeth ymaith.

(*a*) When the adverb is not antithetic, the particle may in most cases be left out.

Antithetic. Yno y bûm innau. *Simple.* Yno bum innau.

713. γ) *A conjunction;* such as,

Fel, mal, fal, megys, modd; nag; pryd, pryd bynag, nes, hyd, hyd nes; *ag* and its compounds *cyhŷd ag, cyn gynted ag*, &c. [☞ §§ 806, 810, 814.]

Fel y bernid hwy. *Modd y* delom o'r diwedd.
Yr ydych yn gryfach *nag y* tybiais. *Pryd yr* atebodd.
Hyd nes y daeth. *Cyhŷd ag yr* erys. *Cyn gynted ag y* daw.

(*a*) *Pan* and *tra* may or may not be followed by *y*. It is occasionally found after *os* and *pe*.

Pan y'm cerydder. *Pan* ddaeth fy mrawd.

(*b*) When *y* is put after conjunctions, its antithetical force (=*it is*) is scarcely, if at all, discernible.

714. δ) *A word in the possessive case.* — *Y* is used in a relative clause where the possessive precedes, and the nominative follows the verb. [See § 875.]

Y rhai y llefara eu *geneu* wagedd. Y rhai *yr* oedd Daniel *yn benaf* o honynt.

715. ε) When a subjoined clause precedes the main one, the particle is sometimes found before the verb of the latter.

Ac wedi iddynt ei fflangellu, *y* lladdant ef. S. Luke xviii. 33.
Pan ddaeth cyflawnder yr amser, *y* danfonodd Duw ei Fab. Gal. iv. 4.

716. But if the subject precede the verb, the particle *a* should be employed, even though other words precede.

Yn hyn *Ioan a* ragorodd, *in this John excelled.*

717. In conjoined sentences, if *y* occurs in the first, it

will be repeated in the following clauses, unless the order be changed.

Fel *y* bernid hwy ac *y* byddent fyw. 1 S. Peter iv. 6.

718. In an Imperative clause, or in a negative where the verb is negatived, *y* is never employed, notwithstanding other words precede.

Imper. *Yna* gwybyddwch, *then know.*
Neg. *Yma* ni ddaw eich brawd. (*Pos.* *Yma y* daw eich brawd.)

719. When the poss. pronouns are placed before verbs, and are preceded by *y*, they are thus written:

Sing.	Y'm = *y ym.*	Pl.	Y'n = *y ein.*
	Y'th = *y yth.*		Y'ch = *y eich.*
	Y'i = *y ei.*		Y'u = *y eu.*

720. *Inflections of* BOD.—If '*yn apposition*' be omitted before a predicative noun or adjective, the tenses of *bod* (except pres. *wyf*, &c., and imperf. *oeddwn*, &c.) will be preceded by *a;* as,

Bendigedig a fyddo'r Arglwydd. *Brenin a* fum.

721. The pres. *wyf*, &c., and the imperf. *oeddwn*, &c., will admit of no particle; as,

Gweddus yw mawl. *Brenin oedd* y gwr.

722. But if the pres. *wyf*, &c. or the imperf. *oeddwn*, &c., begin the sentence, it will be preceded by *y* or *yr*.

Yr wyf yn myned. *Yr oeddwn* yn myned.

(*a*) Before *mae*, is, and *maent*, are, the particle is very often dispensed with. *Mae* Arthur yn filwr dewr. *Maent* hwy yn siarad yn gall.

(*b*) ☞ The form **wyf**, &c., and **oeddwn**, &c., have *yr* always before them except when they are preceded (1) by *the subject;* (2) by *the predicate;* (3) by *negative, suppositive,* or *interrogative particles.*

(1) Myfi wyf yn ddyn. (2) Dyn wyf fi.
(3) Nid wyf yn ddyn. Os wyf yn ddyn. A ydwyf fi yn ddyn?

With these exceptions, the tenses of *bod* will be preceded by *a* and *y*, according to the rules laid down respecting other verbs.

Adverbs of Interrogation. [See *Interrogative clause*, § 816, &c.]

CONJUNCTIONS.

723. Most conjunctions stand at the beginning of the sentences to which they belong; but some, as in other languages, may occupy any other place.

724. "Some of the conjunctions have merely a literal difference, to afford means of avoiding every hiatus and discordant sound."[1] These are *a*, *ac* = and; *a*, *ag* = as; *na*, *nac* = nor; *na*, *nag* (and formerly *no*, *nog*) = than; and also the conditional conjunctions, *o*, *od*; *pe*, *ped* = if; *oni*, *onid* = if not.

725. *A*, and, as; *na*, nor, than; and *no*, than, precede words with *consonant* initials; and govern the *first* class in the *aspirate;* the *second* and *third* in the *radical.*

(1st) Bara *a chaws.* Cyn goched *a thân.* Nid oes genyf nac arian *na phres.*

(2nd and 3rd) Bara *a gwin.* Gwell *na bywyd.*

"Gwell *no gwen* y wawr i mi."—D. S. Evans.

726. *Ac*, and; *ag*, as; *nac*, nor; *nag* and *nog*, than, precede words with *vowel* initials.

Aur *ac arian.* Y mae mor enwog *ag unrhyw* wlad.

(*a*) But before certain words,—chiefly adverbs, prepositions, and other conjunctions beginning with *f*, *h*, *m*, or *n*, the forms *ac*, *nac*, &c., are usually preferred to *a*, *na*, &c.

Ac fe ddaw. *Ac fel* hyn. *Ac megys. Ac nid. Ac hefyd.*

(*b*) The Infin. *bod*, when implying '*that . . is*,' and *darfod* = '*that . . has*,' have the twofold construction of *a bod* and *ac fod; a darfod* and *ac ddarfod.*

727. The disjunctive *neu*, or, governs the *middle* sound; *ynte*, or, *ai*, or, and its compounds *naill ai*, *un ai*, &c., govern the *radical.*

Dyn *neu ddynes. Naill ai dyn ynte dynes.*

(*a*) *Neu* governs a finite verb in the *radical* sound. "Dos allan *neu tyred* i mewn."

728. The adversatives *ond*, *onid*, *eithr*, *oddi eithr*, *oddi gerth*, *namyn*, and *heb. law*, when followed by mutable consonants, govern the *radical* sound.

Nid oes genyf *ond ceisio.* Nid yw efe *ond dyn.*

(*a*) But when they are followed by an Infin. equivalent to *that* with a *finite verb* (*e.g.*, Gwn ei *fod* yno, *I know that he is there*), the initial of the verb may or may not be softened. This is especially the case with *bod*, to be, and *darfod*, to have done.

Nis gwn ddim ond *fod* Arthur yno: or, Nis gwn ddim ond *bod* Arthur yno.

Nis gwn ddim ond *ddarfod* iddo ddweyd: *or*, Nis gwn ddim ond *darfod* iddo ddweyd.

☞ The conjunctions which introduce *supposition*, *concession*, *cause*, *motive*, *effect*, *transitive* and *time clauses*, will be treated of hereafter.

---

[1] Dr. Pughe's Grammar.

729. Some conjunctions and adverbs have other conjunctions corresponding to them in the same or in the following sentence; such as,

a) Fel *or* megys . . . felly=*as . . . so.*
b) Felly . . . fel=*so . . . that.*
c) Er . . . eto *or* er hyny=*although . . . yet.*
d) Pe . . . eto *or* er hyny=*if . . . yet.*
e) Mor *or* cyn . . . a *or* ag=*as . . . as.*
f) Mwy . . . na *or* nag=*more . . . than.*
g) Mor *or* cyn . . . fel *or* nes=*so . . . that.*
h) Na *or* nac . . . na *or* nac=*neither . . . nor.*
i) Naill ai . . . ai, neu, ynte, ai ynte, *or* neu ynte=*either . . . or.*
j) A *or* ai . . . ai, neu, &c.=*whether . . . or.*
k) Pa un a *or* ai . . . ai, neu, &c.=*whether . . . or.*
l) Pa un bynag a *or* ai . . . ai, neu, &c=*whether . . . or.*

Note.—A is placed before *finite* verbs; *ai* under all other circumstances.

a) *Fel* y gwnawn, *felly* y cawn (*as . . so*). b) *Felly* ei chyflawni hi, *fel* y bo iddi (*so . . that*). c) *Er* ein bod ni yn rhwym, *er hyny* dattoder ni (*though . . yet*). d) *Pe* lladdai efe fi, *eto* mi a obeithiaf ynddo (*if . . yet*). e) *Mor* anwyl *a* chanwyll ei lygad (*as . . as*). *Cyn* hardded *ag* yntau (*as . . as*). f) *Mwy* hyfryd ei glywed ar fynydd Tabor *nag* ar fynydd Sinai (*more . . than*). g) *Mor* amlwg yw'r bai *nes* y mae'n anafu (*so . . that*). *Cyn* ddysgediced *fel* y gŵyr bob peth (*so . . that*). h) *Nac* aur *nac* arian (*neither . . nor*). i) *Naill ai* mab *ai* merch (*either . . or*). j) *Ai* da *ai* drwg ydyw (*whether . . or*). k) *Pa un a* ddaw *ai* peidio (*whether . . or*). *Pa un ai* byw *ai* marw (*whether . . or*). l) *Pa un bynag ai* cymmeradwy *neu* wrthodedig (*whether . . or*).

PREPOSITIONS.

730. Prepositions are in Welsh, as in English, placed before the words to which they refer. *Mewn* tref. *Gerllaw'r* bryn.

731. Prepositions govern different sounds, some taking after them the *radical*, some the *middle*, some few the *aspirate*, and *yn* the *nasal*. [In §§ 364–373, the reader will find these arranged under different heads, according to the sounds which they respectively govern.]

(*a*) It may be expedient here to caution the reader against an erroneous observation made by several grammarians, that 'the *middle* sound comes after *all* prepositions, except *yn*, in, and *tua*, towards.'

732. **Mewn** and **yn**, in.

Mewn is placed before *indefinitive* words.

Mewn llyfr, *in a book. Mewn* ty, *in a house.*

Yn is placed before *definitive* words; *i.e.*, the definite article, whether expressed or virtually implied in another word.

a) *The article expressed.*

Yn *y* llyfr, *in the book.* Yn *y* ty, *in the house.*

b) *Proper names.*

Yn Llundain, *in London.* *Yn* Nafydd, *in David.*
Ym Mon, *in Anglesey.*

The words *uffern*, *angeu*, *tragywyddoldeb*, *carchar*, are treated like proper names. Yn uffern, *in hell.* Yn angeu, *in death.* Yn nhragywyddoldeb, *in eternity.* Yng ngharchar, *in prison.*

c) *The personal, possessive,* and *demonstrative pronouns.*

Ynof fi, in me. *Yn fy* nhy, *in my house.* *Yn hyny, in that.*

d) *A noun governing another in the possessive case.*

Ym mhen y ffordd, *at the end of the road.*
Yn nhy fy nhad, *in my father's house.*

(*a*) Here '*mhen*' and '*nhad*' are virtually definitive, according to § 404: hence they are preceded by *yn* not *mewn*. If, however, the preceding noun is not definitive, *mewn* will be employed.

Mewn heddwch meddwl, *in peace of mind.*
Mewn dinas wagedd, *in a city of vanity.*

e) The words *pob, pawb, pwy, pa, holl,* and some others.

Ym mhob man, *in every place.* *Ym mhawb, in all.*
Ym mhwy, in whom?
"*Ym mha* ardal bydd fy lletty?"

(*a*) *Yn* is also placed before some indefinite words to form compound prepositions and adverbs.

Ym mlaen, *before.* Yng ngŵydd, *before.* Yng nghyda, *together with.*
Ym mhlith, *among.* Yn lle, *instead of.* Yn ymyl, *near.*

(*b*) In the words '*Ym mhell*' *yn preposition* is used for *yn apposition;* and, on the contrary, *yn apposition* is put for *yn preposition* in '*yn Gymraeg.*' [*Yn bell,* and *yng Nghymraeg,* are also used.]

In "*yn tân*" the article is omitted (="*yn y tân*"). "Ac a deflir *yn tân,*" *and is cast into the fire.* S. Matt. iii. 10.

733. Some writers change '*yn preposition*' into *ym* before *m* and *mh;* and into *yng* before *ng* and *ngh.* Others deny the propriety of this change, and write *yn* under all circumstances.

Ym mhen yr heol. *Yn mhen* yr heol.
Yng Nghaersalem. *Yn Nghaersalem.*

(*a*) Many join the preposition to the following word; as, *y'mlaen, y'ngwydd;* but this creates an unnecessary exception to the rules of accentuation. [See § 98 (*b*).]

734. The different functions of Yn.—It may be convenient here to repeat the different functions of *yn*, with illustrations to show its force and government in each place.

α. '*Yn participial*' is placed before the Infin. mood to form a participle, and is followed by the *radical* sound.

Yn dysgu, learning. *Yn cerdded*, walking. *Yn parhau*, continuing.

β. '*Yn apposition*' is placed before a noun or adjective, to set it in apposition with a preceding word, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Y mae Arthur *yn frenin, Arthur is a king.*
Y mae Arthur *yn ddewr, Arthur is brave.*

γ. '*Yn adverbial*' is placed before an adjective to convert it into an adverb, and is followed by the *middle* sound.

Ysgrifena *yn gampus, he writes excellently.*
Darllena *yn wych, he reads very well.*

δ. '*Yn preposition*' is placed before a substantive, adjective, or pronoun, and is followed by the *nasal* sound.

Yn nhy fy nhad, *in my father's house.*
Ym mhob ty, *in every house.*
Yng ngharchar, in prison.

735. Gan, a or **ag, gyda** or **gydag.**—*Gàn* = *by*, denotes the *agent; â* or *âg* = *with*, denotes the *instrument; gyda* or *gydag* = *along with, together with*, implies *association.*

Tarawyd ef *â* chareg *gàn* Arthur, *he was struck with a stone by Arthur.*
Tyred *gyda* ni, *come along with us.*

(*a*) After verbs, &c., beginning with *cy, cyd, cyf, cym, cyn, cys*, and *ym*, the prep. *â* or *âg* is generally employed: it would be a repetition to use *gyda* or *gydag*, as the prefixes *cy, cyd*, &c., have the same force as *gyd* in *gyda.*

Cerdded *gyda* dynion da,
*Cyd*gerdded *â* dynion da, } *to walk with good men.*

(*b*) The preposition *efo* (N. W.) implies *instrument* or *association;* and is therefore used for *â* and *gyda.*

Torais y gwydr *efo* chareg, *I broke the window with a stone.*
Aethant ymaith *efo* thâd yr eneth, *they went away with the girl's father.*

736. At and **i.**—*At* = "to," "towards," denotes *proximity*, but not *entrance;* hence it is used before *persons;* and also before *places* and *things*, when entrance into them is not implied: *i* = "to," "into," denotes motion towards a place or object, into which an *entrance* is made.

Cerddwch *at* eich brawd, *go to your brother.* *At* y mur, *to the wall.*
Aeth *i* Lundain, *he went to London.* Rhedodd *i'r* ty, *he ran into the house.*

(*a*) *At* is opposed to *oddi wrth*; *i* is opposed to *o*. [§ 742.]

736 (1). **Tua** or **tuag, tuag at** = towards.—*Tua* or *tuag* must be followed by a noun, and is used only when *towards* = "in the direction of," in a *physical* sense; and also when = *nearly* or *about:* in other circumstances the compound *tuag at* is employed.

Edrychais *tua'r* môr, *I looked towards the sea.*
Nid yw yn yr afon, ond y mae'n cerdded *tuag ati, he is not in the river, but he is walking towards it.*
Addawodd gan punt *tuag at* yr ysgol newydd, *he promised a hundred pounds towards the new school.*
Dychwelodd *tua* phedwar o'r gloch, *he returned about four o'clock.*

737. Erbyn, yn erbyn, i . . erbyn.—*Erbyn* = against or by, refers to *time*; *yn erbyn* = against or contrary to, denotes *opposition*; *i . . erbyn* has the same meaning as *yn erbyn*, but is used only when the object is a *pronoun.*

Bydd yn barod *erbyn* bydd Iau, *be ready by Thursday.*
Ymladdodd *yn fy erbyn.* Ymladdodd *yn erbyn* Arthur.
Ymladdodd *i'm herbyn.*

737 (1). **Er, erys** (or **er's**).—*Er* refers to *past point of time*, and is used before *definitive* nouns = "*since:*" *erys* refers to *past point of time*, and is used before *indefinitive* nouns = "*for,*" when *for* implies *point of time.*

Ni welsom mo honynt *er* mis Ionawr, *we have not seen them since the month of January.*
Ni bu y plant gartref *erys* mis, *the children have not been at home for a month.*

738. Cer, ger, *by*; **cerfydd, gerfydd,** *by*; **cwedi, gwedi,** *after*; **cyda, gyda,** *with*; **can, gan,** *by*; and the pron. prep. **cenyf, genyf,** &c., *by me.* The strong form *cer, cerfydd, cwedi,* &c., occurs after *a* (and, as), and *na* (nor, than): in other circumstances the lighter form *ger, gerfydd,* &c., is generally preferred.

A cher llaw iddo y safodd.	Safodd *ger* llaw iddo.
A chyda thi y safodd.	Safodd *gyda* thi.
A chenyf fi yr oedd.	*Genyf* fi yr oedd.

739. Tan, dan, *under*; **traws, draws,** *across*; **trwy, drwy,** *through*; **tros, dros,** *over*; and the pron. prep. **tanaf, danaf,** &c., *under me*; **trwof, drwof,** &c., *through me*; **trosof, drosof,** &c., *for me.* The strong form *tan, traws, trwy,* &c., is put

after *a* and *na:* in other circumstances it is immaterial whether we employ this or the other lighter form, *dan, draws, drwy*, &c.

A than y pren yr oedd. *Trosom* or *drosom* ni y bu Crist farw.
Dan or *tan* y pren yr oedd. *A thrwy* y mur yr aeth.
A throsom ni y bu Crist farw. Aeth *drwy* or *trwy* y mur.

(*a*) The adverbs *tanodd, danodd*, under; *trwodd, drwodd*, through; *trosodd, drosodd*, over; *trachefn, drachefn*, again, follow the same rule. A *thrwodd* yr aeth. Aeth *trwodd* or *drwodd*.

(*b*) The adverbs *draw*, yonder, *dacw*, yonder is, *dyma*, here is, *dyna*, there is, *gynt*, formerly, *beunydd*, daily, *byth*, ever, are sometimes (but seldom by good writers) made to follow the same rule. A *thyma'r* ffordd y gwnaeth ef y cwrw.—I. MSS.

740. Time and distance of place.—Before nouns of time and distance of place the prepositions are sometimes expressed, but most frequently omitted. Nouns signifying point of time are preceded by *ar*, upon; those which signify duration of time or distance of place, take *am*, for, or *tros*, over.

Yr oeddwn yno *ddydd Llun*, or *ar ddydd Llun*.
Cerddais *filltir*, or *am filltir*.
Gweithiais *ddiwrnod*, or *am ddiwrnod*.

741. Compound Prepositions.—By referring to § 370, &c., the reader will perceive that the compound prepositions are formed by putting in apposition two or more simple prepositions; or by the use of a substantive under government. Thus *oddi ar* is a compound, formed of the two simple prepositions *oddi* and *ar*. *Ger llaw* is another compound, formed of the simple prep. *ger*, and the substantive *llaw*, under government of *ger*.

(*a*) Those compounds which borrow a substantive to form them, are of course only assumed as such; for (*e.g.*) *ger llaw* is strictly a phrase, signifying *near the hand*, and may be dealt with as such.

742. O, oddi wrth, oddi ar.—*O*, "from," "out of:" *oddi wrth*, "from" = from by, from besides: *oddi ar*, "from," "off" = from on (before inanimate objects): from one's person, possession, &c., noting privation (before animate objects).

Daeth *o* Lundain, *he came from London*. Rhedodd *o'r* ty, *he ran out of the house*.
Rhedodd *oddi wrth* y mur, *he ran from* (*i.e., from close to*) *the wall*.
Cymmerodd y cyllyll *oddi ar* y bwrdd, a'r afalau *oddi ar* yr eneth, *he took the knives from* (= *from on*) *the table, and the apples from the girl*.

(*a*) *O* is opposed to *i; oddi wrth* is opposed to *at*. [§ 736.]

742 (1). Gan, oddi wrth.—*Gan*, "from" = from the agent himself without the intervention of other means: *oddi wrth*, "from" = from by or besides, acting by means of an intervening instrument.

Byddwn yn fynych yn cael llyfrau *gan* ei dâd, a *chanddo* yntau, *we often get books from his father, and from him.*

Derbyniais lythyr ddoe *oddi wrth* gyfaill o Sais, *I received a letter yesterday from an English friend.*

(*a*) *Oddi wrth* is opposed to *at*. Anfonais lythyr *ato*, a derbyniais lythyr *oddi wrtho*.

742 (2). Rhag, oddi wrth.—*Rhag* = "from," when not in actual contact with or in possession of (often) something dangerous or unpleasant, or what one wishes to avoid: *oddi wrth* = "from," when in actual contact, or mixed up with, or close to.

Dianc *rhag* dyn, *to run away from a man* [*fearing to come under his power*].

Dianc *oddi wrth* ddyn, *to run away from a man* [*from close to him*].

[The prepositions *at, i, o, oddi wrth, oddi ar, gan*, and *rhag*, are more fully explained and exemplified in the Welsh Exercises, Ch. 26.]

743. When '*compound prepositions ending with a substantive*' (see § 373) precede personal pronouns, a corresponding possessive will intervene between the component parts of the prepositions.

"*Ar ol*," after.

1. Ar *fy* ol *i*, after me.	1. Ar *ein* hol *ni*, after us.
2. Ar *dy* ol *di*, after thee.	2. Ar *eich* hol *chwi*, after you.
3. Ar *ei* ol *ef*, after him.	3. Ar *eu* hol *hwy*, after them.
Ar *ei* hol *hi*, after her.	Ar *eu* hol *hwy*, after them.

When the former part ends with a vowel, the compound preposition is thus declined.

"*O flaen*," before.

1. O'*m* blaen (*or* o fy mlaen) *i*.	1. O'*n* blaen *ni*.
2. O'*th* flaen (*or* o dy flaen) *di*.	2. O'*ch* blaen *chwi*.
3. O'*i* flaen *ef*.	3. O'*u* blaen *hwy*.
O'*i* blaen *hi*.	O'*u* blaen *hwy*.

(*a*) Unless the phrase is emphatic, the pers. pron. may be left out, the possessive being thought sufficient to convey the meaning.

Ar *fy* ol; ar *dy* ol; ar *ei* ol.

744. The prepositions *is law*, beneath, *uwch law*, above, *ger llaw*, near, *oddi amgylch*, about, and the simple prep.

heibio, by, usually take *i* after them, when a personal pronoun is the object.

"*Is law*," beneath.

Is law *i* mi, *beneath me;* is law *i* ti, *beneath thee;* is law *iddo* ef, *beneath him.*

(*a*) *Heb law* is an exception, as it neither takes *i* nor the possessive. (Ni ddaeth yma neb *heb law* chwi.) In some instances, however, we find the pronouns inserted. Arglwyddi ereill *heb dy law* di. Is. xxvi. 13.

745. When the object of the prep. is a *substantive*, such compounds as take *i* after them when followed by pronouns, may or may not retain it when followed by substantives; but those which use the poss. when the object is a pron., will of course dismiss the possessive before a substantive.

Is law *i*'r afon; or, Is law yr afon, *below the river.*
Ar ol dyddiau lawer. O flaen y brenin.

746. The following are sometimes met with in a plural form: *am ben, ar ben*, at; *ar ol*, after; *ger bron*, before; *o flaen*, before; *uwch ben*, above.

Yn yr eigion maith *o'n blaenau.*—G. Edwards.

747. Pronominal Prepositions are a class of compound words, formed by suffixing a personal pron. to a preposition. [See §§ 374–381.] They will be rendered into English by a prep. and a pron. in the objective case.

Dos *ato*, go *to him.* Pwysa *arno*, press *upon it.*

(*a*) When the object of the prep. is a noun, the pronominal inflection will of course be dismissed.

Dos *at* y dyn, go *to* the man. Pwysa *ar* y gareg, press *upon* the stone.

748. When the pron. requires to be expressed with a degree of emphasis, it is repeated after the pronominal preposition.

Simple.		*Emphatic.*	
Ataf, *to me.*	Atom, *to us.*	Ataf *fi.*	Atom *ni.*
Atat, *to thee.*	Atoch, *to you.*	Atat *ti.*	Atoch *chwi.*
Ato, *to him.*	Atynt, *to them.*	Ato *ef* or *fo.*	Atynt *hwy.*
Ati, *to her.*		Ati *hi.*	

749. Am danaf, &c., about me; **oddi am danaf, &c.**, from about me, are used only when the object of the preposition is a personal pronoun: if the object is a noun, *am* and *oddi am* are employed.

Soniodd *am dan*och. Tynodd y wisg *oddi am dan*och.
Soniodd *am* ddyn. Tynodd y wisg *oddi am* ddyn.

750. O honof, &c., of me. [§ 187 (*b*).] This form has three uses.

a) To express the genitive of personal pronouns.

Mae pawb o honom yn barod, *all of us are ready.*
Efe yw'r goreu o honynt, *he is the best of them.*
Nid oes dim o hono, *there is none of it.*

If the genitive is a noun, "*honof*," &c., is dismissed.

Mae pawb o'r dynion yn barod, *all the men are ready.*

b) It is used as the subject of an infinitive verb to express the past Indicative, or the Subjunctive, in affirmative clauses; and also to express past or future time when the infinitive is coupled to a finite verb.

Clywais ddywedyd o hono, *I heard that he said.* [§§ 763, 764.]
Gorchymmynodd ddyfod o honof, *he commanded that I should come.* [§§ 763, 764.]
Pan ddaeth, a myned o hono, *when he came, and went.* [§§ 666, 667.]
Pan ddelo, a myned o hono, *when he will come, and will have gone.* [§§ 666, 667.]

If the subject of the infinitive is a noun, "*honof*," &c., is dismissed.

Clywais ddywedyd o'r gwr, *I heard that the man said.*

c) Preceded by "*mo*," *honof*, &c., is a strong form, in negative, and negative interrogative clauses, of the accusative personal pronoun, and, with passive verbs, of the nominative.

Ni chlywais i mo hono (=ni chlywais i ef), *I did not hear him.*
Ni chlywyd mo hono (=ni chlywyd ef), *he was not heard.*
A glywsoch chwi mo hono (=a glywsoch chwi ef), *did you not hear him?*
A glywyd mo hono (=a glywyd ef), *was he not heard?*

If the accusative, or the nominative of a passive verb, is a noun, *honof*, &c., is dismissed.

Ni chlywais mo'r dyn. Ni chlywir mo'r dyn.
A glywsoch chwi mo'r dyn? A glywyd mo'r dyn?

750 (1). Prepositions after Verbs, &c.—In very many cases, the prepositions which follow intransitive verbs and other parts of speech may be translated literally into English.

Hyder *ar*, *reliance on.*
Hyderu *ar*, *rely on.*
Ymddibynu *ar*, *depend upon.*
Euog *o*, *guilty of.*
Amddifad *o*, *destitute of.*
Amddifadu *o*, *deprive of.*
Argyhoeddi *o*, *convince of.*
Cyfranogi *o*, *partake of.*
Llawn *o*, *full of.*
Marw *o*, *die of.*

Rhwym *i*, *bound to.*
Cyfarfod *â*, *meet with.*
Cymmysgu *â*, *mix with.*
Ymladd *â*, *fight with.*
Ymddiddan *â*, *converse with.*

750 (2). In many instances, however, the idioms of the two languages differ considerably, as will be seen below. Sometimes the prepositions are different in meaning; *e.g.*, *ar* in "blino *ar*" differs from *of* in "to be tired *of*:" and sometimes the verb is transitive in one language, and intransitive in the other, and therefore followed by a preposition. The transitive verb *excel* is rendered into Welsh by *rhagori* and the preposition *ar*.

750 (3). **General Rules.**

1. Such verbs as are in English followed by two accusatives, one of the *thing* and the other of the *person*, have in Welsh the preposition *i* [1] (*to*) placed before the accusative of the *person*. The following are some of them.

Rhoddi, *to give.*
Cynnyg, *to offer.*
Addaw, *to promise.*
Dangos, *to show.*
Danfon, *to send.*
Ateb, *to answer.*
Maddeu, *to forgive.*
Gofyn, *to ask.*
Talu, *to pay.*

Examples.—Ni roddaist i mi ddwfr, *thou gavest me no water.* Cynnygiais ddwy bunt i'r dyn, *I offered the man two pounds.* Beth a addawsoch i'r gweision? *what did you promise the servants?* Maddeu i ni ein dyledion, *forgive us our debts.* Dangoswch y darlun iddi, *show her the picture.*

Such verbs as have the *infinitive* as the accusative of the thing, fall under this rule.

Gorchymmyn, *to command.*
Peri, *to bid; order.*
Erchi, *to bid.*
Gwneyd, *to make.*
Caniatâu, *to permit.*
Gadael, *to let.*
Goddef, *to allow.*

Examples.—Pa ham y maent yn gorchymmyn i ni fod yn ddistaw? *why do they command us to be silent?* Mi a wnâf iddo weithio, *I will make him work.* Perais i chwi fyned ymaith, onid do? *I ordered you to go away, did I not?* Gadewch i mi wneyd y gwaith, *let me do the work.*

2. **I** and **at** = *to:* see § 763. **O, oddi wrth, oddi ar, gan, rhag** = *from:* see § 742, &c.

3. Verbs, and other parts of speech, beginning with *cy*, *cyd*, *cyf*, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*, and *ym*, when these prefixes imply *mutual* or *together*, are generally followed by *â* or *âg*, or (N. W.) *efo.*

Cydnabyddus â, *acquainted with.*
Cydnabyddiaeth â, *acquaintance with.*
Cydymdeimlo â, *to sympathize with.*
Cydymdeimlad â, *sympathy with.*

[1] *Wrth* is found after most verbs of *telling*. See Rule 4.

Cydgerdded â, *to walk with.*
Cyfammod â, *a covenant with.*
Cyfreithio â, *to go to law with.*
Cymmodi â, *to reconcile to.*
Cymmysgu â, *to mix with.*
Cynnysgaeddu â, *to endue with.*
Cyssylltu â, *to connect with.*
Cyttuno â, *to agree with.*
Cyttundeb â, *an agreement with*
Ymladd â, *to fight with.*
Ymryson â, *to contend with.*
Ymddiddan â, *to converse with.*
Ymyraeth â, *to interfere* or *meddle with.*
Ymwneyd â, *to have to do* or *be engaged with.*
Ymhela â, *to meddle with.*

Examples.—Cymmoder chwi â Duw, *be ye reconciled to God.* Cyttuna â'th wrthwynebwr, *agree with thine adversary.* Wedi ei gymmysgu â dwfr, *mixed with water.* Cynnysgaedda hwynt â diniweidrwydd buchedd, *endue them with innocency of life.* Myfi ydwyf yn cadarnhau fy nghyfammod â chwi, *I establish my covenant with you.* Gwae a ymrysono â'i Luniwr! *woe (unto him) that striveth with his Maker!* Os gall efe ymladd â mi, *if he be able to fight with me.*

4. **Wrth** after verbs, &c., of *telling, speaking, complaining, confessing, &c.* = **to.**

Dweyd *or* dywedyd wrth, *to tell.*
Llefaru wrth, *to speak to.*
Mynegu wrth, *to relate* or *tell to.*
Adrodd wrth, *to relate to.*
Sisial wrth, *to whisper to.*
Sibrwd wrth, *to whisper to.*
Cyhuddo wrth, *to accuse to.*
Addef wrth, *to acknowledge to.*
Cyfaddef wrth, *to confess to.*
Cyfaddefiad wrth, *confession to.*
Cyffesu wrth, *to confess to.*
Cwyno wrth, *to complain to.*
Achwyn wrth, *to complain to.*

Examples.—Addefais fy mhechod wrthyt, *I acknowledged my sin unto thee.* Os dywed neb ddim wrthych, *if any man say aught unto you.* Yna y llefara Efe wrthynt, *then shall He speak unto them.* Beth yr oedd hi yn ei sibrwd wrthych? *what was she whispering to you?*

(*a*) Some of the verbs of telling (*e.g.*, dweyd *or* dywedyd, mynegu, adrodd) are sometimes followed by *i*, not *wrth.* The difference seems to be that *i* is used when the verb implies simply *telling,* and *wrth* when it implies *telling* or *narrating with a certain degree of minuteness.*

5. **Wrth**, after words principally verbs and adjectives (and adverbs derived therefrom), expressive of *kind disposition,* or *the contrary* = **to.**

Angharedig wrth, *unkind to.*
Caredig wrth, *kind to.*
Câs wrth, *disagreeable to.*
Caled wrth, *hard to.*
Creulawn wrth, *cruel to.*
Da wrth, *good* or *kind to.*
Hael *or* haelionus wrth, *liberal to.*
Llym wrth, *severe to.*
Tirion wrth, *courteous* or *pleasant to.*
Tosturiol wrth, *compassionate to.*
Trugarog wrth, *merciful to.*
Tyner wrth, *tender to.*

Examples.—Bydd drugarog wrthym, *be merciful to us.* Y mae efe yn angharedig iawn wrth ei blentyn, *he is very unkind to his child.* Rhaid i chwi beidio â bod yn llym wrth eich plant, *you must not be severe to your children.*

(*a*) Sometimes *i* is found instead of *wrth;* and sometimes *at* and *tuag at* (= towards). Daionus yw yr Arglwydd i bawb, *the Lord is good to all.* Ac ni bydd raslawn i'r llanc, *neither will it show favour to the young man.*

(*b*) Substantives derived from adjectives of this class are, as a rule, followed by *at* or *tuag at* (=to, towards); sometimes by *i* (=to).

Casineb at *or* tuag at, *hatred to.* Creulondeb at *or* tuag at, *cruelty to.*
Llymder at *or* tuag at, *severity to.*

Examples.—Creulondeb at anifeiliaid, *cruelty to animals.* Nid oes genyf fi ddim casineb tuag ato, *I have no hatred towards him.* Peidiwch âg arfer llymder tuag ato, *don't use severity to him.*

6. **Wrth**, so as to be *joined* or *attached* to (mostly in a *physical* sense) = **to.**

Cadwyno wrth, *to chain to.*
Cydio wrth, *to join to; to take hold of.*
Cylymu wrth, *to tie to.*
Cyssylltu wrth, *to join to.*
Glynu wrth, *to cling to.*
Hoelio wrth, *to nail to.*
Rhwymo wrth, *to bind* or *tie to.*
Sicrhau wrth, *to fasten to.*
Ymgylymu wrth, *to join one's self to.*
Ymlynyd wrth, *to cling to.*

Examples.—Ni lynant y naill wrth y llall, *they will not cleave one to another.* Gan ei hoelio wrth y Groes, *nailing it to the Cross.* Gwae y rhai sydd yn cydio maes wrth faes, *woe to them that join field to field.* Cadwyno ci wrth goeden, *to chain a dog to a tree.*

7. **Ar** after words of *praying, entreating, calling,* &c. = **to,** &c.

Atolygu ar, *to beseech.* (See list.)
Deisyf ar, *to desire, beseech.*
Dymuno ar, *to request, beg of.*
Erfyn ar, *to beg of.*
Erchi ar, *to ask, pray to.* (See list.)
Galw ar, *to call to, call upon.* (See list.)
Gweddi ar, *to cry to, shout to.*
Gweddi ar, *a prayer to.*
Gweddïo ar, *to pray to.*
Llefain ar, *to cry to.*

Examples.—Gweddi ar Dduw dros yr Israel, *a prayer to God for Israel.* Deisyfasant arnynt fyned allan o'r ddinas, *they desired them to depart out of the city.* Oni ddymunais arnoch aros gyda hi? *did I not beg of you to remain with her?* Llefais arno â'm geneu, *I called unto him with my mouth.* Erfyniwch ar y dyn beidio â myned ymaith, *beg of the man not to go away.* Gwaeddwch ar y bachgen, *shout to the boy.*

[*Ar*, placed before a noun or adjective, often corresponds to *at*, or its equivalents. Ar amserau, *at times.* Ar gost, *at the expense* or *cost.* Ar ben, *at an end.* Ar y cyntaf, *at first.* Ar y goreu, *at best.* Ar frys, *in haste.* Ar gam, *amiss.* Ar led, *abroad.* Ar gyhoedd, *in public, publicly.* Ar werth, *on sale.* Ar unwaith, *at once.* Ar fai, *in fault, to be blamed.*]

750 (4). **An alphabetical list** of verbs, &c., and prepositions, with examples.

Achwyn **ar**, *to complain* of. Achwyn ar blant y llan, *to complain of the village children.*

Achwyn **wrth**, *to complain* to. Achwynodd ar y bachgen wrth ei dâd, *he complained of the boy to his father.*

Agos **at** or **i**, *near* (to). Agos at wal yr Eglwys, *near the wall of the Church.* Agos i'r afon, *near the river.*

Agosâu **at** or **i**, *to approach, draw near.* Agosâu at y diwedd, *to draw near the end.* Agosâu i'r dref, *to draw near the town.*

Angen **am** (sometimes **o**), *need* of. Mewn angen am gynnorthwy, *in need of help.*

Anfon **at**, *to send* to. Anfonais genad atynt, *I sent a messenger to them.*

Anufuddhau **i**, *to disobey.* Anufuddhasoch i air yr Arglwydd, *ye disobeyed the word of the Lord.* Deut. ix. 23.

Archwaeth **at**, *appetite* for. Nid oes ganddo archwaeth at fwyd, na chwaeth at lyfrau, *he has neither appetite for food, nor taste for books.*

Ateb (**i**), *to answer.* When the accusative of the thing is inserted, *i* is always used. Nid atebodd efe iddo un gair, *he did not answer him a word.* S. Matt. xxvii. 14. When this accusative is omitted, *i* is sometimes used, but oftener left out. Fel yr atebwn iddo, *that I should answer him.* Job ix. 32. Myfi a'th atebaf, *I will answer thee.*

Atolygu **ar** or **i**, *to beseech.* [*Ar* is preferable : p. 221, rule 7.] Hwy a atolygasant arno, *they besought Him.* S. Luke iv. 38. Nyni a atolygwn i Ti ein gwrandaw, *we beseech Thee to hear us.*—Prayer Book.

Awyddus **am** or **i**, *desirous* of, *anxious* to. Y maent yn awyddus i'ch gweled, *they are anxious to see you.*

Bai **ar**, *blame* upon. Efe a ddyry'r bai arnoch chwi, *he will lay the blame upon you.* Ŷ mae bai ar y dyn, *the man is to blame.*

Beio (**ar** [1]), *to blame, to find fault with.* Pa ham yr ydych yn fy meio [yn beio arnaf] ? *why do you blame me ?*

Benthyca (or benthycio) **gan**, and **oddi ar**, *to borrow* of *or* from. Pob gwraig a fenthycia gan ei chymmydoges, *every woman shall borrow of her neighbour.* Ex. iii. 22.

Blâs **ar**, *taste* on, in. A oes flâs ar wyn ŵy, *is there any taste in the white of an egg ?* Job vi. 6. Nid ydyw efe yn clywed blâs ar ei fwyd, *he does not relish his food.*

Blino **ar**, *to be tired* or *weary* of. Y mae fy enaid yn blino ar fy einioes, *my soul is weary of my life.* Job x. 1.

Boddlawn **ar**, *satisfied* or *content* with. Yr ydym yn foddlawn ar yr hyn sydd genym, *we are content with what we have.*

Cefnu **ar**, *to turn one's back* upon, *to forsake.* Cefnu ar bechod, *to forsake sin.*

Cenfigen **at** or **tuag at**, *envy* towards. Nid oes genyf genfigen at neb, *I have no envy towards any body.*

Cenfigenu **wrth**, *to envy.* Na chenfigena wrth ŵr trawg, *envy thou not an oppressor.* Prov. iii. 31.

Cof **am**, *remembrance* of. Gwnewch hyn er cof am danaf, *do this in remembrance of me.*

Cofio **at**, *to remember* to. Cofiwch ni at eich rhieni, *remember us to your parents.*

Curo **wrth**, *to knock* at. Pwy oedd yn curo wrth y drŵs? *who was knocking at the door ?*

---

[1] Such prepositions as are put in brackets may be used or omitted: thus, "yn beio *arnaf*," and "yn fy meio," are equally correct.

Cwrdd (â), *to meet; to touch.* Mi a gwrddais â llawer o gyfeillion, *I met many friends.*

Cwrdd â, *to meet* with. Dywedodd y bugail iddo gwrdd â damwaen ddychrynllyd, *the shepherd said that he met with a terrible accident.*

Cwyno ar, *to complain* of. ="Achwyn ar."

Cwyno wrth, *to complain* to. ="Achwyn wrth."

Cyfarfod (â), *to meet.* Ni a gyfarfuom ddyn du [â dyn du] ar yr heol, *we met a black man on the street.*

Cyfarfod â, *to meet* with. Pwy a ddywedodd ddarfod i'r eneth fâch gyfarfod â damwain? *who said that the little girl met with an accident?*

Cyfarwydd ar, *skilled* in, *well-acquainted* with. Pob un oedd gyfarwydd ar offer cerdd, *every one who was skilled in instruments of music.* 2 Chron. xxxiv. 12.

Cyfeirio at, *to allude* or *refer* to. Ië, atoch chwi yr oeddwn yn cyfeirio, *yes, it was to you I was alluding.*

Cyffelyb i, *like.* Cyffelyb yw teyrnas nefoedd i ddeg o forwynion, *the kingdom of heaven is likened unto ten virgins.* S. Matt. xxv. 1.

Cyffelybu i, *to liken* to, *to compare* to. Beth a gyffelybaf i ti, O ferch Ierusalem? *what shall I liken to thee, O daughter of Jerusalem?* Lam. ii. 13.

Cyffwrdd (â), *to touch.* [Oftener with *â.*] Er mwyn cyffwrdd âg Ef, *in order to touch Him.* S. Mark iii. 10. Y pethau a wrthododd fy enaid eu cyffwrdd, *the things which my soul refused to touch.* Job vi. 7.

Cyhuddo o, *to accuse* of, *to charge* with. Cyhuddasant Ef o lawer o bethau, *they accused Him of many things.* S. Mark xv. 3.

Cyhuddo wrth, *to accuse* to. Na thybiwch y cyhuddaf fi chwi wrth y Tâd, *do not think that I will accuse you to the Father.* S. John v. 45.

Cymmeradwy gan, *acceptable* to. Bydded gymmeradwy gan ei frodyr, *let him be acceptable to his brethren.* Deut. xxxiii. 24.

Cymmharu â, *to compare* with. Cymmharu mynyddoedd mawrion â mynyddoedd bychain, *to compare large mountains with small mountains.*

Cymmharu i, *to compare* (=*liken*) to. Solon a gymmharai y bobl i'r môr, a'r areithwyr i'r gwyntoedd, *Solon compared the people to the sea, and the orators to the winds.*

Cymmhwyso at, *to apply* to. Gallwn gymmhwyso yr un geiriau at ereill, *we may apply the same words to others.*

Cymmodi â, *to reconcile* to. Cymmoder chwi â Duw, *be ye reconciled to God,* 2 Cor. v. 20.

Cystadlu â or i, *to compare* to, *to equal* to. Beth a gystadlaf â thi? *what shall I equal to thee?* Lam. ii. 13. I bwy y'm cystedlwch? *to whom will ye make Me equal?* Is. xlvi. 5.

Cystadlu â, *to vie* or *compete* with. Ofer i mi gystadlu âg ef, *it is useless for me to compete with him.*

Chwaeth at, *taste* for. Chwaeth at lenyddiaeth, *taste for literature.*

Chwanegu **at**, *to add* to. Chwanegwch at eich ffydd, *add to your faith.* 2 S. Peter i. 5.

Chwannog **i** or **o**, *apt* or *prone* to; *greedy* of. Y mae efe yn rhy chwannog o (*or* i) ymffrostio, *he is too apt to boast.*

(*a*) *I* when followed by a noun or substantive word. Chwannog i elw, *greedy of gain.* Deut. i. 19.

Chwerthin **am ben**, *to laugh* at. Peidiwch â chwerthin am ben y dyn, *don't laugh at the man.*

Dal **ar**, *to take notice* of, *to attend* to. Agorodd yr Arglwydd ei chalon i ddal ar y pethau, *the Lord opened her heart to attend unto the things.* Acts xvi. 14.

Dannod **i**, *to upbraid, to twit.* Dannododd iddynt eu hanghrediniaeth (=*he upbraided to them their unbelief*), *he upbraided them with their unbelief.* S. Mark xvi. 14.

Darfod **am**, *to perish.* O derfydd am danaf, darfydded, *if I perish, let me perish.* Esth. iv. 16.

Derbyniol **gan**, *acceptable* to. See "Cymmeradwy gan."

Dial **ar**, *to revenge* upon, *to avenge* of. Dial fi ar fy ngwrthwynebwr, *avenge me of mine adversary.* S. Luke xviii. 3.

Dig **wrth**, *angry* with. Pa ham yr ydych mor ddig wrth y gwas? *why are you so angry with the servant?*

Digio **wrth**, *to be angry* or *offended* with. Yr wyf yn ofni y digia'r wraig fonheddig wrthyf, *I am afraid that the lady will be offended with me.*

Diolch **i**, *to thank.* Dylech ddiolch i'r gwr bonheddig, *you ought to thank the gentleman.*

Dweyd *or* dywedyd **wrth**, *to tell.* Dywedwch y gwir wrthyf, *tell me the truth.*

(*a*) Sometimes *i.* Dywedwch i ferch Seion, *tell ye the daughter of Sion.* S. Matt. xxi. 5. [See p. 220, rule 4, (*a*).]

Dwyn **ar gof**, *to remind.* Mi a ddygaf ar gof ei weithredoedd, *I will bring to mind his works.* 3 S. John 10.

Dyfod **â**, *to bring.* Daethant â'r peraroglau at y bedd, *they brought the spices to the sepulchre.*

Dyfod **o**, *to become* of. Beth a ddaw o'r dyn, druan? *what will become of the poor man?*

Dyfod **yn**, *to become.* Y mae efe wedi dyfod yn ysgolhaig rhagorol, *he is become an excellent scholar.*

(*a*) *Dyfod yn* is used only when the predication is favourable or complimentary to the person or object spoken of: *myned yn* when the predication is favourable or otherwise.

Dylanwad **ar**, *influence* over. Nid oes genyf fi ddim dylanwad arno, *I have no influence over him.*

Dylanwadu **ar**, *to influence.* Pwy sydd wedi dylanwadu ar y dyn i roddi'r gwaith i fyny? *who has influenced the man to give up the work?*

Edifarhau **am**, *to repent* of. Edifarha am dy ddrygioni hwn, *repent of this thy wickedness.* Acts viii. 22.

Edifeirwch **am**, *repentance* for. Edifeirwch am bechod, *repentance for sin.*

Edliw **i**, *to upbraid, to twit.* Yna y dechreuodd Efe edliw i'r dinasoedd, *then began He to upbraid the cities.* St. Matt. xi. 20.

Edrych **am**, *to look* for; *to see=visit.* Bum yn edrych am yr agoriadau a gollais, *I have been looking for the keys which I lost.*

Edrych **ar**, *to look* at *or* upon. Edrychwch ar y bachgen, *look at the boy.* Edrych arnaf, a thrugarha wrthyf, *look upon me, and be merciful to me.* Ps. cxix. 132.

Edrych **at**, *to look* to. Edrychwch ati, fy mhlant i, *look to it, my boys!*

Erchi **ar**, *to ask, to pray* to. Mi a archaf ar Dduw, *I will pray to God.* 2 Tim. iv. 16.

Erchi **i**, *to bid, to command.* Canys yr Arglwydd a archodd iddo, *for the Lord hath bidden him.* 2 Sam. xvi. 11.

Esgor **ar**, *to bring* forth. Hi a esgorodd ar ei mab cyntaf-anedig, *she brought forth her firstborn son.* S. Luke ii. 7.

Gafael **ar** or **yn**,[1] *a hold* of, on. Cymmer afael ar y bywyd tragywyddol, *lay hold on eternal life.* 1 Tim. vi. 12. Cymmeryd gafael yn y gobaith, *to lay hold upon the hope.* Heb. vi. 18.

Gafaelyd **yn**,[1] *to take* or *lay hold* of. Gafaelwch ym mhen y ceffyl, *lay hold of the horse's head.*

Galw (**ar**), *to call.* Gelwch [ar] y bachgen, *call the boy.*

Galw **ar**, *to call* to, *to call* upon. Gelwch ar Dduw mewn gweddi, *call upon God in prayer.*

Galw **gyda** or **efo**, *to call* upon = *visit.* A ydych chwi wedi galw gyda'ch cymmydog newydd? *have you called upon your new neighbour?*

Gofyn **gan**, *to require* of. Llawer a ofynir ganddo, *much shall be required of him.* S. Luke xii. 48.

Gofyn **i**, *to ask.* Gofynwch i'r meddyg, *ask the medical man.*

Gogwyddo **at**, *to incline* to. Mae'r dyn yn gogwyddo at anffyddiaeth, *the man inclines to infidelity.*

Golwg **ar**, *a view* or *sight* of. Golwg arno wna im' ganu, *a view of Him will make me sing.*

Gollwng **dros gof** (or **yn anghof**), *to forget.* Na ollwng fy nghyfraith dros gof, *forget not my law.* Prov. iii. 1.

Gwahanol **i**, *different* from. Y mae eich geiriau chwi yn wahanol i'r eiddo ef, *your words are different from his.*

Gweddu **i**, *to become* (=*befit*). Nid yw ymddygiad o'r fath yn gweddu i ddyn o'i sefyllfa ef, *such conduct does not become a man of his position.*

---

[1] *Mewn* if the object is indefinitive. See § 732.

Gwenieithio **i**, *to flatter*. Peidiwch a gwenieithio i mi, *don't flatter me*.

Gwneyd **â**, *to deal* with, *to have to do* with. Fel y gwelych, gwna â'th weision, *as thou seest, deal with thy servants*. Dan i. 13. Nid oes dim a wnelwyf â chwi, *I have nothing to do with you*.

Gwneyd **o**, *to make* of. Nis gallaf wneyd dim o hono, *I can make nothing of him*.

Gwrandaw **(ar)**, *to listen* to, *to hear*. [Oftener with *ar*.] Gwrandewch arnaf, *listen to me*.

Gwylio **ar**, *to take heed* to. Gwylia arnat dy hun, *take heed to thyself*. 1 Tim. iv. 16.

Gwylio **rhag**, *to beware* of. Gwyliwch rhag gau-brophwydi, *beware of false prophets*.

Hysbysu **(i)**, *to inform*. Dymunaf eich hysbysu [hysbysu i chwi], *I wish to inform you*.

Llawn **(o)**, *full* of. [Oftener with *o*.] Yr holl ffordd ydoedd yn llawn o ddillad, *all the way was full of garments*. 2 Kings vii. 15. Ei fronau ef sydd yn llawn llaeth, *his breasts are full of milk*. Job xxi. 24.

Llenwi **â** or **o**, *to fill* with. Ac a lanwyd o genfigen, *and were filled with envy*. Acts v. 17. Yna y llanwyd ein geneu â chwerthin, *then was our mouth filled with laughter*. Ps. cxxvi. 2.

Llidiog **wrth**, *angry* or *wroth* with. Pe bâi yn llidiog wrthych, *if he were wroth with you*.

Llonaid *or* llon'd **o**, *-ful* of. Llonaid llaw o ludw, *handful of ashes*. Llon'd ty o bobl, *a houseful of people*.

Llwythog **o**, *loaded* or *laden* with. Pobl lwythog o anwiredd, *a people laden with iniquity*. Is. i. 4.

Maddeu **i**, *to forgive*. Maddeuwch i mi, *pardon me*. [Cf. L. *ignoscere*.]

Mâth **o** or **ar**, *a kind* of. Tuag at holl lestri pob mâth ar wasanaeth, *for all vessels of every kind of service*. 1 Chron. xxviii. 14.

Meddiannol **ar**, *possessed* of. Y mae eich cyfaill yn feddiannol ar alluoedd cryfion, *your friend is possessed of strong abilities*.

Meistr **ar**, *master* of. Y mae efe yn feistr ar ei waith, *he is master of his work*.

Methu **(â)**, *to fail*. Methais weled [â gweled] neb o honynt, *I failed to see any of them*.

Myned **â**, *to take*. Y mae efe wedi myned â hwynt i'r llyfrgell, *he has taken them to the library*.

Myned **yn**, *to become*. Y llall, wedi ei eni yn ei frenhiniaeth, sydd yn myned yn dlawd, *the other, born in his kingdom, becometh poor*. Eccl. iv. 14. Y mae efe yn myned yn bren, *it becomes a tree*. S. Matt. xiii. 22. [See "Dyfod yn," note *a*.]

Nês **at** or **i**, *nearer* (to). See "Agos."

Nesâu **at** or **i**, *to approach, draw near.* See "Agosâu."

Pallu (â), *to refuse.* Pallu â dweyd, *to refuse to say.*

Peidio **â**, *to cease* from, *to leave* off. Peidiodd â bod yn gall, *he left off being wise.* Ps. xxxvi. 3.

(*a*) The Infin. of this verb is usually translated by "*not to*," and the Imper. by "*do not*" or "*don't.*" Annichonadwy yw peidio â phechu, *it is impossible not to sin.* Peidiwch â dyfod yn agos ataf, *don't come near me.*

Rhagori **ar**, *to excel, to be better* than. Ti a ragoraist arnynt oll, *thou hast excelled them all.* Prov. xxi. 39.

Rhoddi **ar ddeall**, *to give to understand.* Rhoddasant ar ddeall i mi, *they gave me to understand.*

Rhwym **o** or **i**, *bound* to. Yr oedd pob teulu yn rhwym i ddiffodd eu tanau, *every family was bound to put out their fires.*

Rhyfeddu **wrth**, *to wonder* at. Megys y rhyfeddodd llawer wrthyt, *as many were astonied at thee.* Is. lii. 14.

(*a*) In modern Welsh, *at* (from the Eng. *at*) is very often used after *rhyfeddu* and *synu.* Gallech ryfeddu at ffolineb plentyn, *you might wonder at the folly of a child.*—Gr. Edwards.

Rhyngu bodd **i**, *to please.* Megys yr wyf finnau yn rhyngu bodd i bawb, *even as I please all men.* 1 Cor. x. 33.

Saethu **at**, *to shoot* at. Saethu at frân dyddyn, *to shoot at a rook.*

Siarad **â** or **efo**, *to speak* to, *to talk* to, *to speak* with. A phwy y mae hi yn siarad? *with whom is she speaking?*

Sicr *or* siwr **o**, *sure* of, to. Y mae efe yn lled sicr o wneyd bargen dda, *he is pretty sure of making a good bargain.* Y maent yn sicr o dalu, *they are sure to pay.*

Son **am**, *to speak* of, *to mention.* Peidiwch â son gair am dano, *don't mention a word about it.*

Sylw **ar**, *remark* upon. Efe a wnaeth amryw sylwadau da ar y geiriau, *he made several good remarks upon the words.*

Sylw **o**, *notice* of. Ni chymmerais sylw o'r dyn, *I took no notice of the man.*

Sylwi **ar**, *to notice, take notice* of. Efe a sylwodd ar ddau neu dri o bethau, *he took notice of two or three things.*

Synu **wrth**, *to be astonished* at. Synwch wrth hyn, *be astonished at this.* Jer. ii. 12. [Sometimes "synu *at.*" See "Rhyfeddu."]

Taraw **wrth**, *to meet, to meet* with. Tarewais wrthi o ddamwain, *I met her by chance.*

Tebyg **o** or **i**, *likely* to. Y mae efe yn debyg o fod yn llefarwr da, *he is likely to be a good speaker.* Yn debyg i fod yn ôl, *likely to be behind.* Heb. iv. 1.

Tebyg **i**, *like* (to). Y mae hi yn debyg iawn i chwi, *she is very like you.*

Terfyn **ar**, *an end* to. Er mwyn rhoi terfyn ar eu cwerylon, *in order to put an end to their quarrels.*

Tewi **â**, *to keep silent.* The Infin. of this verb is usually translated by "*not to*," and the Imper. by "*do not*" or "*don't*," before verbs of *saying*, &c. Tewch â dweyd wrth neb, *don't tell any one.*

Tosturio **wrth**, *to have pity* upon, *to pity.* Hi a dosturiodd wrtho, *she had compassion on him.* Ex ii. 6.

Tramgwyddo **wrth**, *to be offended* with, at. Yr wyf yn ofni ei bod hi wedi tramgwyddo wrthyf, *I am afraid that she is offended with me.*

Troi **yn**, *to turn* into ; *to become.* Troi y gegin yn barlwr, *to convert the kitchen into a parlour.* Mae efe wedi troi yn ddyn drwg iawn, *he is become a very bad man.*

Trugarhau **wrth**, *to have mercy* upon. Trugarha wrthym, *have mercy upon us.*

Ufuddhau **i**, *to obey.* Ufuddhewch i'ch meistriaid, *obey your masters.* [Cf. L. *obedire.*]

Ymadael *or* ymadaw **â**, *to leave, part* with, *forsake.* Ymadael â phechod, to *forsake sin.*

Ymaflyd **yn**[1], *to take* or *lay hold* of. Samson a ymaflodd yn y ddwy golofn ganol, *Samson took hold of the two middle pillars.* Judges xvi. 29.

Ymbil **â**, *to beseech.* Pan ymbiliodd â ni, *when he besought us.* Gen. xlii. 21.

Ymfoddloni **ar**, *to be content* or *satisfied* with. Ymfoddloni ar gynghor un arall, *to be satisfied with another man's advice.*—Dilyniad Crist.

Ymgymmeryd **â**, *to undertake.* Gwrthodod ymgymmeryd â'r gwaith, *he declined to undertake the work.*

Ymgymmodi **â**, *to be reconciled* to. Y maent wedi ymgymmodi â'u gilydd, *they are reconciled to each other.*

Ymofyn **â**, *to enquire* of. Hi a aeth i ymofyn â'r Arglwydd, *she went to enquire of the Lord.* Gen. xxv. 22.

Ymosod **ar**, *to set* upon, *to attack.* Ymosodwyd arnynt gan ladron, *they were attacked by thieves.*

Ymwadu **â**, *to deny = renounce, disown.* Ymwaded âg ef ei hun, *let him deny himself.* S. Mark xvi. 24.

Ymweled **â**, *to visit.* Mi a ymwelaf â chwi drachefn, *I will see you again.* S. John xvi. 22.

Ymwrthod **â**, *to abstain* from. Ymwrthod â diodydd meddwol, *to abstain from intoxicating drinks.*

Yn unol **â**, *in accordance* with, *agreeably* to. Yn unol â'ch cais, *in accordance with your request.*

Ysgrifenu **at**, *to write* to. Nid hoff genyf ysgrifenu at gyfreithwyr, *I do not like to write to lawyers.*

---

[1] *Mewn* if the object is indefinite. § 732.

INTERJECTIONS.

751. When an interjection is placed before a noun, adjective, or pronoun, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

O *D*ad! O *d*rugarog Dad! Och *f*i!
Ha fab dyn, *Ho son of man.* Ezek. xxix. 18.

752. When the interjection is omitted, the noun or adjective under its government is most usually put in the *middle* sound; but sometimes retains its *radical* initial.

Mid. { *G*aredig gyfaill, *dear friend.*
{ *B*archedig Syr. *D*rugarog Dad.
Rad. *D*uw Dad, o'r nef, trugarha wrthym.

753. When an interjection intervenes between a verb and its subject or object, it is followed by the *middle* sound.

Nid yw efe yn gallu, *ow! d*alu dim, *he is not able, alas! to pay anything.*

754. When it stands before a *finite* verb, the verb retains its *radical* sound; as,

O! *t*yred yma, *O! come here.* Och! *p*aid â'm lladd, *O! do not kill me.*

CLAUSES.

755. Clauses are divided into *main* (or *principal*) and *subjoined.*

756. 'The *main clause* is that which contains the leading proposition; and it must express a complete idea, even when separated from the rest of the sentence.'

He will not be pardoned, unless he repent.
He would not be pardoned, unless he repented.
Pardon him. May he be pardoned.

757. 'A *subjoined clause* is a simple sentence, or part of a sentence, modifying the main clause.'

Arthur says *that he has learnt his lesson.*
Arthur shall have a penny, *because he has learnt his lesson.*
Arthur shall have a penny, *if he will learn his lesson.*

TRANSITIVE CLAUSE.

758. The *Transitive clause* comes after words significative of *affirmation, sense,* and *mental operations;* as *saying, seeing, hearing, feeling, knowing, thinking,* &c. In English it is introduced by the conjunction *that,* and the late *Kerchever Arnold* defines it as "A sentence that stands in apposition to a nominative or accusative, expressed or understood, in the principal sentence.

It is strange *that you think so.* Here the clause *that you think so* is in apposition to *it; i.e., this thing.*

I am glad *that you are come*=I am glad of *this;* namely, *that you are come.*"[1]

759. In Welsh this clause is expressed (*a*) in *positive* sentences, by the *Infinitive* mood, or by the conjunction *y,*

---

[1] Arnold's English Grammar, p. 111.

yr, *mai* or *taw*, with *finite* moods : (*b*) in *negative* sentences, by *finite* moods. The particles of negation in Transitive clauses are *na*, *nad*, and *nas*, except in connection with *mai* (or *taw*), which, if retained, is followed by *nid*.

760. The Infinitive Mood.—This construction is used in *simple narration*, or when the emphasis, if any, falls on the verb of the clause.

761. Form I. The "Infinitive construction;" *i.e.*, *the Infinitive mood followed by its subject.*—This construction occurs when the verb is *bod*, either as main or auxiliary, and when it simply declares a thing; *i.e.*, when it is equivalent to a verb in the Indicative mood. The tenses of the Indic. which will admit of this form in subordinate sentences are the following:—

	Indicative.	*Infinitive.*
Pres.	Yr wyf yn dysgu.	Dywed **fy mod i yn dysgu.**
Imperf.	Yr oeddwn yn dysgu.	Dywedai **fy mod i yn dysgu.**
Perf.-def.	Yr wyf wedi dysgu.	Dywed **fy mod i wedi dysgu.**
Plup.	Yr oeddwn wedi dysgu.	Dywedodd **fy mod i wedi dysgu.**

*** These tenses are fully conjugated under §§ 276 and 294.

Additional Examples.

1. Ac os bwriwn at hyn *eu bod hwy yn ddigon cydnabyddus â'r pethau.*—Edw. Samuel.

2. Harddwch yr iaith yw *bod ei geiriau yn dangaws eu defnydd cyssefin.*—Dr. Pughe.

3. Ymddengys *bod yr Ysgrythyrau wedi myned yn dra phrinion.*—W. Davies.

4. Wrth weled *fod ei holl feddwl ar y byd* a ddaw.—Nicander.

[*Translation.*—1. And if we add to this that they are sufficiently acquainted with the things. 2. The beauty of the language is that its words show their original material. 3. It seems that the Scriptures had become very scarce. 4. Seeing that all his thoughts were on the world to come.]

(*a*) If the subject be a pronoun, it may be omitted; but it is always represented by a corresponding possessive immediately preceding the verb. (Gwyr *fy* mod yn dyfod, *he knows that I am coming.*)

(*b*) With this construction of the Infinitive for Indicative compare the Greek and Latin idioms.

Τῷ οὐ νεμεσίζομ' Ἀχαιοὺς ἀσχαλάαν παρὰ νηυσὶ κορωνίσιν. — Homer.

Dicit *me scribere.* Ferunt *unam exspirasse.*

762. If the sentence is **negative**, it will be expressed by a corresponding tense of the *Indicative* mood.

Gwyr **fod Arthur yn dyfod,** *he knows that Arthur is coming.*

Gwyr **nad yw Arthur yn dyfod,** *he knows that Arthur is not coming.*

Gwyddai **fod Arthur yn dyfod,** *he knew that Arthur was coming.*

Gwyddai **nad oedd Arthur yn dyfod,** *he knew that Arthur was not coming.*

Additional Examples.

1. Mae'n gyffelybol *nad oedd ganddynt y llyfrau hyny.*—Edw. Samuel.
2. Ffrostio *nad oes dim bai ynddi.*—M. Kyffin.
3. Fel y gwybyddont *nad ydynt hwy ond dynion.*—Ed. Prys.
4. Lle y dangosais *nad oes ond un gwir Dduw.*—Edw. Samuel.

[*Translation.*—1. It is likely that they had not those books. 2. To boast that there is no fault in it. 3. That they may know that they are but men. 4. Where I have shown that there is but one true God.]

763. Form II. The "genitive construction;" *i.e., the Infinitive mood with its subject connected to it by the preposition* "o," if the subject be a *noun;* by an inflection of "o honof," if it be a *pronoun.* [See conjugation, §§ 276 and 294.]

This construction is used to express (*a*) the *past Indicative* (perf. and plup. = *I learnt, have learnt, had learnt*); or (*b*) the *Subjunctive* (pres. and imperf. = *may, might, would* or *should learn*).

764. In a **negative** sentence, the former will be expressed by the *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative;* the latter by the *present* and *imperfect Subjunctive.*

Indicative.

Yn gwybod **fyned o'r gwr; fyned o hono ef,** *knowing that the man went; that he went.*

Yn gwybod **nad aeth y gwr; nad aeth efe,** *knowing that the man went not; that he went not.*

Subjunctive.

Gorchymmyn **gymmeryd o honof y llyfr,** *he commands that I should take the book.*

Gorchymmyn **na chymmerwyf y llyfr,** *he commands that I should not take the book.*

Gorchymmynodd **gymmeryd o honof y llyfr,** *he commanded that I should take the book.*

Gorchymmynodd **na chymmerwn y llyfr,** *he commanded that I should not take the book.*

Additional Examples.

1. Gwn yn wir *anfon o'r Arglwydd ei angel.* Acts xii. 11.
2. Yn gwybod *dyngu o Dduw iddo.* Acts ii. 30.
3. Y mae yn dywedyd *siarad o honaw.*—Edw. Samuel.

4. Fel hyn y gwelwn *ganiatâu o'r Eglwys wneuthur* y cyfryw newidiadau.—Com. Prayer.

5. Hyn yw ewyllys yr Hwn a'm hanfonodd i, *cael o bob un fywyd tragywyddol.* S. John vi. 40.

6. Chwennych yr ydym ni *gael o bawb wybod ein hachos.*—M. Kyffin.

7. Mae genyf un ffafr i'w gofyn genych, a hyny yw, *fod o honoch* mor fwyn a gyru i mi engraffau.—Gor. Owen.

8. Yr wyf yn ewyllysio *fod o honynt hwythau* hefyd gyda Myfi. S. John xvii. 24.

[*Translation.*—1. I know of a surety that the Lord hath sent his angel. 2. Knowing that the Lord had sworn to him. 3. He says that he spoke. 4. Thus we see that the Church has given permission to make such alterations. 5. This is the will of Him, That sent Me, that every one may have everlasting life. 6. We desire that all may know our cause. 7. I have one favour to ask you, and that is, that you be so kind as to send me examples. 8. I will that they also be with Me.]

764 (1). The clause has the force of the *Subjunctive* after such sentences as *it is important, it is necessary, it is required,* and after words that imply *commanding, entreating, wishing, praying,* &c. But after words of *commanding, entreating,* &c., the Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition *ar,* upon, or *am,* for, to distinguish this from the other signification of the verb.

Thus, "dywedodd *fyned o hono*"=he said *that he went;* but "dywedodd *ar fyned o hono*"=he said (or ordered) *that he should go.*

(*a*) The connectives *o* and *o honof* are sometimes omitted after a certain class of verbs; as,

Hon yw y ddamnedigaeth, *ddyfod goleuni i'r byd* (for *ddyfod o oleuni i'r byd*).

Na thybiwch *fy nyfod* i dori y gyfraith (for *ddyfod o honof*).

765. Form III. [See conjugation, §§ 276, 294.] The "dative construction;" *i.e., the Infinitive mood preceded by its subject under the government of the preposition* "i."[1]

In this construction the verb may have the force of (*a*) the *past Indicative* (perfect and plup.); or (*b*) the *Subjunctive* (pres. and imperf.), according to the import of the verb of the main clause, as in Form II.

765 (1). In a **negative** sentence, the former will be expressed by *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative;* the latter by

---

[1] After some verbs (verbs of *praying, entreating, wishing,* &c.) the preposition *ar* (on or upon) is used. Dymunem ar ein darllenwyr bwysaw yn iawndeg y rheol, *we would wish our readers to weigh fairly the rule.*—Tegid.

present and *imperfect Subjunctive*, or by *peidio â* (*to cease from*) followed by the other Infinitive verb.

Indicative.

Dywed **i mi fyned**, *he says that I went.*
Dywed **nad aethym**, *he says that I did not go.*

Subjunctive.

Gorchymmynodd **i mi fyned**, *he commanded me to go.*
Gorchymmynodd [**i mi**] **nad awn**, *he commanded* [*me*] *that I should not go.*
Gorchymmynodd **i mi beidio â myned**, *he commanded me not to go.*

Additional Examples.

1. Y dynion a wyddent *iddo ffoi oddi ger bron yr Arglwydd.* Jonah i. 10.
2. Barn rhai yw, *i Wrtheyrn wahodd y Saeson.*—Theo. Evans.
3. Gorchymmynaf *na wlawiont arni hi.* Is. v. 6.
4. Efe a weddïodd *na byddai wlaw.* S. James v. 17.
5. Y mae yn wir *i genedl y Cymry wrthsefyll y surdoes yn hwy na'u cymmydogion.*—Walter Davies.
6. Traethodd *na welsai fo erioed ddiben daionus o un o'r cynghorau.*—M. Kyffin.

[*Translation.*—1. The men knew that he had fled from the presence of the Lord. 2. It is the opinion of some that Vortigern invited the Saxons. 3. I will command that they rain not upon it. 4. He prayed that there might not be rain. 5. It is true that the Welsh nation withstood the leaven longer than their neighbours. 6. He said that he had never seen a good purpose of any of the councils.]

765 (2). The *past Indicative* is often expressed by the auxiliary *darfod*, followed by the above construction.

Dywed *ddarfod* i mi fyned ymaith, *he says that I went away.*
Cânt weled *ddarfod* iddynt hwy eu hunain ymadael â'r apostolion, *they shall see that they themselves have departed from the apostles.*—M. Kyffin.

766. After verbs of *commanding, entreating, wishing, praying*, &c., the prep. *ar* and *am*, followed by the above construction (§ 765), are often used to express the *Subjunctive* = *may, might, would, should.*

Erfyniais **ar** i'r dynion fyned ymaith, *I begged that the men would go away.*
Gan ddywedyd **am** iddynt wneuthur delw, *saying that they should make an image.* Rev. xiii. 14.

(*a*) The auxiliary *bôd* is sometimes found after *ar* or *am* (and sometimes without the prep.), and followed by the preceding construction.

Yn unig [*ar*] *fod* i ni gofio'r tlodion, *only that we should remember the poor.* Gal. ii. 10.

766 (1). In **negative** sentences the *present* and *imperfect Subjunctive* are used, or *peidio â* followed by the other verb in the Infinitive.

Gwel **na ddywedych wrth neb,** *see that thou tell no one.* S. Mark i. 44.

Erfyniais **nad elai y dynion ymaith,**
Erfyniais ar i'r dynion **beidio â myned ymaith,** } *I begged that the men would not go away.*

767. Passive Voice.—The passive form is made by the use of *cael* (to have), accompanied by the constructions mentioned under Forms I., II., III.

(I.) **Fy mod i yn cael fy nysgu,** *that I am* (or *was*) *being taught.*
Nad wyf fi yn cael fy nysgu, *that I am* (or *was*) *not being taught.*
Fod A. yn cael ei ddysgu, *that A. is* (or *was*) *being taught.*
Nad yw A. yn cael ei ddysgu, *that A. is* (or *was*) *not being taught.*
Fy mod i wedi [cael] **fy nysgu,** *that I have been taught.*
Nad wyf fi wedi [cael] **fy nysgu,** *that I have not been taught.*
Fod A. wedi [cael] **ei ddysgu,** *that A. has been taught.*
Nad yw A. wedi [cael] **ei ddysgu,** *that A. has not been taught.*

(II.) **Gael o honof fi fy nysgu,** *that I was* or *have been taught.*
Na ddysgwyd fi, or **na chefais i fy nysgu,** *that I was not* or *have not been taught.*
Gael o A. ei ddysgu, *that A. was* or *has been taught.*
Na ddysgwyd A., or **na chafodd A. ei ddysgu,** *that A. was not* or *has not been taught.*

(III.) **I mi gael fy nysgu,** *that I was* or *have been taught.*
Na ddysgwyd fi, or **na chefais i fy nysgu,** *that I was not* or *have not been taught.*
I A. gael ei ddysgu, *that A. was* or *has been taught.*
Na ddysgwyd A., or **na chafodd A. ei ddysgu,** *that A. was not* or *has not been taught.*

The auxiliary *darfod* (neg. *na ddarfu*) may be prefixed to Form III. *Ddarfod i mi* (neg. *na ddarfu i mi*) *gael fy nysgu.*

(*a*) ☞ Rules 764 (1), 766, apply to the passive as well as to the active voice.

1. Nid yw yn gyfiawn *gael o honynt oll eu cospi.*
2. Deisyfais [*ar*] *i'r bachgen gael ei ryddhau.*
3. Deisyfasant *na chwanegid yr ymadrodd wrthynt.* Heb. xii. 19.
4. Gorchymmynodd *fod i'r epistolau gael eu darllen.*—W. Davies.
5. Deddfwyd yn y Senedd *fod i'r Ddau Destament gael eu cyfieithu.*—W. Davies.
6. Dywedodd [ar] *fod*[1] *i Arthur gael ei ddysgu.*

[*Translation.*—It is not just that they should all be punished. 2. I requested that the boy should be liberated. 3. They entreated that the

[1] In a clause introduced by "fod" or "ar fod," the prep. *i* may stand before the auxiliary *cael* instead of before the subject of the Infinitive: thus—"Dywedodd [ar] fod Arthur *i gael* ei ddysgu."

word should not be spoken to them any more. 4. He commanded that the epistles should be read. 5. It was enacted in Parliament that both Testaments should be translated. 6. He ordered that Arthur should be taught.]

768. Form IV. Another form for the passive is *the Infinitive followed by an object* (= a subject with a finite verb). This construction is used in *positive* sentences, and expresses (*a*) the *past Indicative*, and (*b*) the *Subjunctive*.

Negative sentences will be expressed (*a*) by the *perfect* and *pluperfect Indicative;* or (*b*) if contingent in signification, by the *Subjunctive*, or by *peidio â*, followed by the other verb in the Infinitive.

Indicative.

Dywedodd **ddwyn yr arian ymaith**, *he said that the money was taken away.*

Dywedodd **na ddygwyd yr arian ymaith**, *he said that the money was not taken away.*

Or with *darfod*. Dywedodd *ddarfod dwyn yr arian ymaith;* neg., *na ddarfuwyd dwyn yr arian ymaith.*

Subjunctive.

Gorchymmynodd **ddwyn Arthur yno**, *he commanded that Arthur should be brought there.*

Gorchymmynodd **na ddygid Arthur yno**, } *he commanded that Arthur*
Gorchymmynodd **beidio â dwyn Arthur yno**, } *should not be brought there.*

(*a*) When the sentence has the force of the Subjunctive, the Infinitive is often preceded by the preposition *ar* or *am*.

Gorchymmynodd *ar* (or *am*) *ddwyn Arthur yno.*
Gorchymmynodd *ar* (or *am*) *beidio â dwyn Arthur yno.*

Additional Examples.

1. Gan brofi *ddarfod ein cyfiawnhau.*—W. Salsbri.
2. Yn dywedyd *wneuthur Iesu Grist yn Weinidog i'r enwaediad.* Rom. xv. 8.
3. Sylwasom *drin yr achaws gan ereill yn fedrus a phriodawl.*—Tegid.

[*Translation.*—1. Proving that we have been justified. 2. Saying that Jesus Christ was made a Minister of the circumcision. 3. We have observed that the matter has been treated by others cleverly and properly.]

769. **Y** and **yr, mai** and **taw**, *with finite moods.*

770. **Y** and **yr**, like the *Infinitive for Indicative*, are used in *simple narration;* and hence the order will be **conjunction, verb, subject.**

(*a*) *Y* is put before consonants and governs the *radical* sound; *yr* before vowels.

771. *Y* or *yr* is placed before the tenses *byddaf* (pres. of habit), *byddwn* (imperf. of habit), *byddaf* (future), whether they be main or auxiliary verbs; before the *first future*[1] of all *inflected verbs;* and before the *imperfect* and *pluperfect Subjunctive* of all verbs, whether *inflected* or *periphrastic.*

In **negative** sentences the conjunction *y* or *yr* is omitted, the particle *na, nad,* or *nas,* preceding the verb.

Efe a ddywed **y bydd yn gweled y meddyg bob dydd,** *he says that he sees the medical man every day.*

Yr ym yn gobeithio **y deuant yma y fory,** *we hope that they will come here to-morrow.*

Yr wyf yn meddwl **na ddeuai hi yma,** *I think that she would not come here.*

(*a*) This "finite construction" and the "infinitive construction" (forms I., II., III.) have exactly the same force, *i.e.*, both describe *simple narration;* but some tenses prefer the *finite* and others the *infinitive construction.*

Such verbs as *gwybod, adnabod, gallu, medru, gweled, clywed, meddu, arfer,* will take either form in the *present* and *imperf.* Indicative. See Welsh Exercises, Ch. 45.

Dichon (present tense only) always takes the *finite construction.*

Mi a welaf *yr adwaenoch* [*eich bod yn adnabod*] y trigolion, *I see that you know the inhabitants.* Efe a gyfaddefodd *y gwyddai* [*ei fod yn gwybod*] i ba le yr aethent, *he confessed that he knew where they had gone.*

Additional Examples.

1. Yn dywedyd *y distrywiai yr Iesu y lle yma,* ac *y newidiai efe y defodau.* Acts vi. 14.
2. Caiff weled *y bydd ganddynt oll hamdden* i gymdeithasu âg ef.—Nicander.
3. Sylwer yma *na chynnwysir moddau ereill y perwyddiaid.*
4. Gellir gweled trwy hwn *nas meddai yr un galon.*—Ellis Wynne.
5. Ffrostio y maent *na ddichon eu Heglwys syrthio.*—M. Kyffin.
6. Llawer gwaith y bwriedais *na ddown byth i Fôn.*—Gor. Owen.
7. Yr ydym yn gobeithio *y byddant byw yn ddedwydd yng nghyd.*

[*Translation.*—1. Saying that Jesus would destroy this place, and change the customs. 2. He shall see that they will all have leisure to associate with him. 3. Let it be observed here that the other moods of the verbs are not included. 4. It could be seen through this one that he

---

[1] This construction is sometimes seen with the other tenses of the Indicative; but the *infinitive construction* is far preferable. "Yn dangos nad efe yw yr achos *y gwrthodwyd yr Iuddewon*" (showing that he was not the cause *that the Jews were rejected*) would be better expressed by "*i'r Iuddewon gael eu gwrthod,*" or "*gael o'r Iuddewon eu gwrthod.*"

did not possess a heart. 5. They boast that their Church cannot fall. 6. I resolved many a time that I would never come to Anglesey. 7. We hope that they will live happily together.]

772. Mai or **taw.**—It has been seen that *y* is found when the finite verb takes the lead in a sentence; *mài* (or *tàw*), on the other hand, comes in when some other part of speech (including the Infinitive verb) is antithetic, and goes before the verb. *Mai* is *never* found before *finite* verbs; and hence, as it has no influence over the verb, the verb may either be simple or compound, either in the Indicative or Subjunctive, and of any tense.

Dywedir **mai goleuni yw Duw,** *it is said that God is light.*

Dywedir **mai trwy ffydd y mae Duw yn cyfiawnhau,** *it is said that God justifies by faith.*

Dywedir **mai ceisio anrhydedd yr oedd,** *it is said that he was seeking honour.*

Dywedir **mai yma y daeth eich brawd,** *it is said that your brother came here.*

(*a*) *Mai* in North Wales; *taw* (and sometimes *tai*) in South Wales. Both govern the *radical* sound.

Additional Examples.

1. Hyn a ddywedaf, *mai rhyfeddol yw eu digywilydd-dra.*—E. Samuel.
2. Gosododd ar droed y chwedl, *mai trwy draws anghyfiawnder y daliasai efe diroedd ei ddwy nith.*—W. Davies.
3. Diammheu *mai dynion wedi ymroddi i feddalwch oeddent.*—Theo. Evans.
4. Gwyddai *mai hawdd cymmodi* lle byddai cariad.—Theo. Evans.
5. Credir *mai efe a ranodd Gymru yn esgobaethau.*—Brutus.
6. Gwyddys *taw hirion ydynt.*—D. S. Evans.

[*Translation.*—1. This I will say, that their impudence is wonderful. 2. He set on foot the story that he had held the lands of his two nieces through cruel injustice. 3. It is certain that they were men given to voluptuousness. 4. He knew that it was easy to reconcile where there was love. 5. It is believed that he divided Wales into bishoprics. 6. It is known that they are long.]

773. In a **negative** sentence the antithetic word is preceded by *nad*, or by *mai* or *taw* with *nid;* as,

Dywed **nad efe yw y gwr,** } *he says that he is not*
Dywed **mai nid efe yw y gwr,** } *the man.*

Additional Examples.

1. Yn meddwl *nad gwaith yr awdwyr hyny oeddynt.*—Edw. Samuel.
2. Dywedant *nad rhydd oedd i ni gychwyn yr helynt.*—M. Kyffin.
3. Fe ellir tybied *mai nid ar y ddelw ei hun y gweddïent.*—Theo. Evans.
4. Sylwer *mai nid hawdd camsynied "tonau" (waves) a "tonau" (tunes).*—Tegid.

[*Translation.*—1. Thinking that they were not the work of those authors. 2. They say that we were not at liberty to commence the affair. 3. One may think that it was not to the image itself they prayed. 4. Let it be observed that it is not easy to mistake "tonau" (waves) and "tonau" (tunes).]

CAUSE CLAUSE.

774. Sentences introduced by *conjunctions causal* are divided into (*a*) *cause clause* = ὅτι, *quod, because*: (*b*) *explanatory clause* = γάρ, *enim, for.*

The **cause clause** is headed, in Welsh, by the following words: O achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith, o ran, am (more rarely, achos, herwydd, plegyd, o ethryb, gwaith) = *because.* Gan (can) = *since, seeing that, as.* Yn gymmaint a *or* ag = *inasmuch as.* Rhag = *because* [see 783 (1).]

775. The particles of *negation* in a cause clause are *na, nad,* and *nas,* except when *mai* or *taw* is retained. (See below.)

776. The preceding causal conjunctions are followed by the various forms exhibited under the *Transitive Clause; i.e.*, a *Transitive* may be converted into a *Cause clause* merely by prefixing a causal conjunction.

777. Form I. *The Infinitive followed by its subject,* in *positive* sentences. *The Indicative followed by its subject,* in *negative* sentences. [☞ §§ 761, 762]

O herwydd fy mod i yn dysgu, *because I learn.*

O herwydd nad wyf fi yn dysgu, *because I do not learn.*

O herwydd bod Arthur yn dysgu, *because Arthur learns.*

O herwydd nad yw Arthur yn dysgu, *because Arthur does not learn.*

Additional Examples.

1. Ni chwanegaf felldithio y ddaiar *o herwydd bod bryd calon dyn yn ddrwg o'i ieuenctyd.* Gen. viii. 21.
2. Moses a guddiwyd, *o achos eu bod yn ei weled yn fachgen tlws.* Heb. xi. 23.
3. Nid oes achos anghoelio yr epistol *o herwydd nad yw'r awdwr yn adnabyddus.*—E. Samuel.
4. *Gan fod y pwnc yn bwysig.*—Tegid.
5. *O ran bod yno ymherodron.*—Ellis Wynne.
6. *Gan na chyfaddefir y gwir ganddynt.*
7. *O herwydd bod eu harfau yn loewach.*

[*Translation.*—1. I will not again curse the ground, because the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth. 2. Moses was hid, because they saw him a pretty boy. 3. There is no reason for disbelieving the epistle because the author is not known. 4. As the subject is important. 5. Because there are (or were) emperors there. 6. Seeing that the truth is not confessed by them. 7. Because their arms are (or were) brighter.]

778. Form II. *The Infinitive with its subject connected by* 'o,' or *an inflection of* 'o honof,' in *positive* sentences. *The perfect* or *plup. Indicative followed by its subject,* in *negative* sentences. [☞ §§ 763, 764.]

O herwydd caru o Arthur y rhian, *because Arthur loved the lady.*

O herwydd na charodd Arthur y rhian, *because Arthur did not love the lady.*

O herwydd caru o hono ef hi, *because he loved her.*

O herwydd na charodd efe hi, *because he did not love her.*

Additional Examples.

1. Am hyny *gan brofi o honom wirionedd y grefydd Gristionogol.*—E. Samuel.
2. Ni chaed niwed arno, *o herwydd credu o hono yn ei Dduw.* Dan. vi. 23.
3. *Am farnu o hono ei enaid yn gyfiawn.* Job xxxii. 2.
4. *O herwydd caru o'r Arglwydd chwi.* Deut. vii. 8.
5. *Yn gymmaint a dioddef o hono.* Heb. ii. 18.

[*Translation.*—1. Therefore seeing we have proved the truth of the Christian religion. 2. No hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God. 3. Because he judged his soul righteous. 4. Because the Lord loved you. 5. Inasmuch as He hath suffered.]

779. Form III. *The Infinitive preceded by its subject under the government of the prep.* 'i,' in *positive* sentences. *The perfect* or *plup. Indicative followed by its subject,* in *negative* sentences. [☞ § 765.]

O herwydd i Arthur ei charu, *because Arthur loved her.*

O herwydd na charodd Arthur hi, *because Arthur did not love her.*

Additional Examples.

1. *O herwydd i ti eu hoffi hwynt.* Ps. xliv. 3.
2. *Gan i Dduw ddwyn tystiolaeth i'w roddion ef.* Heb. xi. 4.
3. *Am na chawsant hwy ateb.* Job xxxii. 3.
4. *Yn gymmaint ag i mi eich gwahodd.* Prov. i. 24.

[*Translation.*—1. Because thou hast loved them. 2. Seeing that God bore testimony to his gifts. 3. Because they had no answer. 4. Inasmuch as I have invited you.]

(*a*) *Darfod* is often prefixed to the foregoing construction. O herwydd *darfod* iddo ei gyfodi Ef, *in that He hath raised Him.* Acts xvii. 31.

780. Passive Voice. [☞ § 767.]

I. **O herwydd fy mod i yn cael fy nysgu,** *because I am* (or *was*) *being taught.*

II. **O herwydd cael o honof fy nysgu,** } *because I was* (or *have been*)
III. **O herwydd i mi gael fy nysgu,** } *taught.*

781. Form IV. *The Infinitive followed by an object* (= *a subject with a finite verb*), in *positive* sentences. *The Indicative followed by its subject*, in *negative* sentences. [☞ 768.]

Pos. **O herwydd dwyn yr arian,** *because the money was taken.*

Neg. **O herwydd na ddygwyd yr arian,** *because the money was not taken.*

1. Am ddirmygu eu gwragedd gweddwon hwy. Acts vi. 1.
2. O blegyd maddeu i chwi eich pechodau. 1 S. John ii. 12.

[*Translation.*—1. Because their widows were neglected. 2. Because your sins have been forgiven you.]

(*a*) *Darfod* is often prefixed. Am *ddarfod* ei gyssegru âg ysbryd-oliaeth ddwyfol, *because he was endued* (or *consecrated*) *with divine inspiration.*—M. Williams.

782. **Government.**—*Am* and *gan* (or *can*) have the *middle* sound after them; as Am *or* gan *dd*yfod o hono. *Yn gymmaint a* or *ag* has the same government as *a* and *ag.* (§§ 725, 726.) The others are followed by the *radical* (but sometimes by the *middle* of the verb *bod*).

*O achos d*ywedyd o hono, *because he has said.*
*O herwydd b*od (or *f*od) Arthur yno, *because Arthur is* (or *was*) *there.*

783. **Y** and **Yr, mai** and **taw,** *with finite verbs*, in *positive* sentences. In *negative* sentences *y* and *yr* are omitted; *mai* and *taw* are sometimes omitted, sometimes retained. If retained, they are followed by the negative particle *nid.* [☞ §§ 769–773.]

Am y gwn hyny, *because I know that.*

Am na wn hyny, *because I do not know that.*

O herwydd mai efe yw y gwr, *because he is the man.*

O herwydd nad (or **mai nid**) **efe yw y gwr,** *because he is not the man.*

1. *Gan na wyddom yn drylwyr* pwy yw'r awdwr.—W. Davies.
2. *O herwydd mai yno y ciliodd y rhan fwyaf o wyr llen.*—Th. Evans.

[*Translation.*—1. As we do not positively know who the author is. 2. Because it was thither most of the clergy retreated.]

783 (1). The conjunction *rhag* (because) is followed by *an adjective of the equal degree.*

Rhag *nesed* oedd darpar-wyl yr Iuddewon, *because the Jews' preparation day was so near.* S. John xix. 42.

Rhag *mor dra thirion* ydoedd, *because it was so very lovely.*—Edm. Prys.

784. The **explanatory clause** 'assigns a reason for an assertion made in the preceding clause.'

785. It is introduced by *canys* = for; also by *o achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith.*

786. The particles of *negation* are *ni, nid, nis* (never *na, nad, nas*).

787. The *Explanatory clause*, whether positive or negative, has *always* its verb in a *finite* mood; *i.e.*, in the Indicative or Subjunctive.

Canys y mae yn rhyfelwr, *for he is a warrior.*
Canys nid yw yn rhyfelwr, *for he is not a warrior.*

Additional Examples.

1. Clodforwch yr Arglwydd, *o herwydd ei drugaredd a bery yn dragywydd.* Ps. cxviii. 1.
2. A thi a elwi ei enw Ef Iesu, *o blegyd Efe a wared ei bobl.* S. Matt. i. 21.
3. Ni allwn lai na chydnabod fod ei hysgrythyrau yn wir, *o blegyd ni thardda celwydd* ond naill ai o anwybodaeth ai o feddwl drwg.—E. S.
4. Nid anhebgorawl hyn, *canys gall pob darllenydd weled ystyr a meddwl y geiriau.*—Tegid.
5. Yr wyt yn un o honynt, *canys y mae dy leferydd yn dy gyhuddo.* S. Matt. xxvi. 73.

[*Translation.*—1. Praise the Lord, for his mercy endureth for ever. 2. And thou shalt call his name Jesus, for He shall save his people. 3. We cannot help admitting that her scriptures are true, for a lie springs not but either from ignorance or a wicked mind. 4. This is not essential, for every reader can see the meaning and purpose of the words. 5. Thou art one of them, for thy speech accuseth thee.]

788. The *explanatory* conjunctions, unlike those of the preceding clause, do not require any particular position of the verb, &c., after them. Thus we have

Subject preceding: canys *efe* a ddaeth i'r ty.
Verb preceding: canys *daeth* efe i'r ty.
Object preceding: canys *hwn* a darewaist.

(*a*) *Canys, o achos*, &c., are followed by the *radical* sound.

THE CONCESSIVE CLAUSE.

789. The *Concessive clause* expresses a concession or admission of a certain truth, and is usually followed by the adversative conjunction 'yet' in the subsequent clause. [*εἰ καί, quamquam, although.*]

790. It is introduced in Welsh by *er* and *serch*. The particles of *negation* are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

(*a*) *Er* and *serch* are followed by the *radical* sound; but sometimes by the *middle* of *bod*. Er *b*od or er *f*od.

791. The construction of this clause is the same as that of the *Transitive clause; i.e.*, a *Transitive* may be converted into a *Concessive* clause merely by prefixing a *concessive* conjunction.

792. Form I. *Infinitive followed by its subject*, in *positive* sentences. *Indicative followed by its subject* in *negative* sentences. [☞ §§ 761, 762.]

Er fy mod i yn dysgu, *though I am learning.*
Er nad wyf fi yn dysgu, *though I am not learning.*
Er bod Arthur yn dysgu, *though Arthur is learning.*
Er nad yw Arthur yn dysgu, *though Arthur is not learning.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Er bod rhai yn llawenhau.*—Ellis Wynne.
2. *Er bod gwaedd ganddynt yn ei ddinystr.* Job xxx. 24.
3. *Er ei fod yn ffrwythlawn.* Hosea xiii. 15.
4. *Er bod arno nodau oes ddiweddarach.*—W. Davies.
5. *Er nad oedd y tai ond isel yma.*—Ellis Wynne.
6. *Er bod llawer peth wedi llygru yn eu plith hwy.*—M. Kyffin.

[*Translation.*—1. Although some rejoice. 2. Although they have a cry in his destruction. 3. Though he be fruitful. 4. Although there are marks of a later age upon it. 5. Although the houses were but low here. 6. Although many a thing had become corrupt amongst them.]

793. Form II. *Infinitive with its subject connected by* 'o' *or* 'o honof,' &c., in *positive* sentences. *The perf.* or *plup. Indicative, followed by its subject*, in *negative* sentences. [☞ §§ 763, 764.]

Er dysgu o Arthur, *although Arthur learnt.*
Er na ddysgodd Arthur, *although Arthur did not learn.*
Er dysgu o honof, *although I learnt.*
Er na ddysgais, *although I did not learn.*

Additional Examples.

1. Er gwario o honynt y rhelyw o'r wythnos.—Nicander.
2. Er ymbil o honof er mwyn fy mhlant. Job xix. 17.
3. Er na bu erioed yn llawenach yn ei galon.—Theo. Evans.

[*Translation.*—1. Although they spent the remainder of the week. 2. Though I entreated for my children's sake. 3. Although he never was more heartily glad.]

794. Form III. *Infinitive preceded by its subject under the government of* 'i,' in *positive* sentences. *The perf.* or *plup. Indicative followed by its subject*, in *negative* sentences. [☞ § 765.]

Er i Arthur ddysgu, *although Arthur learnt.*
Er na ddysgodd Arthur, *although Arthur did not learn.*
Er nad aeth hi erioed i mewn.—Ellis Wynne.
Er iddo ddioddef llawer o helbulon.—W. Davies.

795. Passive Voice. [☞ § 767.]

I. **Er bod Arthur yn cael ei ddysgu**, *although Arthur is* (or *was*) *being taught.*
II. **Er cael o Arthur ei ddysgu**, *although Arthur was taught.*
III. **Er i Arthur gael ei ddysgu**, *although Arthur was taught.*

796. Form IV. *Infinitive followed by an object* (= a subject with a finite verb), in *positive* sentences. *The Indicative followed by its subject*, in *negative* sentences. [☞ § 768.]

Er dysgu Arthur, *although Arthur was taught.*
Er na ddysgwyd Arthur, *although Arthur was not taught.*

1. *Er anfon llythyr ato*, er hyny ni chlywyd oddi wrtho.
2. *Er estyn goleuni iddynt*, hwy a gauant eu llygaid rhag gweled.—Brutus.

[*Translation.*—1. Although a letter was sent to him, nevertheless nothing was heard from him. 2. Although light be imparted to them, they close their eyes lest they should see.]

797. **Y** and **yr, mai** and **taw**, *with finite verbs*, in *positive* sentences. [The conjunction *cyd*, "although," is also used in this construction.] In negative sentences *y* and *yr* are omitted. *Mai* and *taw* are sometimes omitted, sometimes retained: if retained, they are followed by the negative particle *nid*. [☞ §§ 769–773.]

Er y gwyr efe, *although he knows.*
Er na wyr efe, *although he does not know.*
Er mai efe yw y dyn, *although he is the man.*
Er nad or **mai nid efe yw y dyn**, *although he is not the man.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Cyd y gallasai ereill yn well.*—Henri Perri.
3. *A chyd* [*y*] *dylem ni addef.* Com. Prayer.
4. *Cyd na byddo ond ammod dyn.* Gal. iii. 15.
4. A bawddyn *er na byddai.*—Gor. Owen.
5. *Er na fedrant silliadu braidd un gair yn ei le.*—Tegid.

[*Translation.*—Although others might have done better. 2. And although we ought to acknowledge. 3. Though it be but a man's covenant. 4. And a mean man, though it might not exist. 5. Although they can hardly spell one word correctly.]

(*a*) *Er* will admit of being followed by an adjective in the equal degree (*e.g., gwyned.*)

Er *lleied* y bo, *though it be ever so small.*
Er *teced* wyt, *though thou art so fair.*

TIME CLAUSE.

798. The conjunctions (or conjunctional adverbs) of *time* are the following. *Pàn, pryd* [ὅτε; quum; when]. *Cyn* [πρὶν; antequam; before]. *Wedi, gwedi* (*cwedi*), *ar ol, yn ol* [ἐπεί; postquam; after]. *Tra* [ἐν ᾧ; dum; whilst]. *Cyhŷd ag* (*cŷd, cŷd ag*) [ἕως; donec; as long as]. *Cyn gynted ag, er cynted ag, gynted ag, mor fuan ag* [ἐπεί; simul ac; as soon as]. *Er pan* [ἐξ οὗ; ex quo; since]. *Hŷd, nes, tàn, oni, onid, onis, hŷd nes, hŷd oni,* &c. [ἀχρί; donec; till, until]. *Pa bryd bynag, pryd bynag* [ὅταν; quandocumque; whenever]. *Newydd* [just when]. *Gyda* (*cyda*) [the same time that]. *Erbyn* [by the time that].

799. Some are construed with a *finite* mood; others with a *finite* or the *infinitive*, optionally.

800. *a*) The following are construed with **finite** verbs: *pan; er pan; tra; oni, onid, onis; hŷd; tan; hŷd oni,* &c.; *pa bryd bynag, pryd bynag;* and such as end with *ag;* as *cyhŷd ag,* &c. The particles of *negation* after these words are *na, nad, nas.*

Here the verb will precede its subject. [Order: **conjunction, verb, subject.**]

Pan y daeth efe yma, *when he came here.*
Pryd nad oedd plentyn iddo, *when he had no child.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Tra yr oedd efe yn ymddiddan.* S. Luke xxiv. 32.
2. *Hyd oni ddaeth efe i Cesarea.* Acts viii. 40.
3. *Pan gymmerth y Cristianogion.*—Theo. Evans.
4. A bydd *pan godwyf gwmmwl.* Gen. ix. 14.
5. Marchnatewch *hyd oni ddelwyf.* S. Luke xix. 13.
6. *Hyd onid elo y llid heibio.* Is. xxvi. 20.
7. A *chynted ag y ganwyd ef.*—Ch. Edwards.
8. Gorfu arnom fyned *oni ddaethom i'r lle.*—Ellis Wynne.
9. Penderfynais chwilio *tan gawn afael arno.*
10. *Can gynted ag y cynnygid un euraidd i'm llaw.*—W. Davies.

[*Translation.*—1. Whilst he was speaking. 2. Till he came to Cæsarea. 3. When the Christians took. 4. And it shall be when I raise a cloud. 5. Trade till I come. 6. Until the indignation be overpast. 7. And as soon as he was born. 8. We were obliged to go until we came to the place. 9. I was determined to search until I could get hold of him. 10. As soon as a golden one was put in my hand.]

(*a*) *Oni*, *onid*, and *onis* (until), are not frequently met with. *Tân* is colloquial. *Pan*, *pryd*, *er pan*, and *tra* are sometimes followed by *ag*. "Pan *ag* yr ydoedd yn sefyll ar ben uchaf y grisiau," *when he was standing on the top of the stairs.*—Brutus.

801. *β*) The following are construed with **finite** or **infinitive** verbs; *cyn*; *wedi*, *gwedi* (*cwedi*); *ar ol*, *yn ol*; *nes*, *hyd nes*; *gyda* (*cyda*); *erbyn*.

802. *a*) With **finite** verbs.

Mynaf ei weled **cyn yr af ymaith**, *I* will *see him before I go away.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Wedi y cadarnhäer*, nid yw neb yn ei ddirymu. Gal. iii. 15.
2. *Wedi y delo arnoch.* 3. *Wedi'r êl* y daw'r eilwaith.
4. *Nes y deffroer ef.* 5. *Gyda y bydd amser yn darfod.*
6. *Erbyn y gorphenwch y wers.*

[*Translation.*—1. After it is confirmed, no man disannulleth it. 2. After it shall have come upon you. 3. After it has gone, it will come again. 4. Until he is awakened. 5. Just when time shall end. 6. By the time you finish the lesson.]

(*a*) *Wedi*, *ar ol*, and *yn ol* are but rarely found with a finite verb of past time.

803. *b*) With **infinitive** verbs. The construction of the sentence is the same as that of the *Transitive* and the *Cause*.

804. The time marked by the infinitive depends on the verb of the preceding clause; if it be in past time, the infinitive also will refer to past time: if in present or future, the infinitive will express future time or contingency.

Cymmerodd ofal o hono, **nes i mi ddyfod**, *he took care of him till I came.*

Cymmer ofal o hono, **nes i mi ddyfod**, *take care of him until I come.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Wedi myned o honynt*, hwy a ddaethant i'r porth. Acts xii. 10.
2. Pa le caid awen, *cyn cael o'r môr ei ddorau?*—Gor. Owen.
3. *Cyn gwneuthur o honot y mynyddoedd.*
4. *Wedi iddo gymmeryd pwyll.* Acts xii. 12.
5. Pan oedd ym Mesopotamia, *cyn iddo drigo yng Ngharran.* Acts vii. 2.
6. *Nes i'r Rhufeiniaid gwbl ddinystrio Ierusalem.*—Ch. Edwards.
7. *Ar ol iddo ef bregethu yn fuddiol.*—Ch. Edwards.
8. *Wedi ei myned hi yn ddydd.* Acts xii. 18.
9. *Ar ol myned y wybodaeth o'r gwir Dduw ar goll.*—Theo. Evans. [§ 764 (1), *b*.]
10. *Erbyn i mi ddadebru*, gwelwn ein bod wedi dyfod i ryw sefyllfod. —E. Wynne.

[*Translation.*—1. After they went, they came to the gate. 2. Where could muse be found, before the sea had its doors? 3. Before Thou madest the mountains. 4. When he had considered. 5. When he was in M., before he dwelt in Charran. 6. Until the Romans had completely destroyed Jerusalem. 7. After he had preached profitably. 8. After it had become day. 9. After the knowledge of the true God was lost. 10. By the time I was recovered, I could see we were come to some station.]

(*a*) Cf. Gr. ἕως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν αὐτὸν = *nes ei ddyfod ef.*

805. The verb is put in the future *Indicative*, or in the *Subjunctive*, according as the action or state is contemplated as *certain*, or *contingent*. The future Indicative is, however, frequently met with, even when *contingency* is intended to be expressed.

806. Y and **Yr.**—The following conjunctions, when construed with *finite* verbs, are followed by the affirmative particle *y* or *yr*: *cyn, pryd, wedi, ar ol, yn ol, hŷd, nes, hŷd nes, tra,*[1] *gyda, pryd bynag, pa bryd bynag*, and such as end in *ag; as cyhŷd ag*, &c.

Pryd y daeth dy fab. *Tra y* dychwelir draw'n eu hol.—Ed. Prys.

807. *Pan, er pan*, and *tan*, may or may not be followed by the particle; if they are not, they govern the verb in the *middle* sound.

Pan y daeth; or, *Pan dd*aeth, *when he came.*

808. *Oni, onid, onis, hyd oni*, &c., are never followed by *y* or *yr*. They have the same government as *ni, nid, nis.*

*Hyd oni dd*ychwelwyf, *until I return.*

MOTIVE CLAUSE.

809. The *Motive clause* expresses a *purpose*, or "*a direction of the agent's will toward an end.*" [Ἵνα, ὅπως; *ut; in order that, that.*]

In Welsh it is headed

810. *α*) In positive sentences, by *mal, fal, fel, megys, modd* (in order that), followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Subjunctive* mood. In *negative* sentences, by the *same conjunctions*, followed by *na, nad, nas*, with the *same mood.*

---

[1] *Tra* is sometimes found without the particle, and is then followed by the *radical, middle*, or *aspirate*. The *radical* is preferable.

"Tra cryno dail yr aethnen werdd."—D. S. Evans.
Tra *f*um yno. Tra *ph*ery haul.

Daeth **fel y gwelai efe hi**, *he came that he might see her.*
Daeth **fel na welai efe hi**, *he came that he might not see her.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Fel y moliannwyf dy enw.* Ps. cxlii. 7.
2. *Fel na welai farwolaeth.* Heb. xi. 5.
3. *Fel y mynegwyf dy holl wyrth.*—Ed. Prys.
4. *Modd y delom o'r diwedd i'w lawenydd.*—Com. Prayer.
5. *Fel nad eppilient.* Acts vii. 19.

[*Translation.*—1. That I may praise thy name. 2. That he should not see death. 3. That I may declare all thy virtue. 4. That we may at last come to his joy. 5. That they might not multiply.]

811. *β*) By *i* = "to;" *er* = "for;" *er mwyn* = "for the sake of;" with the *Infinitive*, in *positive* sentences. In *negative* sentences, we borrow the preceding form, *mal na*, &c., with *Subjunctive*; or insert *peidio â* between the motive headings and the Infinitive.

Pos. Aethym yno **er gweled fy nghyfaill.**

Neg. Aethym yno **fel na welwn**, or **er peidio a gweled fy nghyfaill.**

(*a*) The genitive or dative of the person is often added to the infinitive, especially with "*er mwyn.*" Aethym yno *er mwyn gweled o honof* [*er mwyn i mi weled*] *fy nghyfaill, I went there that I might see my friend.*

Additional Examples.

1. Anfonwyd ef i Rydychain *i yfed yn helaethach o ffrydiau dysg.*—W. Davies.
2. *Er coffâu ei ryglyddus grog a'i ddioddefaint Ef.*—Com. Prayer.
3. *Er rhoddi terfyn ar bob ymryson.*—Tegid.
4. Ac yno syrthio i lawr *i addoli'r Baban Brenhinol.*—Nicander.
5. Disgwyl a wnaethant am amser *i ruthro ar eu meistriaid.*—Theo. Evans.
6. *Er mwyn cael mawrlles gollyngdod.*—Com. Prayer.
7. *Er mwyn dynodi lle yr acen.*—Tegid.
8. Sefydlu gŵyl *i goffâu dioddefaint Arglwydd y bywyd.*—Brutus.

[*Translation.*—1. He was sent to Oxford to drink more fully of the streams of learning. 2. In order to commemorate his meritorious cross and passion. 3. In order to put an end to every dispute. 4. And there to fall down to worship the Royal Infant. 5. They waited for an opportunity to rush upon their masters. 6. In order to receive the benefit of absolution. 7. In order to mark the place of the accent. 8. To establish a fast to commemorate the sufferings of the Lord of life.]

(*a*) Cf. the Greek and English idioms.

Κατέλιπεν αὐτοὺς φυλάττειν τὸ στρατόπεδον.
He left them *to guard the camp.*

(*b*) *I* governs the *middle; er* and *er mwyn*, the *radical.*

(*c*) *I'r diben o*, and *i'r bwriad o*, followed by the Infinitive, are now frequently used. These are probably but a mere translation of the English phrase, '*for the purpose of.*' Daeth yma *i'r diben o weled Arthur, he came here for the purpose of seeing Arthur.*

812. *γ*) By *rhag*, which denotes 'a negative purpose, a purpose of prevention' = *μή*; *ne; lest, that . . not*. *Rhag* is followed by the *Infinitive* (with or without the genitive or dative of the person); by the *Subjunctive;* and sometimes by the future *Indicative*.

Aeth A. ymaith, **rhag gweled ei elyn,**
rhag gweled o hono ei elyn,
rhag iddo weled ei elyn,
} *A. went away, lest he should see his enemy.*

Aeth A. ymaith, **rhag y gwelai ei elyn,** *A went away, lest he might see his enemy.*

El A. ymaith, **rhag y gwel ei elyn,** *A. goes away, lest he should see his enemy.*

(*a*) When the infinitive is used, the time marked depends on the verb of the preceding clause. [Read § 804.]

(*b*) *Rhag* is followed by the *radical* sound. Rhag *b*od; rhag *d*yfod.

Additional Examples.

1. Felly Gwrtheyrn, *rhag y difreinnid ef*, a alwodd am gymmhorth y Saeson.—Theo. Evans.

2. Iawn yw ysgrifenu pob gair yn null ei ddefnydd, *rhag cuddiaw ei ddechreuad*.—Dr. Pughe.

3. Dadleuwch â'ch mam, *rhag i mi ei diosg hi*. Hos. ii. 3.

4. Lleihâf hwynt, *rhag arglwyddiaethu ar y cenhedloedd*. Ezek. xxix. 15.

5. Gadewch wybod, *rhag i mi yru i chwi* yr hyn a welsoch o'r blaen. —Gor. Owen.

[*Translation.*—1. So Vortigern, lest he should be dethroned, solicited the aid of the Saxons. 2. It is proper to write every word in the form of its substance, lest its origin be obscured. 3. Plead with your mother, lest I strip her. 4. I will diminish them, that they may not rule over the nations. 5. Let me know, lest I should send you what you have seen before.]

THE EFFECT CLAUSE.

813. The *Effect clause* expresses a *result* or *consequence*, and in English 'refers to a *so* or *such* in the principal sentence.' [Ὥστε; *ut;* that.]

'The noise was *such, that* I could not hear a word.'

(*a*) "*Such*" will be expressed in Welsh by *y fath* or *cyfryw;* "*so*" by *mòr* and *cŷn*, or simply by putting the adjective in the *equal* degree (*e.g., teced, cymmaint*).

The *Effect clause* is headed

814. *α*) In *positive* sentences by *mal, fal, fel*, followed by *y* or *yr*, with the *Indicative;* unless the verb is *contingent* in signification, when, of course, it is put in the *Subjunctive*. In *negative* sentences it is headed by the *same conjunctions*

with *na, nad, nas,* or *ag na, ag nad, ag nas,* and joined to the *same moods;* or simply by *na, nad, nas,* without the conjunctions.

Cymmaint oedd ei lid **fel y lladdodd ei frawd.**
Mor anwybodus ynddi, **mal nas gellwch ei chlodfori.**

Additional Examples.

1. Y mae efe *mor* greulawn *fel y lladdai ei frawd,* pe gallai.
2. *Y fath* hurtrwydd a'u perchenogai *fel y danfonasant genhadon atynt.*—Theo. Evans.
3. *Mor* erchyll ac ofnadwy, *na allai neb eu haros.*—Edw. Samuel.
4. Cynnhyrfwyd ei feddwl *gymmaint, fel yr addunodd yn sobr.*—Nicander.
5. Gan fod hyn *mor* eglur *na ellir dim gwâd o honaw.*—M. Kyffin.
6. Mewn trefn *mor* odidog *nad oes bossibl i un maen fod cyn hardded.*—E. Wynne.

[*Translation.*—1. He is so cruel, that he would kill his brother, if he could. 2. Such stupidity possessed them, that they sent messengers to them. 3. So horrible and dreadful, that no one could endure them. 4. His mind was so much moved that he solemnly vowed. 5. Seeing that this is so clear, that there is no denial of it. 6. In such excellent order, that it is not possible for one stone to be so beautiful.]

(*a*) It is not necessary that the words corresponding to *so* and *such* should always be expressed.

Ceryddodd y môr *fel y sychodd.* Ps. cvi. 9.
O herwydd ffyddlawn oedd efe, *fel na chaed ynddo nac amryfusedd na bai.* Dan vi. 4.

815. β) The temporals *oni, hyd oni, nes, hyd nes* = "until," have often the force of *that. Oni* and *hyd oni* are joined to a *finite* mood; *nes* and *hyd nes* to a *finite* or the *infinitive* mood.

Mor dosturus oedd yr olwg, **oni orfu i'r cigyddion anfon am win,** *so pitiful was the sight that the cruel ones were obliged to send for wine.*—Ch. Edwards.

INTERROGATIVE CLAUSE.

816. 'Questions are divided into *predicative* and *nominal,* according as the question refers to a predicate or to an object (person or thing).

817. Predicative questions are those where their proposer desires only an affirmation or denial to his inquiry. These are expressed in English merely by placing the finite verb first, and by the accentuation;'[1] in Greek

---

[1] Kühner and Arnold's Greek Grammars.

and Latin, generally, and in Welsh always, by interrogative particles.

818. The **Interrogative particles** are *a, ai, oni, onid, onis, ai ni, ai nid, ai nis.*

819. *A* is the most simple and unemphatic of the interrogative particles, and is placed before *finite* verbs. The answer to the question made by it may be *affirmative* or *negative.* [*ἦ; ne.*]

A ddaeth eich brawd? *has your brother come?*
A atebir y llythyr? *will the letter be answered?*

820. *Oni, onid,*[1] *onis, ai ni, ai nid,*[1] *ai nis,* are, like *a,* placed before *finite* verbs, and generally expect an *affirmative* answer. [*ἀρα οὐν; nonne.*]

Oni ddarllenasoch chwi? *have you not read?*
Onid aeth efe yno? *has he not gone there?*

821. **Government.**—*A* is placed before *vowels* or *consonants,* and when before consonants it governs the *middle* sound: *oni* and *ai ni* are placed before *consonants,* and govern the *aspirate* sound of the *first* class, the *middle* of the *second* and *third: onis* and *ai nis* are placed before *consonants,* and govern the *radical: onid* and *ai nid* before *vowels.*

822. *Ai* (*= is it?*) is more emphatic than *a,* and *may stand before any word, except a finite verb.* The answer may be *affirm.* or *negative.*

823. *Ai* may stand before

(*a*) A noun: *Ai llyfr* yw?
(*b*) An adj.: *Ai afiach* yw?
(*c*) A pronoun: *Ai efe* yw y gwr?
(*d*) An Infin. verb: *Ai darllen* y mae?
(*e*) A partic.: *Ai wedi ei guro* y cerir ef?
(*f*) An adv.: *Ai yma* y mae?
(*g*) A conj.: *Ai fel* y'th gynnorthwywn y daethost?
(*h*) A prep.: *Ai yn* y ty y mae?

824. *Onid* and *ai nid* are employed like *ai,* and generally expect an *affirmative* answer. [*ἀρα οὐν; nonne.*]

Onid dirgelwch mawr yw hyn? *is not this a great mystery?*

☞ Thus *onid* and *ai nid* are employed like *a* or *ai.*

825. **Government.**—*Ai, onid,* and *ai nid,* are placed before *vowels* and *consonants,* and govern the *radical* sound.

826. **Answers** to predicative questions are made (*a*) by a *repetition of the verb,* preceded, in *negative* answers, by *na* or

[1] *Onid* and *ai nid* are also employed like *ai.* See § 824.

nac; (*b*) by *do* in *positive*, and *naddo* in *negative* answers; (*c*) by *ïe* in *positive*, and *nage* in *negative* answers.

827. Questions made by **a, oni, onid,** &c., followed by *finite* verbs, if made in *any tense, except the perfect indefinite*, are answered by the proper tense and person of the same verb; and, if the answer be *negative*, *na* or *nac* will precede the verb.

A oes mawredd yn Nuw? Affirm. answer, *Oes* (= there is).
A ddaw eich brawd yma? Neg. answer, *Na ddaw*[1] (= he will not come).

Additional Examples.

A all dyn waredu ei hun? *Na all.*—T. Charles.
A ddylem ninnau wneuthur yr un fath? *Dylem.*—T. Charles.

(*a*) If the verb be *periphrastic* (*i.e.*, an inflection of *bod* with a participle of the other verb), the participle is omitted in the answer, unless emphasis is required, in which case the sentence may be repeated.

A ydyw Arthur yn dysgu? Simple: *ydyw.* Emphatic: *ydyw, y mae;* or *ydyw, y mae Arthur yn dysgu.*

(*b*) Very often the answer is made by an inflection of *gwneuthur* (to do), and, if emphatic, with a repetition of the verb.

A ddysgi di hyn? Simple: *gwnaf.* Emphatic: *gwnaf, mi a'i dysgaf.*

828. If the question is asked in the *perfect indefinite*, the answer is made "*do*" in *positive;* by "*naddo*" or "*na ddo*" in *negative* clauses: sometimes by a *repetition of the verb*, as in other tenses.

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do*, or *dysgais; naddo*, or *na ddysgais.*
A fu pawb feirw yn Adda? *Do.*—T. Charles.
A barhäodd dyn yn y cyflwr hwn? *Na ddo.*—T. Charles.

(*a*) When emphasis is required, the verb is repeated after "*do*" or "*naddo.*"

A ddysgaist ti dy wers? Ans. *do, mi a'i dysgais: naddo, ni ddysgais hi* (or *ni ddysgais mo honi*).

829. Questions made by **ai, onid,** and **ai nid,** followed by *nouns, adjectives,* &c., are answered, *affirmatively* by *ïe, negatively* by *nage.*

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr? Affirm. answer, *Ïe.* Neg. *Nage.*

(*a*) When emphasis is required, *ïe* is followed by a part or the whole of the question (the interr. particle being, of course, omitted); *nage* is followed by *nid*, with a part or the whole of the question.

Ai Arthur a ddygodd y llyfr?
Affirm. *Ïe, Arthur: ïe, Arthur a'i dygodd.*
Neg. *Nage, nid Arthur: nage, nid Arthur a'i dygodd.*

---

[1] The subject of the verb used in answering the question is not expressed: *na ddaw*—not *na ddaw efe.* [See Welsh Exercises, Ch. 6.]

830. When questions, to which *affirmative* answers are expected, are asked at the end of the sentences (as in English, "you wrote to your brother, *did you not?*") the forms *oni, onid, onis,* are put before *finite verbs: onid do* is used when the verb of the sentence is in the *perf. indefinite*[1]: *onide* (= *onid ïe*) when the sentence begins with any part of speech except a *finite* verb.

Fin. verb.	Mae Arthur yn ddyn da, *onid ydyw efe?*	Ydyw.
	Fe ddaw eich brawd yma, *oni ddaw efe?*	Daw.
Perf. indef.	Dysgodd Arthur ei wers, *onid do?*	Do.
Other words.	Llyfr da ydyw hwn, *onide?*	Ië.
(See § 823.)	Afiach iawn yw'r dyn, *onide?*	Ië.
	Efe yw'r milwr goreu, *onide?*	Ië.

830 (1). But when *negative* answers are expected to such questions, *a* is put before *finite verbs: ai do* is used when the verb of the sentence is in the *perf. indefinite*[1]: *aie* (= *ai ïe*) when the sentence begins with any part of speech except a *finite* verb.

Fin. verb.	Nid ydyw Arthur yn ddyn da, *a ydyw efe?*	Nac ydyw.
	Ni ddaw eich brawd yma, *a ddaw efe?*	Na ddaw.
Perf. indef.	Ni ddysgodd Arthur ei wers, *ai do?*	Na ddo.
Other words.	Nid llyfr da ydyw hwn, *aie?*	Nage.
	Nid afiach yw'r dyn, *aie?*	Nage.
	Nid efe yw'r milwr goreu, *aie?*	Nage.

831. When the person spoken to expresses his assent to or dissent from an assertion or saying made by the person speaking, the assent or dissent is expressed in the same way as in answering questions.

Mae Arthur yn ddyn da.	*Ydyw.*	*Nac ydyw.*
Arthur is a good man.	*Yes.*	*No.*
Chwi a welsoch eich cyfaill ddoe.	*Do.*	*Naddo.*
You saw your friend yesterday.	*Yes.*	*No.*
Milwr dewr yw Arthur.	*Ië.*	*Nage.*
Arthur is a brave soldier.	*Yes.*	*No.*

832. '**Nominal** questions are those in which the enquirer wishes to know the *name of* a *person, place, the time,* &c., and are introduced by substantive or adjective interrogative pronouns, or by interrogative adverbs.'[2]

833. Pwy, *who, whose, whom; which; what,* is singular

---

[1] Sometimes *oni* [or *ai*] with the proper person and tense of the verb, or of the auxiliary verb *gwneuthur* (to do). Dysgodd Arthur ei wers, *oni ddysgodd efe,* or *oni wnaeth efe?*

[2] Arnold's Greek Grammar.

and plural, and of all genders: **pa**, *what*, is singular and plural, and of all genders.

(*Pwy.*)	*Pwy* a wnaeth y byd?	*Pwy* yw y rhai hyn?
	Pwy wyt ti, fy merch?	Ych *pwy* a gymmerais?
(*Pa.*)	*Pa* ddyn yw efe?	*Pa* beth yw dyn?
	Pa lyfrau a gymmerodd?	

(*a*) The difference between *pwy* and *pa* is this: *pwy*, being itself a substantive pronoun, should never be joined to a substantive; *pa*, being an adjective, should never be without one. Dr. Davies says: "Differentia utriusque est quod *pa* semper substantivum habet adjunctum; *pwy* nunquam." *Pwy* however has a substantive joined to it, sometimes in good authors, and continually in colloquial language; and *pa* stands alone in ancient authors, and sometimes in modern works.

Pwy ffraethach areithydd? *what more fluent speaker?*—Gor. Owen.

Gwraig i *bwy un* o honynt yw hi? *whose wife of them is she?* S. Luke xx. 33.

Y mawr drugarog Dduw, *pa* wnaf? *the great merciful God, what shall I do?*—Llywarch Hen.

Ni ddawr newynog *pa* ys, *the hungry cares not what he eats.*—Adage.

Pa yw tadogaeth y gair? *what is the etymology of the word?*—Tegid.

834. *Pa* is often omitted, the following word acquiring an interrogative character. Thus we may say,

Pa beth or *beth*=what. *Pa sawl* or *sawl*=how many. *Pa faint* or *faint*=how much, how many.

Pa sawl (or *sawl*) rhan sydd mewn dyn? *Beth* a gollodd dyn?

835. The interrogative adverbs *lle*, *sut*, *pryd*, &c., which are really substantives, have acquired an adverbial character by the omission of a prep. and the interrogative *pa*. It is often optional whether a question is asked with the separate words, or with an ellipsis of the prep., or of the prep. and *pa*. Thus we may say,

Ym mha le, *pa le*, or *lle*, where?	*Ym mha sut*, *pa sut*, or *sut*, how?
I ba le, *pa le*, or *lle*, whither?	*Ar ba bryd*, *pa bryd*, or *pryd*, when?
Ym mha fodd, *pa fodd* (contr. *p'odd*), or *modd*, how?	*Am ba ham*, or *pa ham* (contracted *pam*), why?

(*a*) These interrogatives, whether expressed fully or elliptically, are followed by the auxiliary adverb *y* or *yr* in *affirmative* sentences; by *na*, *nad*, *nas*, in *negative* sentences.

Lle *yr* aeth efe?	Sut *na* welsoch ef?
Pa ham *y* daeth efe?	Pa ham *na* ddaeth efe?
Pa ham *y* derbyniodd gliniau fyfi? Job iii. 12.	Pa ham *na* bum farw o'r bru? Job iii. 11.

836. **Double** *questions, corresponding to* πότερον . . . ἤ; *utrum . . . an; whether . . . or.*

Whether = *a*, *ai*, alone or preceded by *pa un*, *pa'r un*, or *pa un* (*pa'r un*) *bynag.*

Or = *ai*, *ynte*, *neu.*

Or not (no): *not* is expressed by *peidio*, or *ni* (or *na*) with the verb of the clause.

Nis gwn *a* ddaw Arthur *ai peidio, I do not know whether Arthur will come or not.*

Nis gwn *pa un ai* Arthur *ai* Dafydd a ddaw, *I do not know whether Arthur or David will come.*

Myfi a af *pa'r un bynag* a ddeuwch chwi *neu beidio, I will go whether you will come or not.*

Myfi a af *pa'r un bynag* a ddeuwch chwi *ai ni ddeuwch, I will go whether you will come or will not come.*

[*** See more fully on *direct* and *dependent questions*, Ch. 28th of the Welsh Exercises.]

WISH CLAUSE.

837. When we wish simply, *i.e.*, when the thing may or may not exist or happen, we use (*a*) *the present Subjunctive;* or (*b*) *the Imperative*, either alone or *preceded by O;* or (*c*) *O am* (= Oh for).

a) Bendigedig *fo* enw'r Arglwydd, *blessed be the name of the Lord.*
Llwyddiant *a gaffo*, *may he have success.*
Buan y *delo*, *may he soon come.*
Yr Arglwydd a'n *cadwo* ni, *may the Lord keep us.*
Dyfod a *wnelo*, *may he come.* Byth na *syflwyf*, *may I never move.*
Tywyllwch a'i *gorchuddio*, *may darkness cover him.*

b) O bydded ddedwydd, pa le bynag yr elo, *Oh may he be happy, wherever he goes.*
O bydded iddo lwyddo yn ei gais, *Oh may he succeed in his attempt.*

c) O am gyfeirio fy ffyrdd, *Oh that my ways may be directed.* Ps. cxix. 5.
O am gael gweled fy mhlentyn anwyl, *Oh that I may see my dear child.*
O am ras, *Oh for grace.* O am iddo ddyfod, *Oh that he may come.*

838. When the wish implies a denial of the actual existence of the fact or circumstance, we use the imperfect or pluperfect Subjunctive, preceded by *O na, O nad, O nas.* [εἴθε, εἰ γαρ ; *utinam ; would that ! oh that !*]

Imperfect.

O na wyddwn pa le y cawn Ef! *Oh that I knew where I might find Him!* Job xxiii. 3.
O na bai fy mhen yn ddyfroedd! *Oh that my head were waters!* Jer. ix. 1.
O na byddai fyw Ismael ger dy fron Di! *Oh that Ishmael might live before Thee!*

Pluperfect.

O na buasit ti yma cyn ei farw! *would that thou hadst been here before he had died.*
O na welswn fy mrawd cyn iddo fyned! *would that I had seen my brother before he had gone!*

(*a*) "The literal signification of *O na* is *Oh! that not;* and in order to elicit the full signification from this, some ellipsis must be supplied as passed over by the speaker under the intensity of passion. It expresses rather regret that a thing is not, than a desire that a thing should be; thus, *O na ddeuai y boreu*=Oh [how grievous] that the morning cometh not."[1]

SUPPOSITION AND INFERENCE.

839. *Supposition* or *conditional clauses* are divided into (*a*) **Fact supposition,** which expresses "possibility or simple supposition, without any expression of uncertainty."[2] (*b*) **Contingent supposition,** which expresses "uncertainty with a prospect of decision."[3] (*c*) **Non-fact supposition,** which expresses "impossibility or belief that the thing is not so."[4]

840. The *Inference clause* (called also the *apodosis* or *consequence*) is that which accompanies a supposition. It may be a *main clause*, a *transitive*, an *interrogative*, &c.

841. *a*) The **Fact supposition** is introduced by *o* (=εἰ), *od*, or *os*,[5] in *positive* sentences: by *os na*, *nad*, or *nas*, in *negative* sentences, if the adverb immediately follows *os;* by *os . . ni*, *nid*, or *nis*, if the adverb is separated from *os* by the intervention of the nominative, &c. [*εἰ; si; if.*]

842. The *Fact supposition* has its verb in the *Indicative;* the *Inference*, in the *Indicative* or *Imperative.*

Os ydys *yn ein holi ni,* **bydded** *hysbys i chwi, if we are questioned, be it known unto you.* Acts iv. 9.

O chefais *ffafr yn dy olwg di,* **rhodder** *i mi fy einioes, if I have found favour in thy sight, let my life be given me.* Esth. vii. 3.

(*a*) The *Non-fact supposition* is sometimes assumed or granted as truth, and then takes the form of the *Fact.* Here the *context*, not the *form*, must determine the clause.

Os drwg y *dywedais*, tystiolaetha o'r drwg. [So in Gr., *εἰ κακῶς ἐλάλησα.* S. John xviii. 23.]

So also in Latin.—"*Si pugnat* extricata densis
Cerva plagis, erit ille fortis."—Horace.

Additional Examples.

Canys os Abraham a *gyfiawnhawyd* trwy weithredoedd, y mae iddo orfoledd. Rom. iv. 2. [Gr. *εἰ ἐδικαιώθη.*]

O thelais ddrwg, erlidied y gelyn. Ps. vii. 4. [Gr. *εἰ ἀνταπέδωκα.*]

---

[1] Hughes on Syntax. [2] Arnold's Latin Prose composition.
[3] Arnold's Latin Prose composition. [4] Ibid.
[5] *Or* was formerly used. "*Or* mynir fy nyfod i mywn (*si placet venire me intus*)."—Zeuss: Gram. Celt., p. 547.

843. *β*) The **Contingent supposition** is introduced by *o, od,* or *os,* in *positive* sentences; by *os na, nad, nas;* or *os . . ni,* &c., in *negative* sentences, like the Fact supposition. [ἐὰν, ἄν, ἤν; *si; if.*] *Negative* sentences are also introduced by *oni, onid, onis, oddi eithr,* and *oddigerth.* [ἐὰν μὴ; *nisi; unless.*]

(*a*) *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* are construed with the Infinitive. See § 845.

844. The *Contingent supposition* has its verb generally (but see § 846) in the *Indicative* mood: the *Inference,* in the *Indicative, Imperative, Subjunctive,* or *Infinitive.*

Os byddwch *ewyllysgar, daioni y tir a* **fwytewch,** *if ye be willing, ye shall eat the good of the land.* Is. i. 19.

Onid af, *ni* **ddaw** *y Diddanydd atoch, if I go not, the Comforter will not come unto you.* S. John xvi. 7.

Os na bydd *yno, if he be not there.* **Os** *efe* **ni bydd** *yno, if he be not there.*

Additional Examples.

1. *Os bydd wedi gwneuthur pechodau,* hwy a *faddeuir* iddo. S. James v. 15.
2. Pawb a'i *cenfydd, o bydd bai.*—Gor. Owen.
3. Felly ni *ellwch* chwithau, *onid aroswch ynof Fi.* S. John xv. 4.
4. Rhag i'm gwrthwynebwyr *lawenychu, os gogwyddaf.*
5. Rhag, *os na wnawn,* na *bo* genym na nerth na chyfleustra i wneuthur hyny.—Ed. Samuel.
6. *Os gwneir hyn,* nid *ydym* heb ddyfal a dwys obeithiaw y llwyddwn. —Tegid.
7. Yr *oedd* y cyfeithiad yn ddiweddar iawn, *os nad yw eto, mewn bod.* —W. Davies.
8. Beth ynte, *os y Pab ni wyr oddi wrth hyn?*—M. Kyffin.

[*Translation.*—1. If he shall have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. 2. All will perceive it, if there be a fault. 3. So neither can ye, except ye abide in Me. 4. Lest my enemies should rejoice, if I fall. 5. Lest, if we do not, we should have neither strength nor opportunity to do that. 6. If this is done, we are not without diligently and earnestly hoping that we shall succeed. 7. The translation was very lately in existence, if it is not still. 8. What then, if the Pope does not know about this?]

845. *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth,* like the *causal conjunctions,* are followed by the *Infinitive* mood.

Oddi eithr { **ei fod yn dyfod,** *except he is coming.*
dyfod o hono, *except he come.*
iddo ddyfod, *except he come.*

846. If the *Inference clause* be a *Transitive,* depending on a verb of the past time, the *Contingent* has its verb in the *imperfect Subjunctive.*

Dywedodd y **cawn** fod yno, **os cadwn** ei orchymmynion.

(*Explanation.*—'*Dywedodd*,' a verb of the past time; '*y cawn fod yno*,' a Transitive clause, and here the Inference of '*os cadwn ei orchymmynion*,' which is a Contingent supposition, having its verb in the imperfect Subjunctive.)

(*a*) The same construction is found after sentences which are resolvable into a *Main* and a *Transitive* (*e.g.*, *He promised him money=he said that he would give him money*). *Addawodd* (=*dywedodd y rhoddai*) arian iddo, *os ewyllysiai*.

Additional Examples.

1. *Rhoisant gynghor* i ymadaw *os gallent* gyrhaeddyd hyd Phenice. Acts xxvii. 12.

2. *Cynnygiais* oddef pob peth, *os dileai* fy enw o'r llyfr.

3. *Cynnygiwyd* ei bywyd i Margaret Pierrone *os taflai* ei Beibl i'r tân. —Ch. Edwards.

[*Translation.*—1. They advised to depart, if they could reach Phenice. 2. I offered to bear every thing, if he would erase my name from the book. 3. Her life was offered to Margaret Pieronne, if she would throw her Bible into the fire.]

846 (1). *Am*, "provided that," is occasionally met with. It is accompanied by the particle *y*, and is generally followed by the *future Indicative*, or by the *Subjunctive*.

Ni waeth ganddo am neb, **am y caiff** efe ddigon, *he cares not about any body, provided he gets enough.*

Y mae yn iawn i ni ein caru ein hunain yn y fan gyntaf, **am y byddo** ein cariad, &c., *it is right for us to love ourselves in the first place, provided that our love be, &c.*

(*a*) *Am* may be compared with the Gr. ἄν, and the Old Eng. *an*.

847. γ) The **Non-fact supposition** is introduced by *pe, ped*, or *pes*,[1] in *positive* sentences: by *pe na, nad*, or *nas;* or *pe . . ni*, &c.; and by *oni, onid, onis, oddi eithr*, and *oddigerth*, in *negative* sentences. [*si; si; if.*]

(*a*) *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* are construed with the Infinitive, as above.

848. The *Non-fact* has its verb in the *imperfect* or *pluperfect Subjunctive;* the *Inference* in the *same mood*, except in one case, where the *Indicative* is used. (§ 849.)

Pe plant Abraham **fyddech**, *gweithredoedd Abraham a* **wnaech**, *if ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.* S. John viii. 39.

Additional Examples.

1. *Pe medrai* dynion ganfod erchylldod pechod, hwy a'i *casâent*.—Ed. Samuel.

2. *Pe rhyngwn* fodd dynion eto, ni *byddwn* was i Grist. Gal. i. 10.

---

[1] And formerly *pei* (qu.=*pe y*). "*Pei* dywedut ymi, minnau a ddywedwn y tithau (*si diceres tu mihi, ego dicerem tibi*)."—Zeuss: Gram. Celt., p. 508.

3. *Ped adnabuasech* fi, fy Nhad hefyd a *adnabuasech.* S. John xiv. 7.
4. *Pe buasit* ti yma, ni *buasai* farw fy mrawd. S. John xi. 21.
5. *Diffygiaswn, pe na chredaswn.* Ps. xxvii. 13.
6. *Llawenhaem* yn fawr, *pe gwelem* ein cydwladwyr yn fwy hyddysg yn y llythyraeth Gymraeg.—Tegid.

[*Translation.*—1. If men could perceive the horror of sin, they would hate it. 2. If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. 3. If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also. 4. If thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 5. I had fainted unless I had believed. 6. We should rejoice greatly, if we saw our fellow-countrymen better acquainted with Welsh orthography.]

(*a*) The *Non-fact* may have its verb in the *imperfect*, and the *Inference* in the *pluperfect;* or *vice versâ. Pe galwaswn*, a *phed atebasai* efe i mi, ni *chredwn, if I had called and He had answered me, I would not believe.* Job ix. 16.

849. Sometimes the *Non-fact* is equivalent to a *Concessive clause*, and then the verb of the *Inference* will be in the *Indicative.*

Pe **gwersyllai** llu i'm herbyn (=*er i lu wersyllu i'm herbyn*) nid **ofna** fy nghalon, *if a multitude encamped against me, my heart will not fear.* Ps. xxvii. 3.

Additional Examples.

1. *Pe cyfodai* cad i'm herbyn, yn hyn mi a *fyddaf* hyderus. Ps. xxvii. 3.
2. *Pe collwn* y cwbl, pa golled *yw?*—Ellis Wynne.
3. *Pe rhodiwn* ar hyd glyn cysgod angeu, nid *ofnaf* niwed. Ps. xxiii. 4.
4. *Pe llefarwn* â thafodau dynion ac angylion, yr *wyf* fel efydd yn seinio. 1 Cor. xiii. 1.

[*Translation.*—1. If a battle rose against me, in this will I be confident. 2. If I lost all, what loss is it? 3. If I walked through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil. 4. If I spoke with the tongues of men and of angels, I am as sounding brass.]

850. Government.—*O* and *pe* are placed before *consonants; od* and *ped* before *vowels; os* and *pes* before *vowels* and *consonants.*

851. *O* governs the *first class* in the *aspirate;* the *second* and *third* in the *radical. Pe* (sometimes followed by *y* or *yr*), *os*, and *pes*, govern the *radical* of all classes.

O *ch*erwch fi, *if you love me.* Os carwch fi, *if you love me.*
Pe carech fi, *if you loved me.* Pes carech fi, *if you loved me.*

(*a*) The obsolete *or* and *pei* govern the *radical.* Or *b*ydd, *if there be.* Pei *b*yddai hi, *if she were.*

852. *Oni, onid*, and *onis* have the same peculiarities as *ni, nid*, and *nis*, from which they are derived. [See §§ 680, 681.] *Oddi eithr* and *oddigerth* govern the *radical* sound.

RELATIVE CLAUSE.

[For a list of the relative pronouns, see §§ 204, 205.]

853. *Relative pronouns* are divided into *simple* and *indefinite* (or *distributed*).

854. The *simple* refers to a well-known object, and has its verb in the *Indicative;* the *indefinite* refers to an antecedent in a vague manner, and, if the tense be future or contingent, it has its verb, properly, in the *Subjunctive* mood.

855. The proper *indefinite* relatives are *pwy bynag, pa . . . bynag, yr un, y neb, y sawl;* but the simple relatives, except *pa un, pa rai*, are often employed as such.

1. *Pwy bynag* a *syrthio* ar y maen hwnw. S. Luke xx. 18.
2. *Y neb* a *hauo* anwiredd a fed flinder. Prov. xxii. 8.
3. *Y rhai* oll a'u hiawn *arferont.*

[*Translation.*—1. Whosoever falls upon that stone. 2. He that soweth iniquity shall reap trouble. 3. All who properly use them.]

856. *Pa un*, pl. *pa rai*, are always *simple* relatives.

1. Y dyn hwn, oblegyd *pa un* y galwodd holl liaws yr Iuddewon. Acts xxv. 24.
2. Wrth fydwragedd, o *ba rai* enw un oedd Siprah. Ex. i. 15.
3. Y gwely esmwyth, ar *ba un* y cwsg pob peth.—I. MSS.

[*Translation.*—1. This man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have called. 2. To midwives, of whom the name of one was Shiphrah. 3. The soft bed, on which everything sleeps.]

857. *A'r* and *ag* are the least emphatic forms of the relative; and they must always be placed foremost in the clause. (*a*) *A'r* seldom occurs except as the subject to a verb, or the object of a *finite* verb. (*b*) *Ag* may be employed, not only as the subject to a verb, and the object of a finite verb, but also as the object of an infinitive or a preposition, which must always be placed after the verb of the clause.

1. Pawb dan haul *a'r* a gredasant yn ei enw Ef.—Ch. Edwards.
2. Yr Hwn ni chasâi ddim *a'r* a wnaethost.—Com. Prayer.
3. Am ddim oll *a'r* a amcanasant ei wneuthur. Gen. xi. 16.
4. Dyweded pob un *ag* y sydd yn caru Duw.—Mos. Williams.
5. Ni chaiff yr elw *ag* y mae mor ddiwyd *yn ei geisio.*
6. Hwn yw'r dyn *ag* y mae cymmaint o son *am dano.*

[*Translation.*—1. All under the sun, who have believed in His name. 2. Who hatest nothing that Thou hast made. 3. As to anything which they have intended to do. 4. Let every one say who loves God. 5. He shall not get the gain, which he so diligently seeks. 6. This is the man that there is so much talk about.]

(*a*) *A'r* is occasionally added after the indefinite "bynag." Beth *bynag a'r* a ofynant. S. Matt. xviii. 19.

858. *Ag* is the proper relative after *y fath* and *y cyfryw*, "such," and after substantives accompanied by adjectives of the equal degree, like the English adverbial relative "*as*."

1. Y cyfryw ddatguddiad *ag* ydyw'r Beibl.—Nicander.
2. Cynnifer *ag* a'i derbyniasant Ef. S. John i. 12.
3. Cymmaint *ag* sydd yn angenrheidiol.

[*Translation.*—1. Such revelation as the Bible is. 2. As many as have received Him. 3. As much as is necessary.]

859. After substantives accompanied by superlative adjectives, and after some other substantives or substantive words (such as *pawb*, *pob un*, *yr un*, *yr unrhyw*, *cyfan*, *cwbl*, *dim*), it is usual either to omit the relative, or to employ *a'r* or *ag*.

1. Ni ddichon i'r dyn *doethaf* a anwyd farnu yn amgen.
2. Parotoi bara i *bob un*, a gymmero boen.—Bp. Griffith.
3. Diddanu pawb, *a'r* sydd mewn perygl.—Com. Prayer.
4. Dyled pawb, *ag* sy'n ofalus am dani.

[*Translation.*—1. The wisest man born cannot judge otherwise. 2. To prepare bread for every one who takes trouble. 3. To comfort all who are in danger. 4. The duty of all who are careful about it.]

860. *Yr hyn* refers to a circumstance, a sentence, or part of a sentence, as its antecedent = *which*, *that which*, *what*. L. *id quod*. [See the Demons. *hyn*, § 549.]

1. Rhoddi o honoch eich cyrff, *yr hyn* yw eich rhesymol wasanaeth. Rom. xii. 1.
2. Awn rhagom i ystyried geiriau unsill, *yr hyn* sydd o bwys nid bychan.—Tegid.
3. I gadw *yr hyn* a gollasid. 4. Mynegais *yr hyn* a glywais.

[*Translation.*—1. That ye present your bodies, which is your reasonable service. 2. We will proceed to consider monosyllables, which is of no small importance. 3. To save that which had been lost. 4. I have declared what I have heard.]

861. **Agreement.**—The form *yr hwn*, &c., agrees with its antecedent in gender, number, and person: *y neb*, *yr un*, pl. *y sawl*, in number, and person: *pwy bynag*, *ag*, and *a'r*, are indeclinable. *Pa . . . bynag* may be of any gender, number, and person, according to the word that is placed between *pa* and *bynag*.

Gender. Duw, *yr hwn* a'n gwnaeth, *God, who made us.*
Number. Y dynion, *y rhai* a welsom, *the men, whom we saw.*
Person. Myfi, *yr Hwn wyf* yn ymddiddan â thi, *I, That speak unto thee.*

(*a*) The agreement in person is, however, subject to the peculiarities mentioned under the syntax of the verb. [§§ 578, 579.]

862. If the antecedent is a noun of multitude, the relative is sometimes singular, sometimes plural.

1. Y *gynnulleidfa, yr hon* oedd yn ei wrandaw.
2. A holl *gaethglud* Iudah, *y rhai* a aethant i Babilon. Jer. xxviii. 4.

[*Translation.*—1. The congregation, which was listening to him. 2. And all the captives of Judah, that went into Babylon.]

863. When the relative has two antecedents of different persons, the verb of the relative clause may refer to either of the two.

1. Myfi yw y *gwr* a *welodd* flinder. (Here the verb refers to *gwr.*)
2. *Myfi* yw yr Arglwydd, yr hwn a'ch *neillduais* chwi. (Here the verb refers to *myfi.*)

[*Translation.*—1. I am the man that has seen trouble. 2. I am the Lord who hath separated you.]

864. Position.—The relative should be placed, as in English, as near as possible to its antecedent, and before the verb of its own clause.

1. A rhai o'r *Saduceaid, y rhai* sydd yn gwadu nad oes adgyfodiad. S. Luke xx. 27.
2. Hwn yw y *Crist, yr hwn* yr wyf yn ei bregethu.

[*Translation.*—1. Certain of the Saducees, who deny that there is any resurrection. 2. This is the Christ whom I preach.]

(*a*) To prevent ambiguity, or when emphasis is necessary, the antecedent may be repeated after the form *yr hwn, yr hon, yr hyn;* but it cannot be repeated after any other form.

Yr hwn *air* a arwyddocâ ynys, *which word signifies an island.*
Iachawdwriaeth, am yr hon *iachawdwriaeth.* 1 S. Peter i. 10.
Yr hyn *bethau* ydynt mewn alegori. Gal. iv. 24.

The relative governs the repeated antecedent in the middle sound. Yr hyn *b*ethau.

865. When the relative is under government of a preposition, the preposition is sometimes placed before the relative, sometimes after the verb of the clause in the form of a pronominal preposition. The latter is by far the more elegant and idiomatic construction.

Y cyfaill *at yr hwn* yr anfonais lythyr, *the friend, to whom I sent a letter.*
Y cyfaill, *yr hwn* yr anfonais lythyr *ato, the friend, whom I sent a letter to.*

866. Omission of antecedent.—The antecedent, if a pronoun, is most frequently omitted when the indefinite *pwy*

bynag, yr un, y neb, y sawl, are used. [Cf. *whoever, whosoever.*]

Pwy bynag a ddelo a wobrwyir, *whosoever comes shall be rewarded.*
Y neb a chwanego wybodaeth a chwanega ofid, *he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.*

The antecedent of the forms *yr hwn, yr hon, y rhai,* if it be a pronoun, is generally omitted, unless it be very emphatic. Thus,

He (or that) who, he whom, him who, &c. = *yr hwn.*
She who, she whom, her who, &c. = *yr hon.*
They (or those) who, they whom, them who, &c = *y rhai.*

867. When the omitted antecedent is governed by a prep., the prep. is put before the relative pronoun ; as,

Gofynwch *i*'r hwn sydd yn gwybod, *ask him who knows.*

868. Omission of relative.—The relative pronoun is very often omitted. In this case the auxiliaries *a* and *y* (or *yr*) are carefully retained in affirmative clauses.

1. Arthur yw y gwr *a* ymladdodd mor wrol.
2. Y rheol *a* roddwn mewn perthynas iddynt yw hon.—Tegid.
3. Ym mhob ordinhâd *a* wnelo y gymmanfa.—M. Kyffin.
4. Efe yw'r gwr *yr* ysgrifenais ato.

[*Translation.*—1. Arthur is the man [who] fought so bravely. 2. The rule we shall lay with respect to them is this. 3. In every rule [which] the council may make. He is the man [whom] I wrote to.]

(*a*) Those inflections of *bôd* which never take the particle *a* before them are to be excepted. Gwelais y dyn *oedd* yn canu, *I saw the man* [*who*] *was singing.* [§ 701.]

869. When the omitted relative is governed by a prep., the prep. stands after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition ; as,

Y wlad y daethost allan *o honi.* Y dydd y'm ganed *ynddo.*
Yn y cyfyngder trallodus y'n dygwyd *iddo.*—Theo. Evans.

(*a*) When point of time is expressed by a relative clause, the relative and preposition are frequently left out.

Hyd y dydd y cymmerwyd ef i fynu. Acts i. 22. [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]
Yn y dydd y gwnaeth yr Arglwydd. Gen. ii. 4. [Unders. *yn yr hwn.*]

870. When both the antecedent and relative are under government of prep., and the antecedent is omitted, the prep. that governs the antecedent is put before the relative, and that which governs the relative comes after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition.

Rhoddwch *i*'r hwn y cymmerasoch *oddi arno* = *give to* [*him*] *whom you took from.*

871. Sometimes a prep. is put before the relative, and repeated after the verb. [Some consider this repetition inelegant, if not erroneous.]

1. *I'r* rhai a eisteddent, y cyfododd goleuni *iddynt*. S. Matt. iv. 16.
2. *Ar* yr hwn y gwelych yr Ysbryd yn disgyn ac yn aros *arno*. S. John i. 33.
3. Wedi dangos eisioes *i* ba amgylchiadau tosturus y dygwyd yr hen Frytaniaid *iddynt*.—Theo. Evans.

[*Translation.*—1. =To them who sat, light sprang up to. 2. =Upon Whom thou seest the Spirit descending, and remaining on Him. 3. = Having shown to what miserable circumstances the ancient Britons were brought to.]

872. Occasionally both the relative and antecedent are omitted in the same sentence.

1. Gwyn ei fyd a ystyria wrth y tlawd = gwyn ei fyd *ef yr hwn*, &c.
2. Gwae a adeilado dref trwy waed. Hab. ii. 12.
3. Oddi wrth a sylwid hawdd yw canfod.—Tegid.
4. Ac na bydded a drigo ynddi. Acts i. 20.
5. A laddo a leddir.
6. Bydded ganddynt awdurdod i wneuthur a fynant.—M. Kyffin.
7. Hithau ni fyn a gaffo ; ni chaiff a ddymuno.—Ellis Wynne.

[*Translation.*—1. Blessed is [he that] considereth the poor. 2. Woe [to him that] buildeth a town with blood. 3. From [what] has been remarked it is easy to see. 4. And let there not be [a man who] shall dwell therein. 5. [He that] kills shall be killed. 6. Let them have authority to do [what] they wish. 7. She will not take [what] she may have ; she shall not have [what] she may desire.]

873. Possessive Case.—Clauses introduced by *whose*, or *of which* (*e.g.*, *whose power is infinite*), will be expressed in Welsh—

874 *α*) By setting the relative pron. as the nom. of the clause, and placing the governing noun under the government of the prep. *â*. [Order: **relative, verb, prep. with its case.**]

Yr hwn sydd â'i allu yn ei law = *who is with his power in his hand; whose power*, &c.
Y rhai sydd â'u sail mewn pridd. Job iv. 19.
Y rhai oedd â'u synwyrau yn effro.—Theo. Evans.

(*a*) "Whose name" is usually expressed by "*â'i enw*"=*with his name.*

875. *β*) By placing the relative in an absolute state at the beginning of the clause, and making the governing noun the nom. to the verb.[1] [Order: **relative, verb, nom.**]

---

[1] A similar idiom is found in the Armorican language.—See Ed. Llwyd's Arch. Brit., p. 193.

Y rhai y coffêir eu henwau = (*as to*) *whom, their names are mentioned; whose names are mentioned.*
Yr hwn y mae ei einioes ynddo. Gen. i. 30.
Yr hwn y mae ei wyntyll yn ei law. S. Matt. iii. 12.

876. *γ*) By placing the governing noun first, and then the relative in a possessive state—as in English. [Order: **nom., possessive, verb.**]

1. Dyma y bachgen, *tad yr hwn a welais.*
2. *Diwedd y rhai* yw distryw; *duw y rhai* yw eu bol. Phil. iii. 19.
3. *Tad yr hwn* a laddwyd yn y llofruddiaeth greulawn.—Theo. Evans.

[*Translation.*—1. This is the boy, whose father I saw. 2. Whose end is destruction; whose god is their belly. 3. Whose father was killed in the cruel murder.]

877. **Negative particles.**—A clear distinction between the negatives *ni* and *na* is not observed in relative clauses. The following may be considered as general rules: (*a*) *Ni, nid,* and *nis* follow *simple* relatives; (*b*) *Na, nad,* and *nas* are used after *indefinite* relatives; and (*c*) in *simple* relative clauses when the relative heading is *omitted.*

1. (*a*) Ger bron y Pab, yr hwn *ni* ddichon gamgymmeryd.—M. Kyffin.
2. Saif ei esgyrn allan, y rhai *ni* welid o'r blaen. Job xxxiii. 21.
3. (*b*) Hawdd ei ddeall i'r sawl *nas* gallant hebgor llawer o amser. —R. I. Prys.
4. (*c*) Mewn llyfrau ereill *na* bu erioed ammheuaeth am danynt.—Edw. Samuel.
5. Llawer o lyfrau historiau *nas* gwyddom pwy a'u hysgrifenodd.—Edw. Samuel.
6. Cymmeryd gafael yng ngwaith pellenigyn *nad* oedd yn ymhoni mewn un ddawn ragorach.—W. Davies.

[*Translation.*—1. Before the Pope, who cannot make a mistake. 2. His bones, that were not seen before, stick out. 3. Easy to be understood by such as cannot spare much time. 4. In other books respecting which there never has been a doubt. 5. Many historical books, that we do not know who wrote them. 6. To take hold of the work of a stranger who did not lay claim to greater talent.]

ABSOLUTE CLAUSE.

878. The *case absolute* is expressed by the particle *a* before a consonant, or *ac* before a vowel, with a participle of any tense. [Order: **absolute particle, noun** or **pronoun, participle.**]

Pres. and *Past:*
Dyro i ni, *a nyni yn gofyn.*—Com. Prayer.
Ac *a hwy yn gwrandaw,* Efe a chwanegodd. S. Luke xix. 11.
Pa ham, *a mi yn disgwyl* iddi ddwyn grawnwin, y dug hi rawn gwylltion? Is. v. 4.
A'r Cymry yn cysgu, rhuthrodd y gelyn am eu penau.—Theo. Evans.

Perfect definite. *A mi wedi dyfod*, ymlawenhaodd pawb.
Future. *A mi ar fedr ysgrifenu*, attaliodd fy llaw.

879. In a negative clause, *heb fod*, "without being," precedes the participle in present, past, and future: *heb*, "without," is substituted for *wedi* in the perfect definite.

A mi *heb fod* yn ysgrifenu, *I not being writing.*
A mi *heb fod* ar fedr ysgrifenu, *I not being about to write.*
A mi *heb* ysgrifenu, *I not having written.*

(*a*) The participle "yn bod," equivalent to "being," is omitted in affirmative clauses. A mi yno = *I there; I being there.* A'r brenin yno = *the king there; the king being there.* In a negative clause, "bod" is expressed, preceded by *heb*. A'r brenin heb fod yno, *the king not being there.*

(*b*) The absolute particle is sometimes left out, especially if the conjunction *ac* (and) begins the sentence, and the noun or pronoun of the absolute clause has a vowel for its initial letter. For instance, 'And He coming nigh, the multitude rejoiced,' would be expressed by '*Ac Efe yn nesâu*, llawenhaodd y dyrfa,' not 'Ac *ac* Efe yn nesâu,' &c.

APPOSITION CLAUSE. (§§ 419–430; 475, 476; 525–528.)

SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF THE INITIAL MUTATIONS.

880. The consonants that undergo a change or modification when standing as the initial letters in words, are the nine following: **c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh.**

881. These are divided into *three* classes, according to the modifications of which they are susceptible.

882. *a*) C, P, T, form the *first* class, and have each *three* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle*, *nasal*, and *aspirate*.

883. *b*) G, B, D, form the *second* class, and have each *two* changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the *middle* and the *nasal*. This class has no *aspirate* sound: hence the words that govern the *aspirate* of the first class govern the *radical* of the second.[1]

884. *c*) LL, M, RH, form the *third* class, and have each *one* change or modification of the radical form; namely, the *middle*. This class has no *nasal* and *aspirate* sounds: hence the words that govern the *nasal* of the first and second classes, and the *aspirate* of the first, govern the *radical* of the third class.

---

[1] The words *ni*, *na*, and *oni*, form an exception. These govern the *first class* in the *aspirate*, the *second* and *third* in the *middle*. (See § 913.)

885. A TABLE showing the various modifications of mutable consonants:—

		Radical.	*Middle.*	*Nasal.*	*Aspirate.*
1 Class.	C	Câr, *a friend*	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	P	Pen, *a head*	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	T	Tâd, *a father*	Dâd	Nhâd	Thâd
2 Class.	G	Gŵr, *a husband*	—ŵr	Ngŵr	
	B	Brawd, *a brother*	Frawd	Mrawd	
	D	Dant, *a tooth*	Ddant	Nant	
3 Class.	Ll	Llaw, *a hand*	Law		
	M	Mam, *a mother*	Fam		
	Rh	Rhwyd, *a net*	Rwyd		

886. The mutable consonants are influenced by the words that *immediately precede* them; that is, a word beginning with one of the mutable consonants retains the *radical* sound, or is changed into the *middle*, the *nasal*, or the *aspirate*, according to the government of the word that *immediately precedes* it in the same clause. Thus,

Ty ein *t*âd, *our father's house.* Here *tâd* retains the *radical* form *t*, because *ein* governs the *radical* sound.

Ty dy *d*âd, *thy father's house.* Here *tâd* is changed into the *middle* form *dâd*, because *dy* governs the *middle.*

Ty fy *nh*âd, *my father's house.* Here *tâd* is changed into the *nasal* form *nhâd*, because *fy* governs the *nasal.*

Ty ei *th*âd, *her father's house.* Here *tâd* is changed into the *aspirate* form *thâd*, because *ei* governs the *aspirate.*

887. The remaining radical consonants (*ch* followed by *w*, *ff*, *h*, *n*, *s*) are *immutable;* that is, they have one, and only one, form under all circumstances; as, Ty ein *n*ain; ty dy *n*ain; ty fy *n*ain; ty ei *n*ain.

RADICAL AND MIDDLE SOUNDS.

Nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs.

888. The word that occupies the first place in a clause retains its *radical* sound.

*D*ynion dewr a ddaethant yno. (§ 433.) *T*ydi a gerais. (§ 449.) *G*ofynodd iddo.

*C*ywir yr atebodd. (§ 693.) *D*ysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur. (§ 653.) *P*um diwrnod yr arosais. (§ 454.)

(*a*) When an interjection is understood, the word is usually changed into the *middle* sound. *G*aredig frawd = O garedig frawd. (§ 859.)

(*b*) When the equal degree of an adjective is put absolutely, its initial assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 483, *a*.) *G*oched yw'r tân! *L*eied o wledydd sy'n mwynhau ei bendithion!

(*c*) An infinitive verb heading a transitive clause is put in the *middle* sound. Mae'n dweyd *g*eisio o hono ddyfod. (§ 592.)

The verb *bod*, when heading a transitive clause, is irregular, but should properly assume the *middle* sound. [Read § 593.] Dywedir *f*od Arthur yn darllen; dywedir *b*od Arthur yn darllen.

When the transitive clause precedes the sentence on which it depends, the infinitive of the transitive clause is put either in the *radical* or *middle*.

*D*ysgu—*dd*ysgu—o hono ei wers
*D*arfod—*dd*arfod—cymmeryd yr arian } sydd amlwg.
*B*od—*f*od—dyn yn farwol

The verb *bod* heading rules or resolutions is put in the *radical* or *middle*. Thus,

Penderfynwyd—*B*od—*f*od—i swyddogion gael eu dewis.
*B*od—*f*od—i'r swyddogion gyfarfod bob mis.

889. The *radical* sound comes after common adjectives of the *equal* and *comparative* degrees; the *middle* after the *positive* and *superlative*. (§ 473.)

Equal.	Cyn fwyned *g*wr.	Mor hardd *b*achgen.
Comp.	Mwynach *g*wr.	Mwy gwrol *m*ilwr.
Pos.	Trugarog *D*duw.	Grasusol *f*renhines.
Super.	Anwylaf *g*yfaill.	Grasusaf *f*renhines.

890. Nouns *masculine* retain the *radical* after the *ordinals;* nouns *feminine* are changed into the *middle*. (§ 501.)

Mas.	Y pummed *d*ydd.	Y degfed *t*ro.
Fem.	Y bummed *b*ennod.	Y ddegfed *r*an.

(*a*) But the ordinal *ail* (second) is followed by the *middle* even when the noun is *masculine*. Yr ail *dd*ydd.

891. *Cardinal* numbers are followed by the *radical* sound (§ 491, &c.), except

(*a*) *Un*, feminine, *dau* and *dwy*, which govern the *middle* sound. (§ 493.) Un *dd*ynes. Un *dd*ynes ar bymtheg. Dau *dd*yn. Dwy *dd*ynes.

But *un*, feminine, governs the *radical* of *ll* and *rh*. Un *ll*aw. Un *rh*aw.

(*b*) *Tri* and *chwe*, which govern the *aspirate* of *c*, *p*, *t*; the *radical* of the other consonants. (§ 494.) Tri *ch*ar. Tri *ch*ar ar ddeg. Tri *ph*en. Tri *th*y. Chwe *ch*ar.

(*c*) *Saith* and *wyth*, which govern the *middle* of *c*, *p*, *t*; the *radical* of the other consonants. (§ 495.) Saith *g*orn (*rad.* corn). Saith *b*en (*rad.* pen). Saith *d*orth (*rad.* torth). Wyth *g*was (*rad.* gwas). Wyth *b*ys (*rad.* bys). Wyth *ll*ong (*rad.* llong).

(*d*) *Deng*, *deuddeng*, and *pymtheng*, which govern the *middle* of *g*, the *nasal* of *d*, and the *radical* of *m*. (See § 496.) Deng wr. Deng *n*afad. Deng *m*is.

After some of the cardinals, *blynedd* and *blwydd* assume the *nasal* sound, and *diwrnod* the *nasal* or the *radical*. [See § 497.]

892. The indefinite pronouns *dim*, *neb*, *pob*, *llawer*, *un* (mas.), *yr un* (mas.), *rhai*, *sawl*, and *peth*, govern the *radical* sound; the others govern the *middle*. [See § 213, &c.]

Rad. Pob *t*ro. Rhai *ll*yfrau. Yr un *d*ynion. Pa sawl *d*yn?

Mid. Ambell *d*ro. Amryw *l*yfrau. Rhyw *dd*ynion. Yr holl *dd*ynion.

(*a*) *Y sawl*=such, governs the *middle*. Y sawl *b*ethau.

(*b*) The interrogative *pa* governs the *middle*. Pa *dd*ŷn yw efe?

(*c*) The rel. *yr hwn*, &c., governs the repeated antecedent in the *middle*. Yr hwn *d*abernacl. Heb. ix. 2. Yr hon *l*anerch. Yr hyn *b*eth.

893. Adjectives and adverbs are put in the *middle* after *feminine nouns singular*; in the *radical* after *fem. plural*, and after *masculines*, *sing.* and *plural*. (§ 474.)

Fem. sing.	Gwraig *dd*oeth.	Gwraig *d*ra doeth. Y sefyllfa *f*wyaf blodëuog.
	Gwraig *dd*a, ostyngedig, *g*all.	
Fem. pl.	Gwragedd *d*oethion.	Gwragedd *t*ra doethion.
	Gwragedd *d*a, *g*ostyngedig, call.	
Mas.	Gwr *d*oeth.	Gwr *t*ra doeth. Gwyr *d*oethion.
	Gwr *d*a, *g*ostyngedig.	Gwyr *d*a, *g*ostyngedig.

(*a*) But the adverbs *go*, *mor*, *cyn*, and generally *rhy*, retain their *radical* form even after a *feminine noun sing.* Geneth *g*o dàl. Geneth *m*ôr dàl. Geneth *rh*y dàl.

(*b*) The word *pobl*, though regarded as a pl. noun, is followed by the *middle* sound. Pobl *dd*a.

894. The genitive expressed by mere apposition retains its *radical* sound. (§ 437.)

Coron *b*renin. Iaith *p*lentyn. Sail *t*y. Ystyr *g*eiriau.

(*a*) After *teyrnas*, *teml*, *ty*, and *eglwys*, the word *Duw* generally takes the *middle* sound. Teyrnas *Dd*uw. *Dewi* and *Dafydd* have the same construction. Esgob Ty *Dd*ewi. [§ 437 (*b*).]

895. Nouns in the genitive case, used adjectively, follow the same rules as adjectives; *i.e.*, they are put in the *middle* after *fem. noun. sing.*; but in the *radical* after *fem. noun pl.*, and after *mas.*, *sing.* and *pl.* (§§ 408, 439, 441.)

Fem. sing.	Torth *g*einiog.	Sarff *b*res.	Ysgubor *g*oed.
Fem. pl.	Torthau *c*einiog.	Seirff *p*res.	Ysguboriau *c*oed.
Mas.	Ty *c*oed.	Ceffyl *p*ren.	Ceffylau *p*ren.

896. Apposition-nouns and apposition-adjectives retain their *radical* sound. (§§ 420, 421, 476.)

Paul, *g*was Iesu Grist. Mon, *m*am Cymru.
Mae genym gyfeillion ffyddlawn, *b*rodyr caredig, *m*erched da, a llyfrau defnyddiol.
Cymmerodd agwedd ddynol, *c*yffelyb i'r eiddom ni.

897. Common nouns and adjectives, used as agnomens after proper names of whatever gender, are put in the *middle* sound. (§§ 422, 477.)

Dafydd *f*renin. Hywel *dd*a. Daniel *dd*u. Elen *b*rydferth.

898. Nouns put in apposition to personal pronouns generally assume the *middle;* but apposition personal pronouns are generally put in the *radical.* (§§ 526, 528.)

Nouns. Myfi *dd*yn. Tydi *f*erch. Chwi *b*echaduriaid.
Ymostyngodd erom ni *dd*ynion.
Pron. Gwerthwyd ni, *m*yfi a'm pobl.

899. Some nouns and adjective pronouns denoting *number* and *quantity* are put in the *middle,* when the natural order is inverted. (§ 444, *a.*)

Dwfr *dd*igon. Rhyfeddodau *l*awer.

900. Proper names of *places* and *rivers* follow the rules of common nouns. (§§ 458, 460.)

Bum yng *Ngh*aer. Aeth i *G*orwen. Wrth *Dd*yfrdwy.

(*a*) Foreign proper names of *places* usually retain the *radical.* (§ 459.) Arosodd yn *D*amascus.

(*b*) Proper names of *rivers,* although *fem.*, retain the *rad.* after the article. Y *D*yfrdwy.

901. Proper names of *persons* usually retain the *radical* sound. [See § 461.]

Dywedodd wrth *D*afydd. Anfonodd at *Ll*ewelyn.

902. The article *y* governs a *fem. noun sing.* or its accompaniments in the *middle;* a *feminine noun pl.* and *masculine nouns, sing.* and *pl.*, in the *radical.* (§§ 399, 400, 401.)

Fem. sing.	Y *dd*ynes.	Y *dd*oeth ddynes.	Y *d*ra doeth ddynes.
Fem. pl.	Y *g*wragedd.	Y *d*oeth wragedd.	Y *t*ra doeth wragedd.
Mas.	Y *g*wr.	Y *d*oeth wr.	Y *g*wyr.

(*a*) *Dau,* two, though *masculine, pobl* and *pobloedd,* though *plural,* are *softened* after *y.* Y *dd*au ddyn. Y *b*obl hyn. Y *b*obloedd hyn.

(*b*) '*Math,* when used adjectively with either a masculine or feminine noun, is softened after *y;* as, y *f*ath wr, *such a man.*'

(*c*) *Cardinal* numbers, even when preceding *singular* substantives of the *feminine* gender, retain the *radical* sound after *y.* *Y t*air gwaith hyn, *these three times.*

But *dwy*, two, is put in the *middle* sound. Y *dd*wy ddynes, *the two women.*

(*d*) *Fem. nouns sing.* beginning with *ll* or *rh* retain the *radical* after *y.* Y *ll*ong. Y *ll*euad. Y *rh*aw. Y *rh*eol.

(*e*) Names of rivers: see § 900 (*b*).

903. The pronouns *ym, ein, eich, eu,* and *ill,* govern the *radical; dy, yth,* and *ei mas.,* govern the *middle.* (§§ 537, 538.) [*Ei fem.* governs the *aspirate.*]

Rad. Mi a'm *t*âd. Ein *t*ad. Eich *t*ad. Eu *t*ad. Ill *d*au.
Mid. Dy *d*ad. Ti a'th *d*ad. Ei *d*ad.

☞ (*a*) But *ei mas.,* and *ei fem.,* followed by *finite* verbs with consonant initials, govern the *radical.* Efe a'*i* (= a *ei*) cospodd ef. Efe a'i *c*ospodd hi. [See § 544.]

904. The auxiliaries *fe, fo, e,* and *mi,* are followed by the *middle* sound. (§ 520, *a.*)

Fe *dd*aw. Fo *l*uddiwyd fy nghais. Mi *f*eddyliais.

905. The subject coming immediately after its verb retains the *radical;* but if separated from the verb by "an intervenient word or phrase," it assumes the *middle* sound. (§§ 589, 594.)

Y mae *d*yn yn y ty. Y mae yn y ty *dd*yn.
Rhoddir *ll*yfr iddo. Rhoddir iddo *l*yfr.

(*a*) The verb *oes* is often followed by its subject in the *middle.* (§ 589, *b.*) Nid oes *d*wyll ynddo.

(*b*) The pronouns *mi* and *ti,* and their compounds, assume the *middle,* when they follow their verbs. (§ 589, *a.*) Caraf *f*i. Cerir *f*innau. Ceri *d*i. But when the verb ends in *t, ti* and its compounds retain the *radical.* Ceraist *t*i ef.

906. A *finite* verb is followed by its object in the *middle* sound: an *infinitive* is followed by its object in the *radical.* (§ 590.)

Darllenais *l*yfr. Dymunodd *f*yned.
Darllen *ll*yfr. Dymuno *m*yned.

(*a*) If an intervenient word or phrase separates the object from the Infinitive, the object assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 594.) Tynu ymaith *b*echodau.

(*b*) The pronoun *ti* and its compounds are put in the *middle* after the Infinitive. Y mae efe yn dy garu *d*i. Y mae hwn yn dy gasâu *d*ithau.

907. A Transitive Clause has the initial consonant of the Infinitive put in the *middle.* [See §§ 592, 593.]

Y mae yn dweyd *f*yned o hono i'r dref.

908. The Infinitive is put in the *middle* when its subject is governed by a preposition.

Gofynais *i'r dyn dd*yfod. Y mae yn gofyn *iddo ef dd*yfod.

909. Intervenient phrase.

If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an *intervenient word or phrase*, the subject or the object will be put in the *middle* sound. (§ 594.)

Y mae ym Mhrydain *f*renhines ddoeth.
Yr oedd yno *dd*ynion dewr.
Cymmeryd gydag ef *f*antell gyssegredig y swyddogaeth.—Brutus.

910. Prepositions.

Prepositions proper governing the *radical* sound: see § 364, *a*.

Ger *ll*aw. Mewn *t*y. Rhwng *m*ynyddoedd.

(*a*) The participial signs *yn*, *wedi*, *ar ol*, and *ar fedr*, are here included. Yn *d*ysgu. Wedi *d*ysgu. Ar fedr *d*ysgu.

Prepositions proper governing the *middle* sound: see § 364, *b*.

Ar *b*en. At *dd*yn. Gan *dd*yn. Tros *f*ynydd.

(*a*) The participial signs *gan*, *dan*, and *ar*, are here included. Gan *dd*ysgu. Dan *dd*ysgu. Ar *dd*ysgu.

Substantive prepositions govern the *radical* sound: see § 368.

Parth *rh*yfel yr India. Herwydd *p*ethau ereill.

Compounds ending with prepositions proper govern the same sounds as the *last* of their component parts: see § 372.

Oddi ar *f*ryn. Oddi wrth *f*rawd. O fewn *t*y.

Compounds ending with a substantive govern the *radical* sound: see § 373.

Ger bron *g*orsedd grâs. Yng nghylch *p*ynciau dyrys.

911. Adverbs and conjunctions.

Verbs are put in the *middle* when immediately preceded by adverbs of quality. (§ 694.)

Awyddus *dd*isgwyliai. Yr oedd yn peraidd *g*anu.

912. The adverbs of comparison *digon*, *llai*, *lleiaf*, *mwy*, *mwyaf*, and *po*, govern the *radical* sound; *cyn*, *go*, *lled*, *mor*, *pur*, and *rhy*, govern the *middle*; *tra* governs the *aspirate*. (§ 691.)

Rad.	Digon *c*as.	Llai *d*ysgedig.	Po *d*ysgedicaf.
Mid.	Cyn *g*ased.	Go *dd*ysgedig.	Lled *dd*ysgedig.
Asp.	Tra *ch*as.	Tra *ph*archus.	Tra *th*ew.

(*a*) *Cŷn*, *mòr*, and *pur*, are followed by the *middle* or *radical* of *ll* and *rh*, but generally by the *radical*. Cyn *ll*oned or *l*oned. Mor *ll*on or *l*on. Pur *rh*wydd or *r*wydd.

913. ☞ **Ni** (*not*); **oni** (*is not? unless, until*); and **na** (*not*, imperative, *that not, not*), govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and the *middle* of the 2nd and 3rd. But **na** (*nor, than*) governs the *aspirate* of the 1st, and the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Aspirate.—Ni *ch*ar, he will *not* love. Oni *char*? *will* he *not* love? Oni *ph*aid, *if* he will *not* cease. Oni *th*awo, *until* he be silent. Na *th*aw, *do not* be silent. Amlwg yw na *th*aw, it is evident *that* he will *not* be silent. A daw eich brawd? Na *th*aw. Will your brother be silent? No: lit., he will *not* be silent. Dyma'r bachgen na *th*aw, this is the boy who will *not* be silent.

Middle.—Ni weithia. Oni weithia? Oni *f*arna. Oni *dd*elo. Na *l*adrata. Amlwg yw na *f*eddylia. A rwymir ef? Na *r*wymir. Dyma'r bachgen na *dd*ysga.

Na = "nor," "than."—*Asp.* Na *ch*âr na *ch*yfaill. Gwell na *th*âd. *Rad.* Na *b*rawd na *m*am. Gwell na *b*rawd ac na *m*am.

(*a*) The above *ni*, *oni*, and *na* govern the inflections of *bod* in the *middle* or *radical*. Ni *f*ydd or *b*ydd. Oni *f*ydd or *b*ydd. Na *f*ydd or *b*ydd.

914. *Nid, nad, nis, nas, onid, onis,* govern the *radical.*

Nid *m*ilwr ydyw. Dywed nad *d*oeth yw'r cynghor.
Nis *d*aeth. Dywed nas *d*aeth.
Onid *t*ywysog yw Iorwerth? Onis *d*elo.

915. The auxiliary *dim* governs the *radical*, and *mo* the *middle.* (§ 689, note *a.*)

Ni fyn ddim *d*yfod. Ni chanfum mo *dd*ichellion y dyn.

916. The adverbs of showing, *dyma, dyna,* &c., govern the *middle.* (§ 698.)

Dyma *g*effyl hardd. Dacw *dd*yn tâl.

917. The expletive *a*, the interrogative *a*, and the disjunctive *neu*, govern the *middle:* the expletive *y*,[1] the interrogative *ai*, and the disjunctive *ynte*, govern the *radical.* (§§ 705, 708, 727.)

Mid. Iorwerth a *dd*aeth. A *dd*aeth efe? Dyn neu *dd*ynes.
Rad. Yno y *g*welais ef? Ai *d*yn da ynte *d*yn drwg yw efe?

(*a*) *Neu* governs a finite verb in the *rad.* Aros yma neu *d*ôs ymaith.

918. *A*, "and," "as;" *na*, "nor," "than;" and *no*, "than," govern the 2nd and 3rd classes in the *radical*, and the 1st class in the *aspirate.* (§ 725.)

Rad.	Mab a *m*erch.	Cyn goched a *g*waed.	Cochach na *g*waed.
Asp.	Mam a *th*âd.	Cyn goched a *th*ân.	Na mam na *th*âd.

[1] The obsolete expletive *yd* governs the *middle.* Basaf dwfr man yd *l*efair, *water is shallowest where it makes a noise.*

Thus *a* expletive and *a* interrogative govern the *middle;* *a*=and, *a*=as, and *â*=with, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes.

919. The concessives *er, serch, cyd;* the explanatories or transitives *y, mai, taw;* and the suppositives *os, or, pe, pei, pes, onis, oddi eithr, oddigerth,* govern the *radical* sound. The suppositive *o* governs the *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes and the *aspirate* of the 1st. The suppositive *oni,* see § 913. The negative motive *rhag* governs the *radical.*

Concessive. Er *d*ywedyd o honof. Serch *c*eisio o hono.
Explan. Dywed y *d*aw. Dywed mai (*or* taw) *b*renin yw.
Suppositive. Os *d*aw. Pe *d*elai. Onis *d*aw. Oddi eithr *d*yfod o hono. O *ch*erwch fi, cedwch fy ngorchymmynion.
Neg. motive. Rhag *t*aro o honot dy droed.

Thus expletive *y* and transitive *y* govern the *radical:* the article *y* governs the *radical* and *middle.* See § 902.

920. The causals *am* and *gan* govern the *middle; o achos, o herwydd, o blegyd, o waith, o ran, o ethryb, rhag,* and *canys,* govern the *radical; yn gymmaint a* has the same government as *a,* "as." See § 918.

Mid. Am *dd*ywedyd o'r dyn. Gan *g*eisio o honof.
Rad. O herwydd *d*ywedyd o'r dyn. O achos *c*eisio o honof.

921. The temporals *pan, er pan,* and *tan,* govern the *middle; cyn, wedi* (or *gwedi*), *ar ol, yn ol, nes, hyd nes, onis,* govern the *radical. Oni* and *hyd oni* have the same government as *ni:* see § 913. *Tra* is irregular: see "Alphabetical List."

Pan *dd*aw. Er pan *dd*aeth. Tân *dd*aw.
Cyn *d*yfod o hono. Wedi *d*yfod o hono.

922. *Yn* participial—*yn* apposition—*yn* adverbial—*yn* preposition: see § 931.

923. *Fel, fal, mal, megys,* and *sef,* are followed by the *radical.*

Ymddygodd Iorwerth fel *g*wr bonheddig.
Efe sydd Dduw, sef *D*uw ein tadau.

(*a*) *Sef* is often followed by *bod* and *darfod,* when heading a transitive clause, in the *middle* sound. Hyn a ddywed, sef *fod* dyn yn farwol.

924. The adverbatives *ond, onid, eithr, oddi eithr, oddigerth, namyn,* and *heb law,* govern the *radical* sound. (§ 728.)

Nid oes yma onid *t*y i Dduw.

(*a*) They are often followed by *bod* and *darfod,* heading a transitive clause, in the *middle* sound. Ni ddywedodd ddim ond *f*od dyn yn farwol.

925. **Interjections.**—Nouns or their concomitants assume the *middle* sound after interjections, expressed or omitted. (§§ 751–754.)

O *D*duw. Ha *f*ab. *B*archedig Syr=O *B*archedig Syr.

(*a*) The *radical* form is sometimes retained, if the interjection is omitted. *D*uw Dad.

926. **Governing words omitted.**

α) When the expletive *a* is omitted, the verb is still put in the *middle* sound. (§ 706.)

Pwy *l*addodd y ci?=*pwy a laddodd?*
Arthur *f*ydd yn frenin=*Arthur a fydd.*

927. *β*) When '*yn apposition*' is omitted, the apposition word, if coming after the verb, still assumes the *middle* sound. (§ 655.)

Arthur sydd *f*renin=*Arthur sydd yn frenin.*
Efe oedd *g*anwyll yn llosgi=*Efe oedd yn ganwyll.*

(*a*) Should the apposition word precede the verb, it resumes its *radical* form. *D*ysgedig y cyfrifir Arthur=*yn ddysgedig.*

(*b*) Sometimes the apposition word is put in the *radical*, even when it follows the verb. (§ 655.) I'r dyn a fyddo *d*a.

928. *γ*) When adverbs of quality (*e.g.*, llefaru *yn ddoeth*) begin the sentence, *yn* is thrown off, and the next word resumes its *radical* initial. (§ 693.)

*D*oeth y lleferaist=*yn ddoeth.*

929. *δ*) Interjections omitted: see above.

930. *ε*) Words denoting *duration* and *point of time, distance of place*, and *measure*, retain their *radical* initials if they stand foremost in sentences; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonants are changed into the *middle*. (§ 454.)

*D*eng wythnos yr arosais. Arosais *dd*eng wythnos.

NASAL SOUND.

931. '*Yn preposition*,' and the pronoun *fy*, "my," govern the *nasal* sound.

*Yn nh*ir Cymru.	Ym *M*erwyn.	Yng *Ngh*orwen.
Fy *nh*âd.	Fy *m*rawd.	Fy *ngh*ariad.

Synoptical view of the different governments of **yn.**

Yn participial governs the *radical*. Arthur sydd *yn teyrnasu.*
Yn apposition ,, ,, *middle*. Arthur sydd *yn frenin.*
Yn adverbial ,, ,, *middle*. Arthur sydd yn rhyfela *yn dda.*
Yn preposition ,, ,, *nasal*. *Yn nh*ir Cymru.

(*a*) *Yn* apposition and *yn* adverbial govern the *radical* sound of words beginning with *ll* and *rh*.

932. The *nasal* sound comes after some of the cardinal numbers. (§§ 496, 497.)

Deng *n*afad. Saith *n*iwrnod. Pum *m*lynedd.

(*a*) Dr. Aufrecht has endeavoured to prove that all the words which take the nasal sound after them ended originally with an *n*. "C G, P B, T D, are respectively changed into NGH NG, MH M, NH N, if preceded by the possessive pronoun *fy* (my), the preposition *yn* (in), and certain numerals. These numerals are *pump* or *pum* (five), *saith* (seven), *wyth* (eight), *naw* (nine), *deg* (ten), *ugain* (twenty) and its compounds, *can* (a hundred). . . . Only three words undergo usually a change after these [numerals], namely, *blwydd* or *blynedd* (year), and *diwrnod* (day). The simple reason why the above-mentioned numerals only, and no others, have this influence, is because they alone ended originally with an *n*. Compare

WELSH.	SANSCRIT.	GOTHIC.	LITHUANIAN.
Pump	pancan	——	——
Saith	saptan	sibun	septyni.
Wyth	ashtan	——	asztûni.
Naw	navan	niun	dewyni.
Deg	daçan	taihun	——

"*Can*, a corruption of *cant*, which still exists and agrees with the Irish *cet*, has exceeded these limits, and produces the change in consequence of its present final *n*, while *un* (one) is prevented from exercising a similar influence, because it originally terminated with a vowel (*uno*). The preposition *yn* agrees with ἐν, Latin *in*, Gothic *in*, Oscan and Umbrian *en*, Lithuanian *in*, and belongs to the same category as *pump*, &c.

"In composition, a corresponding nasal must be substituted for a mute, if a word is preceded by the negative particle *an*, which corresponds to the Greek ἀν, Umbrian and Oscan *an*, Sanscrit *an*, Gothic *un*, Latin *in*. Thus we have *anghadarn* (powerless) for *an*+*cadarn*, *anmhech* (sinless) for *an*+*pech*, *anneffro* (not awake) for *an*+*deffro*. The same takes place after another particle, *cy*, ξύν, *cum*; we find, therefore, *cynghas* (mutual hate) from *cy*+*cas*, *cyngofal* (mutual care) from *cy*+*gofal*, *cymhorth* (mutual aid) from *cy*+*porth*, *cymrawdd* (discourse) from *cy*+*brawdd*, *cynhebygu* (to compare) from *cy*+*tebygu*, *cynefod* (custom) from *cy*+*defod*.

"From all these cases it is evident that the *n*, coming in contact with the following mute, had the power to assimilate it, though in course of time the cause might disappear, and the effect alone remain.

"Having shown that nasalization took place only where a preceding word ended with an *n*, we are naturally led to suppose that *fy* (my) also must have been originally *fyn*, though this form is no longer to be discovered even in the oldest literary monuments of the Kelt. But we must recollect that our *my*, *thy*, are a similar corruption of the Anglo-Saxon *mîn*, *thîn*, and that the Gothic *mein*, as well as the Lithuanian *mánas*, have an *n* in the possessive pronoun."—(See a paper, read May the 23rd, 1856, before the Philological Society, by Theodore Aufrecht, PH.D., author of "De accentu compositorum Sanscritorum," &c., &c.)

ASPIRATE SOUND.

933. ☞ *Ni*, "not;" *na*, imper. "not;" "that . . not;" *ai ni*, "is not;" *oni*, "is not," "unless," "until," govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and the *middle* of the 2nd and 3rd classes.

Ni *ch*âr.	Na *ch*âr.	Amlwg yw na *ch*âr.
Ni *dd*arllen.	Na *dd*arllen.	Amlwg yw na *dd*arllen.

934. The prepositions *â*, *gyda*, and *efo*, "with;" *tua*, "towards;" and *tra*, "beyond," govern the *aspirate* of the 1st class, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Lladd â *ch*leddyf.	Gyda *th*i.	Taraw â *b*ys.

935. The conjunctions *a*, "and," "as;" *na*, "nor," "than;" the obsolete *no*, "than;" and *o*, "if," govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd.

Bara a *ch*aws.	Cystal a *th*i.
Bara a *g*win.	Gwell na *b*wyd.

936. The numerals *tri* and *chwe*, and the pronoun *ei feminine*, govern the *aspirate* of the 1st, and *radical* of the 2nd and 3rd classes. (§§ 494, 540.)

Tri *ch*osyn.	Chwe *ch*osyn.	Ei *ch*osyn.
Tri *g*wr.	Chwe *g*wr.	Ei *g*wr.

937. Vowels aspirated.—Vowel initials take the aspirate *h* before them after the pronouns *ym*, *ei feminine*, *ein*, and *eu*. (§ 542.)

Myfi a'm *h*awen.	Ei *h*awen.	Ein *h*awen.

938. *Ei masculine* is followed by the aspirate *h*, if the following word be a *finite* verb. (§ 543.)

Arthur a'*i* (=a ei) *h*andwyodd ef. Pan y'*i* (=y ei) *h*andwyir.

939. The numeral *ugain* is aspirated after the preposition *ar*; as,

Un ar *h*ugain. Dau ar *h*ugain.

AN ALPHABETICAL LIST OF WORDS AND PARTICLES,

WITH EXAMPLES TO SHOW THEIR GOVERNING POWERS.

940. In the following alphabetical list, which contains, principally, simple prepositions, conjunctions, adverbs, and indefinite pronouns, it was thought unnecessary to insert all the compounds (*e.g.*, *o herwydd, oddi wrth, naill ai*), as the government of these depends on the last word. For example, "herwydd" takes the *radical* after it, therefore the compound "o herwydd" requires to be followed by the *radical*. "Wrth" governs the *middle*, and therefore "oddi wrth" governs the same sound. (See §§ 370–373.)

A, expletive: *mid.* Duw a *dd*ywedodd, *God said.*

A, interrogative: *mid.* A *dd*ywedodd efe? *did he say?*

A, and; as; heading absolute clause: *asp.* Bara a *ch*aws, *bread and cheese.* Mŏr ddysgedig a *th*ithau, *as learned as you.* A *th*i yn ysgrifenu, *you writing.*

A, *â*, with: *asp.* Lladd â *ch*leddyf, *to kill with a sword.*

Achos, on account of, because: *rad.* Achos *d*yfod o hono, *because he came.*

Ai, interrogative: *rad.* Ai ceiniog yw? *is it a penny?*

Ail, second: *mid.* Yr ail *dd*ydd, *the second day.* Yr ail *b*ennod, *the second chapter.* (See § 501, note *b*.)

Am, round; for; because: *mid.* Am *g*anol, *round the middle.* Am *g*einiog, *for a penny.* Am *dd*ywedyd o hono, *because he said.*

Ambell, some few: *mid.* Ambell *d*ro, *sometimes.*

Amgylch, about: *rad.* Myned amgylch *d*inas, *to surround a city.*

Amrai, } several: *mid.* Amrai *b*ennodau, *several chapters.* Amryw
Amryw, } *l*yfrau, *several books.*

Ar, upon; participial sign of future=about: *mid.* Ar *b*en y ty, *on the top of the house.* Ar *dd*yfod, *about to come.*

(*a*) *Ugain*, twenty, is aspirated after *ar*. Saith ar *h*ugain, *seven and twenty.*

Ar fedr, participial sign of the future=about: *rad.* Ar fedr *m*yned, *about to go.*

Ar warthaf, upon: *rad.* Dyfod ar warthaf *ll*adron, *to surprise thieves.*

At, to, towards: *mid.* Uchenaid at *dd*oeth, *a sigh toward the wise.*

Càn, as; since; with; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Can *g*ynted a'r gwynt, *as swift as the wind.* A chan *dd*isgwyl o hono, *and since he expected.* Nid oes llyfr na chan *f*ab na chan *f*erch yr amaethwr, *neither the son nor the daughter of the farmer has a book.* A chan *g*yfaddef ei bechodau, *and confessing his sins.*

Canys, for: *rad.* Canys *d*aeth Arthur yma, *for Arthur came here.*

Càr, cèr=gèr: rad.

Cerfydd=gerfydd: rad.

Cwedi=gwedi: rad.

Cyd, although: *rad.* A chyd *d*ylem ni, *and although we ought.*

Cyda=gyda: rad.

Cyfryw, such: *mid.* Y cyfryw *b*ethau, *such things.*

Cylch, about: *rad.* Cylch *p*ethau, *about things.*

Cŷn, before: *rad.* Cyn *d*ydd dial, *before the day of vengeance.*

Cŷn, as, so, how: *mid.* Cyn *dd*ued a'r frân, *as black as the crow.*

(*a*) *Cŷn* may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh.* Cyn *ll*oned *or* lo*n*ed, *as cheerful.*

Chwe, six: *asp.* Chwe *ch*orn, *six horns.* Chwe *ph*en, *six heads.* Chwe *th*ŷ, *six houses.*

Dacw, yonder is: *mid.* Dacw *dd*au offeiriad, *yonder are two clergymen.*

Dàn, under; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Dan *d*o, *under cover.* Dyna hi yn myned dan *g*anu, *there she is going singing along.*

Dau, two (mas.): *mid.* Dau *f*ardd, *two bards.*

Deng, ten: *rad* of *m*; *mid.* of *g*; *nasal* of *d.* Deng *m*archog, *ten knights.* Deng air, *ten words.* Deng *n*afad, *ten sheep.* (See § 496.)

Digon, enough or very: *rad.* Digon call, *cunning enough.*

Dim, any; expletive: *rad.* Nid oes dim *d*aioni ynddo, *there is no good in him.* A oes genych ddim *g*win? *have you any wine?* Nis gallaf ddim *t*aflu'r gareg, *I cannot throw the stone.*

Dròs, over; for: *mid.* Myned dros *g*amfa, *to go over a stile.* Gwna dda dros *dd*rwg, *do good for evil.*

Draws=traws: rad.

Drwy, through: *mid.* Aeth drwy *d*ân, *he went through fire.*

Dwy, two (fem.): *mid.* Dwy *g*âth, *two cats.*

Dy, thy: *mid.* Dy *d*âd, *thy father.* Dy *f*am, *thy mother.*

Dyma, here is: *mid.* Dyma *g*leddyf miniog, *here is a sharp sword.*

Dyna, there is: *mid.* Dyna *f*achgen da, *there's a good boy.*

E, expletive pronoun: *mid.* E *dd*ywedodd Arthur y gwir, *Arthur said the truth.*

Efo, with, along with: *asp.* Tori efo *ch*yllell, *to cut with a knife.* Aeth i ffordd efo *ch*yfaill, *he went away with a friend.*

Ei, his: *mid.* Ei *g*oes, *his leg.* Ei *g*anu, *his singing.*

(*a*) *Ei mas.*, placed before a *finite* verb, governs the *radical.* Arthur a'i (= a ei) *d*ysgodd ef, *Arthur taught him.*

When *ei mas.* precedes a *finite* verb with a vowel initial, the said verb has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Arthur a'i (= a ei) *h*andwyodd ef, *Arthur ruined him.*

Ei, her: *asp.* Ei *ch*oes, *her leg.* Ei *ch*anu, *her singing.*

(*a*) *Ei fem.*, placed before a *finite* verb, governs the *radical.* Arthur a'i (= a ei) carodd hi, *Arthur loved her.*

When *ei fem.* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Angharad a'i (= a ei) *h*awen, *Angharad and her muse.* Daeth i'w *h*andwyo hi, *he came to ruin her.* Efe a'i *h*andwyodd hi, *he ruined her.*

Eill=ill: rad.

Ein, our: *rad.* Ein *t*ad, *our father.* Ein *g*wlad, *our country.*

(*a*) When *ein* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Ein *h*iaith, *our language.*

Eithr, but: *rad.* Na châr, eithr casâ ddrygioni, *do not love, but hate evil.* (See § 728, note *a.*)

Er, for; since; although: *rad.* Er ceiniog, *for a penny.* Er *d*oe, *since yesterday.* Er *d*ywedyd o hono y gwir, *though he said the truth.*

(*a*) *Er* is sometimes followed by the *mid.* of *bôd.* Er *b*od *or* er *f*od.

Erbyn, against or by; against or contrary to: *rad.* Erbyn *d*ydd Llun, *by Monday.* Siarad yn erbyn *g*wr doeth, *to speak against a wise man.*

Er mwyn, for sake of: *rad.* Er mwyn *d*yn, *for man's sake.*

Er pan, since: *mid.* Er pan *dd*aeth Arthur, *since Arthur came.*

Er's, erys, for: *rad.* Erys *t*alm byd, *for a long while since.*

Erwydd=herwydd: rad.

Eu, their: *rad.* Eu *t*âd a'u *m*âm, *their father and their mother.*

(*a*) When *eu* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has the aspirate *h* prefixed to it. Eu *h*awen, *their muse.*

Fàl=màl: rad.

Fath (from radical *bath* or *math*), such, sort: *mid.* Y fath *b*ethau, *such things.* Pa fath *dd*yn yw efe? *what sort of a man is he?*

Fe, expletive pronoun: *mid.* Fe *l*adratodd Ioan lawer oddi arnaf, *John stole much from me.*

Fèl=màl: rad.

Fo, expletive pronoun: *mid.* Fo *l*uddiwyd Arthur rhag dyfod, *Arthur was prevented from coming.*

Fy, my: *nasal.* Fy *n*had a fy *m*rawd, *my father and my brother.*

Gàn, as, since; with; participial sign of the present: *mid.* Pa gàn *g*oched bynag ydyw, *however red it is.* Gan *dd*ywedyd o hono y gwir, *since he said the truth.* Nid oes gan *f*ab yr amaethwr lyfr, *the farmer's son has not a book.* Gàn *l*adrata eiddo ei gymmydog, *stealing his neighbour's property.*

Gâr, ger, by or near: *rad.* Gàr *ll*aw, *near the hand.* Gèr *b*ron, *near the breast; before.*

Gerfydd, in contact with, or by: *rad.* Llusgo gerfydd *g*wallt, *to drag by the hair.*

Go, somewhat: *mid.* Dynes go *d*lws, *a tolerably handsome woman.*

Gwaith, because: *rad.* Gwaith *g*oddeu, *on purpose.*

Gwedi, after; participial sign of the past: *rad.* Gwedi *g*waith, *after work.* Gwedi *d*arfod, *having finished.*

Gyda, with: *asp.* Aethym gyda *th*âd yr eneth, *I went with the girl's father.*

Heb, without; beside: *mid.* Heb *Dd*uw, heb *dd*im, *without God, without anything.* Mal ydd oeddynt yn myned heb *g*astell, *as they were going by a castle.*

Heb law, besides: *rad.* Heb law *p*ethau ereill, *besides other things.* (See § 728, note *a.*)

Heibio, by or beside: *rad.* Aethym heibio *t*ŷ fy nghyfaill, *I passed by my friend's house.*

Herwydd, because: *rad.* Herwydd *g*weled o hono, *because he saw.*

Holl, all: *mid.* Yr holl *g*enhedlaethau, *all generations.*

Hyd, as far as; over; until: *mid.* Hyd *dd*iwedd byd, hyd *dd*ydd barn, *to the end of the world, to the day of judgment.* Taena hwna hyd *f*wrdd dy gyfaill, *spread that over your friend's table.* Hyd *dd*yfodiad Arthur, *until Arthur's coming.*

(*a*) *Hyd*, and its compound *ar hyd*, sometimes govern the *radical.*

I, to, into: *mid.* Myned i *d*ŷ, *to go into a house.*

(*a*) *I* governs *ti*, thou, and its compounds in the *radical.* Gofynais i ti ddyfod, *I asked you to come.* It governs *mi*, I or me, and its compounds; *mewn*, in; and *maes*, out, in the *rad.* or *mid.* Dywed i *m*i, or *i fi*, *tell me.*

Ill, their or they: *rad.* Ill *d*au, *they two.*

Is, below: *rad.* A ei di is *g*wynt, ai uwch gwynt? *wilt thou go below wind or above wind?*

(*a*) In *is law*, below, *is* is a prefix, and hence it governs the *middle.*

Llai, less: *rad.* Llai *p*arablus, *less talkative.*

Llawer, many, much: *rad.* Llawer *g*waith, *many a time.* Llawer *m*wy, *much more.*

Llawn, full: *rad.* Ei llygaid yn llawn *d*agrau, *her eyes full of tears.*

Lled, partly: *mid.* Mae efe yn lled *g*yssurus, *he is tolerably comfortable.*

Lleiaf, least : *rad.* Lleiaf *c*ynnhenus, *least quarrelsome.*

Llyma, here is : *mid.* Llyma *G*rist, *behold Christ.*

Llyna, yonder is : *mid.* Llyna *dd*yn dysgedig, *behold a learned man.*

Mai, that : *rad.* Dywed mai *d*yn caredig yw Arthur, *he says that Arthur is a kind man.*

Màl, as : *rad.* Gair gwraig màl *g*wynt y cychwyn, *a woman's word sets off like the wind.*

Megys, as : *rad.* Megys *d*iddym, *as nothing.*

Mewn, in : *rad.* Mewn *tŷ*, *in a house.*

Mi, expletive pronoun : *mid.* Mi *dd*aw, *he will come.*

Mo, auxiliary adverb : *mid.* Nis medrant ganfod mo *dd*ichellion y dyn, *they cannot perceive the man's tricks.*

Mòr, as, so, how : *mid.* Mòr *dd*u a'r frân, *as black as the crow.* Mae mòr *f*alch fel na sieryd â mi, *he is so proud that he will not speak to me.* Gwelwch mor *f*alch yw Arthur, *see how proud Arthur is.*

(*a*) *Mòr* may be followed by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh*. Mòr *ll*on, *or* mor *l*on, *so cheerful.*

Mwy, more : *rad.* Mwy *d*ysgedig, *more learned.*

Mwyaf, most : *rad.* Mwyaf *d*ysgedig, *most learned.*

Mŷn, by, in swearing : *rad.* Mŷn *d*yn=*by man ; by heavens.*

Na, not (imper.) ; no ; that . . not : *asp.* of the first class ; *mid.* of the second and third. (1st class) Na *ch*âr, *love not.* A gâr efe? Na *ch*âr. *Will he love? He will not love.* Amlwg yw na *ch*âr efe, *it is evident that he will not love.* (2nd and 3rd) Na *f*enthyca, *borrow not.* A ddaw efe? Na *dd*aw. *Will he come? He will not come.* Amlwg yw na *l*wydda efe, *it is evident that he will not succeed.*

(*a*) *Na* governs the inflections of *bôd*, to be, sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical*. Dywedodd na *f*ydd, *or* na *b*ydd yno, *he said that he will not be there.*

Na, nor ; than : *asp.* Na *th*âd na *th*aid, *neither father nor grandfather.* Gwell na *th*âd, *better than a father.*

Nàd, that . . not : *rad.* Tybiaf nad *g*wir y chwedl, *I think that the story is not true.*

Naill, one or the other : *mid.* Ar y naill *d*u, *on one side.*

Namyn, except : *rad.* Namyn *D*uw nid oes dewin, *except God there is none that knows the future.* (See § 728, note *a*.)

Nàs, that . . not : *rad.* Dywed nas *d*aeth Arthur, *he says that Arthur did not come.*

Neb, any : *rad.* Nad elom mewn neb *rh*yw berygl, *that we enter not into any danger.*

Nemmawr, not much, not many, scarcely any : *mid.* Nid oes nemmawr air, *there is scarcely a word.*

Nès, until : *rad.* Ni ddywedais ddim nes clywed oddi wrtho, *I said nothing until I heard from him.*

Neu, or: *mid.* Bara neu *g*aws, *bread or cheese.*

(*a*) *Neu* governs a finite verb in *rad.* Dos allan neu *t*yred i mewn, *go out or come in.*

Newydd, newly or just: *mid.* Mae newydd *f*yned, *he is just gone.*

Ni, not: *asp.* of 1st class, and *mid.* of 2nd and 3rd. Ni *ph*aid, *he will not cease.* Ni *dd*aw, *he will not come.* Ni *f*edr, *he is not able.*

(*a*) *Ni* governs the inflections of *bôd*, to be, sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical.* Ni *f*u, *or* ni *b*u yma, *he has not been here.*

Nid, not: *rad.* Nid *m*ilwr yw Arthur, *Arthur is not a soldier.*

Nis, not: *rad.* Nis *g*welais neb, *I saw nobody.*

No, than (obsolete): *asp.* Gwerthfawrocach no *th*eyrnas, *more valuable than a kingdom.*

O, from: *mid.* Aeth o *dŷ* i dŷ, *he went from house to house.*

(*a*) *O* in some instances governs the *middle* or *radical.* O *f*ewn, *or* o *m*ewn, *within.*

O, if: *asp.* O *ch*erwch fi, *if you love me.*

Oddi, from: usually the *middle*, but sometimes the *rad.* Oddi *fr*y, *from above.* Oddi *t*ân, *from under.*

Oddi eithr, } except: *rad.* Oddi eithr *d*yfod o hono, *except he come.* (See
Oddigerth, } § 728, note *a.*)

Ond, but: *rad.* Nid derwydd ond *D*uw, *there is no druid but God.* (See § 728, note *a.*)

Oni, if not; until; is not (interr.): *asp.* of 1st class, and *mid.* of 2nd and 3rd. Oni *ch*ais efe, *unless he tries.* Oni *dd*elo, *until he come.* Oni *f*edr efe ddyfod? *is he not able to come?*

(*a*) *Oni* governs the inflections of *bôd*, sometimes in the *middle*, sometimes in the *radical.* Oni *f*ydd, *or* oni *b*ydd efe, *unless he be.*

Onid, *onis*=*oni*: *rad.*

Onid, but: *rad.* Onid *tŷ* i Dduw, *but the house of God.* (See § 728, note *a.*)

Or, if (obsolete): *rad.* Or *m*yn efe, *if he wishes.*

Os, if: *rad.* Os *d*aw yma, *if he comes here.*

Pa, what: *mid.* Pa *b*eth ydyw? *what is it?*

Pân, when: *mid.* Pan *g*lywais oddi wrtho, *when I heard from him.*

Parth and *parthed*, as to: *rad.* Parth *g*wirionedd y chwedl, *as to the truth of the story.*

Pe, if: *rad.* Pe *d*elai'r dyn, *if the man came.*

Pei, if: *rad.* Pei *g*wyddwn, *if I knew.*

Pes, if: *rad.* Pes cyttunasai efe âg Arthur, *if he had agreed with Arthur.*

Peth, some: *rad.* Peth *d*aioni, *some good.*

Plegyd, because: *rad.* Plegyd *d*ywedyd o honof y gwir, *because I said the truth.*

Po, by how much: *rad.* Goreu po cyntaf, *the sooner the better.*

Pob, every: *rad.* Pob *d*yn, *every man.* Pob *m*àn, *everywhere.*

Pobl, people: *mid.* Y bobl *dd*a hyn, *these good people.*

Poni=oni: rad. (Obsolete.)

Poṅid=oni: rad. (Obsolete.)

Pur, very: *mid.* Pur *g*aredig, *very kind.*

(*a*) *Pur* may be followed either by the *mid.* or *rad.* of *ll* and *rh.* Pur *rh*wydd, *or* pur *r*wydd, *very free.*

Rhàg, from, for; lest; because: *rad.* Ffo rhag *d*rwg arglwydd, *flee from a bad lord.* Rhag *d*yfod o hono, *lest he should come.*

Rhai, some: *rad.* Rhai *d*ynion, *some men.*

Rhwng, between: *rad.* Rhwng *m*ynyddoedd, *between mountains.*

Rhy, too: *mid.* Mae hyna yn rhy *dd*rwg, *that is too bad.*

Rhyw, some: *mid.* Rhyw *dd*yn, *some man.* Rhyw *f*aint, *some quantity.*

Saith, seven: *mid.* of 1st class, and *rad.* of 2nd and 3rd. Saith *g*anwyll, *seven candles.* Saith *d*erwen, *seven oak-trees.*

Sawl, how many: *rad.* Sawl *g*waith? *how many times?*

(*a*) *Y sawl*, such, governs *mid.* Y sawl *b*ethau, *such things.*

Sef, that is, or namely: *rad.* Efe sydd Dduw, sef *D*uw ein tadau, *he is God, namely, the God of our fathers.*

(*a*) *Sef* is often followed by the verb of a transitive clause in the *middle.* Hyn a ddywed, sef *dd*arfod iddo ei gynnorthwyo, *this he says, namely, that he assisted him.*

Serch, notwithstanding: *rad.* Serch ceisaw o hono fy nrygu, *although he tried to injure me.*

(*a*) It is sometimes followed by the *mid.* of *bôd.* Serch *b*od *or* serch *f*od.

Tàn, under; participial sign of the present; until: *mid.* (See *Dan.*) Tan *dd*aw efe, *until he comes.*

Taw=mai: rad.

Tra, beyond (obsolete); very: *asp.* Tra *ch*àll, *very prudent.*

Tra, whilst, is irregular: it is followed by the *radical*, the *middle*, or the *aspirate.* Its general tendency, however, is to govern the *radical.* Doeth dyn tra *t*awo, *a man is wise whilst he keeps silent.*

Traws, cross, over: *rad.* Traws *m*ynydd, *over a mountain.*

Tri, three; *asp.* Tri *th*ylwyth, *three families.*

Trὸs=drὸs: mid.

Trwy=drwy: mid.

Tua, towards: *asp.* Myned tua *th*ref, *to go towards home.*

Uch, *uwch*, above: *rad.* Uwch *g*wynt, *above wind.*

(*a*) In *uwch ben* and *uwch law*, *uwch* is a prefix, and hence it governs the *middle.*

Un, one (masculine): *rad.* Un *d*yn, *one man.*

Un, one (feminine: *mid.* Un *dd*ynes, *one woman.*

(*a*) *Un* feminine before *ll* and *rh* governs the *radical.* *Un ll*wy, *one spoon.* Un *r*haw, *one spade.*

Unrhyw, any: *mid.* Cymmeraf unrhyw *b*eth a fynoch, *I will take anything you like.*

Wedi=gwedi: rad.

Wele, behold: *mid.* Wele *dd*yn glwth, *behold a gluttonous man.*

Wrth, close to, by; to: *mid.* Sefyll wrth *d*ân, *to stand by a fire.* Dywedwch wrth *f*ab Arthur, *tell Arthur's son.*

Wyth, eight: *mid.* of the 1st class, and *rad.* of the 2nd and 3rd. Wyth *b*en, *eight heads.* Wyth *b*ys, *eight fingers.*

Y, the (masculine): *rad.* Y *b*renin, *the king.*

(*a*) It governs *dau*, two, *mâth*, such, *pobl* and *pobloedd*, people, in the *middle* sound. Y *dd*au ddyn, *the two men.* Y *f*ath leidr, *such a thief.* Y *b*obl hyn, *these people.*

Y, the (feminine), governs the *singular* in the *middle*, the *plural* in the *radical.* Y *fr*enhines, *the queen.* Y *br*enhinesau, *the queens.*

(*a*) *Feminine nouns singular*, beginning with *ll* or *rh*, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y *ll*ong, *the ship.* Y *rh*odd, *the gift.*

(*b*) The cardinal numbers, even when *feminine*, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y *d*eng morwyn, *the ten virgins.* But *dwy*, two, is put in the *middle.* Y *dd*wy eneth, *the two girls.*

(*c*) The word *Bala*, and proper names of *rivers*, although feminine, retain the *radical* after *y.* Y *B*ala. Y *T*eifi.

Y, expletive; that: *rad.* Yn y dechreuad y creodd Duw, *in the beginning God created.* Dywed y *d*aw, *he says that he will come.*

Ychydig, a little; a few: *mid.* Ychydig *l*esâd, *little benefit.* Ychydig *dd*ynion, *a few men.*

Yd, expletive (obsolete): *mid.* Mân yd *l*efair, *where it makes a noise.*

Ym, my: *rad.* Mi a'm (=a ym) *t*âd, *I and my father.*

(*a*) When *ym* precedes a word with a vowel initial, that word has *h* prefixed to it. Myfi a'm *h*iaith, *I and my language.*

Ym, in: *nasal.* Ym *mh*lwyf Pennant, *in the parish of Pennant.*

Ymhlith, for *ym mhlith*, amongst: *rad.* Ymhlith *ll*adron, *amongst thieves.*

Ymron, for *ym mron*, almost: *rad.* Ymron *m*arw, *almost dying.*

Ymysg, for *ym mysg*, amidst: *rad.* Mwy no physg ymysg *m*ôr, *more than fishes in the midst of the sea.*

Yn, participial sign of the present: *rad.* Yn *c*anu, *singing,*

Yn, apposition and adverbial: *mid.* Arthur sydd yn *f*renin, *Arthur is a king.* Arthur sydd yn rhyfela yn *dd*a, *Arthur fights well.*

(*a*) *Yn* apposition and *yn* adverbial govern *ll* and *rh* in the *radical.*

Yn, in: *nasal.* Yn *nh*ref y Bala, *in the town of Bala.*

Yng, in: *nasal.* Yng *ngh*archar, *in prison.*

Ynghyda, for *yng nghyda*, together with: *asp.* Ynghyda *ph*ethau ereill, *together with other things.*

Ynghylch, for *yng nghylch*, about: *rad.* Ymryson ynghŷlch *g*eiriau, *to contend about words.*

Ynghŵydd, for *yng ngŵydd*, before: *rad.* Yngŵydd *b*renin, *in the presence of a king.*

Ynte, or: *rad.* Naill ai dyn ynte *d*ynes, *either a man or a woman.*

Yr hwn, yr hon, yr hyn, who, which (rel.): *mid.* Yr hwn *dd*yn, *which man.*

Yr un (masculine), the same; any: *rad.* Yr un *g*wr, *the same man.*

Yr un (feminine), the same; any: *mid.* Yr un *f*enyw, *the same woman.* (See *Un feminine.*)

Yth, thy: *mid.* Tydi a'th (=a yth) *dâd*, *thou and thy father.*

EXAMINATION QUESTIONS.

[PAGES 1–54.]

1. Enumerate the mutable consonants, and classify them.
2. Give the law of accentuation. Give instances of words accented on the ultima.
3. What is the quantity of penults?
4. Wherein do the Old and New Schools differ with regard to orthography?
5. Give the *aspirate* sound of *tarw* and *pentwr;* the *nasal* of *ci* and *pobl;* the *middle* of *gwraig* and *mam;* the *radical* of *ngwair, nghoes, ŵr,* and *fynydd.*
6. Which are the consonants that are characteristic of long monosyllables?
7. When has the letter *y* its *primary,* and when its *secondary* sound?
8. What verbal termination borrows the aspirate *h.* Name the consonants which will not admit of the aspirate.
9. "Nouns singular are rendered plural in three ways." Give instances.
10. What is the plural ending applied to irrational animals?
11. How is the gender of animate objects distinguished?
12. "Primitive nouns have their gender denoted by their vowels." Exemplify this rule.
13. When does a long syllable become half long?
14. Give instances of singular nouns formed from the plural.
15. State the difference between the interrogative pronouns *pwy* and *pa.*
16. Enumerate the indefinite pronouns which govern the *radical* sound.
17. Write down the cardinal and ordinal numbers from 1 to 20.
18. Translate: "the third hour;" "the fourth day;" "the fourteenth Psalm;" "six times;" "eleven times."
19. Illustrate by examples the inflected and the periphrastic comparisons of adjectives.
20. How may the gender of compound nouns and of derivative nouns be ascertained?
21. Give the plural number of *buan; bychan; ieuanc; marw; main.*
22. How is the feminine gender of primitive adjectives formed?
23. Give the degrees of comparison of *têg; gwlŷb; rhâd; tlawd; llwm; hen; bâch; drwg; mawr.*

24. What sound supplies the aspirate of the 2nd and 3rd classes of mutable consonants?

25. Give the plural number of *carw; arf; cyllell; corn; gwaell; aradr; gwraig; angel; blynedd; grâs; credadyn; chwaer; pared; dychryn; ysglodyn; polyn.*

26. Write down a list of the masculine suffixes, and another of the feminine suffixes, of derivative nouns, with examples.

27. Give the feminine gender of *cefnder; nai; chwegrwn; priodfab; tywysog; lleidr; hogyn;* and the masculine of *gafr; gŵydd; colomen fenyw; modryb.*

28. Enumerate the classes into which personal pronouns are divided. What is the force of the conjunctive pronoun?

29. Decline the "genitive of the personal pronoun,"—the relative "yr hwn,"—and the possessive "eiddof."

30. How are adjectives made plural? Give instances of adjectives which are never made plural.

31. Write down the plural number of *cynghor*, a counsel, and *cynghor*, a council; *person*, a clergyman, and *person*, a person; *llwyth*, a tribe, and *llwyth*, a load.

32. How is the gender of the proper names of objects to be known?

33. Translate: "a white stone;" "white stones;" "a whiter stone."

34. What is peculiar respecting the gender of derivative nouns ending in *aid, an,* and *od?*

35. Give the different classes of demonstrative pronouns, with their equivalents in English.

36. What is the rule in forming the plural of compound nouns?

37. When does the preposition *yn* become *ym*, and *yng?* Of what is *i'w* a contraction?

38. Give the Latin forms of *bynag; mau;* and *tau.*

[PAGES 55-111.]

39. What is the difference between the infinitive endings *i* and *u?*

40. "The Welsh language has no inflected form to describe present Indicative." How is the present expressed?

41. Are there any verbs which form an exception to this assertion?

42. Analyze *wyf, wyt, ŷm, ŷch, ŷnt;* also *bûm, buost, buoch, buant.*

43. Write down the inflected terminations of the passive voice, naming the moods and tenses.

44. How is the periphrastic passive formed?

45. Distinguish between *gallu* and *medru; gwybod* and *adnabod; yr wyf yn cael* and *y mae genyf.*

46. What are the equivalents of the verbs *may* and *might*, when they express *liberty, permission, power?*

47. How is a reflected verb formed? Translate, "to wash one's self."

48. Where is the root of the verb to be found?

49. How are active participles formed? How is a passive participle distinguished from an active?

50. Give the first person perfect of *arwain; hebrwng; attal; addaw:* and the first person future of *tewi; sefyll; llenwi; marchogaeth; clywed; rhedeg; gochelyd; taraw.*

51. How are the compounds of *Bôd* conjugated? Give a list of them, and explain the words or particles prefixed to "bod."

52. How do you form the finite tenses of verbs ending in *io, ied,* and *hau?*

53. Enumerate the infinitive verbal endings most frequently in vogue.

54. With what may *yd* in "*yd*wyf" be compared? also the impersonal *ys?*

55. Explain the difference between "nid rhaid i mi" and "rhaid i mi beidio."

56. Give a list of the auxiliary verbs; and also of the irregular verbs.

57. Before which of the finite endings of verbs may *a* of the penult be changed into *e?*

58. Name verbs which borrow *i* in the formation of their finite tenses.

59. Give the first person perfect of *bwrw; galw; creu; ceisio:* give all the persons of the pluperfect of *clywed; gweled; ffoi; cyfiawnhau:* and the present Subjunctive of *ffoi.*

60. How is the perfect Subjunctive expressed in Welsh?

61. "The terminations of verbs are changes and contractions of personal pronouns." Illustrate this.

62. Give the inflected tenses of "Dysgu," in the Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive.

63. When are the forms *buaswn* and *dysgaswn* chiefly used in the Indicative mood?

64. Translate: "that I may be;" "that I might be;" "may he be happy;" "he says that I am a strong man;" "he says that we have learnt."

65. Write down the inflected endings of a regular verb, active voice.

66. How is the 3rd person singular of the future frequently formed? Give instances.

67. Give the consuetudinal forms of the present and imperfect of "Dysgu."

68. How may an impersonal passive be rendered into English?

69. Translate: "the man is here;" "the man is not here;" "they are writing;" "are they writing?"

70. Give the finite roots of *ysgwyd; dwyn; dianc:* also the tense and person of *dug; dwg; dyry; cwyd; cymmerth; tau; llâs.*

71. Translate: "I ought to have sent, but I did not."

72. Translate: "he lived;" "he will live;" "let him live;" "that they may die;" "he is a dead man;" "he is dying;" "I have a book;" "I have the book."

73. Give the Imperative mood of *myned; dyfod; gwneyd; gwybod.*

74. What is the difference between "mae arnaf annwyd" and "mae yr annwyd arnaf?"

75. Explain the difference between *gan* and *ar* when in construction with the inflections of *Bôd.*

[PAGES 112–134.]

76. Compare *acw; nycha; echdoe; po; golud; ethol; ystafell; ysgol; estron; camyll,* with Latin or Greek words.

77. Distinguish between *erys meityn* and *erys talm; gynt* and *gyneu; yna* and *yno.*

78. Give the derivation of *sef; malpai; ysgatfydd:* and the literal meaning of *i fyny; i maes; obry; i waered; ym mron.*

79. Give a list of "prepositions proper" governing the *radical* sound, and another governing the *middle.*

80. Compare the following prefixes with Latin and Greek: *a; am; an; arch; as* and *es; hy; tra; cyn.*

81. What particle corresponds to the English adverbial suffix "*ly.*"

82. Enumerate the most common suffixes of derivative adjectives, and explain their meanings.

83. Give the derivation of *addfed; anwir* (wicked); *daeth; daw; tywynu; ysgafn.*

84. Make a list of the terminations of abstract nouns, with examples.

85. Compare the adjective terminations *og, ol, ig,* and *us,* with Latin and English.

86. Decline and analyze *ataf; erof; genyf.*

87. Into how many classes are "compound prepositions" divided? How do they affect mutable consonants?

88. Explain the meaning and give the government of the following prefixes: *a; af; di; dad; gor; hy; tra; ym.*

[PAGES 134-171.]

89. When does the article assume the form *'r?*

90. In what way is the genitive relation expressed in Welsh?

91. Has the Welsh any equivalent expression to "a rogue of a lawyer?"

92. What is the normal position of the nominative case? How far does a change of position affect its radical sound?

93. Place the article before the following words: *gwlîth; gwobr; wythnos; ŵyn; gwraig; gwrthddadl; geneth.*

94. When is the genitive relation expressed by *o,* and when by *mere apposition?*

95. "The article governs a *fem. noun sing.* in the *middle* sound." Name any exceptions to this rule.

96. What is the normal position of the accusative case, and how is its radical sound governed?

97. Give the Welsh equivalents for, "the son of a king;" "the son of the king;" "the bright rays of the day star."

98. In what cases is the article found with proper names?

99. "The agreement of adjectives with their nouns in gender is partial." Give the rules.

100. Give instances of adjectives which are always made plural to agree with their nouns.

101. State the prevailing usage with regard to the initial mutations of proper names.

102. What is the usual position of an adjective in a sentence? Compare the cognate dialects.

103. How are the mutable consonants affected when they follow the positive, equal, comparative, or superlative degree of an adjective? Give examples.

104. Translate, putting the adjective after the noun: "a wise daughter;" "wise daughters;" "a brave soldier;" "brave soldiers."

105. Give the rules of the government of cardinal numbers.

106. State the difference between *pump* and *pum; chwech* and *chwe; deg* and *deng; cant* and *can.*

107. What form does the personal pronoun assume when a possessive pronoun precedes the verb?

108. How are the auxiliary pronouns used? What is the original form of the auxiliary "*mi?*"

109. Give the various forms of the equal degree of an adjective, with examples. What particles corresponds to "*so . . that;*" "*as . . as?*"

110. Explain "Alecsander *f*awr;" "Lasarus *d*lawd."

111. "Trwy ffydd i iachawdwriaeth, *p*arod i'w datguddio." Why is "parod" in the *radical* sound?

112. Translate: "he is the elder of the two;" "the more you study, the more you will learn."

113. What corresponds to "*it*" in (*e.g.*) "*it* is raining."

114. "Gwr hardd yr olwg." Explain this construction, and compare it with Greek.

115. What is the position of cardinal and ordinal numbers?

116. Translate: "three men;" "three women;" "the first day;" "twenty-three men;" "the 30th day;" "five years;" "a hundred years;" "seven days;" "the ten virgins;" "the 5th son;" "the 5th daughter."

117. Distinguish between *eiddof* and *yr eiddof.*

118. Take the words "tâd" and "ŵyn," and give the forms they assume when preceded by the possessive pronouns.

119. Translate: "*my* father, not *your* father;" "this man;" "these three men."

120. How do "*ei*" *masculine* and "*ei*" *feminine* affect a finite verb beginning with a consonant, and a finite verb beginning with a vowel?

121. How are the demonstratives *hyn* and *hyny* employed? Distinguish between *dyma* and *dyna*, when substitutes for *hyn*, &c.

122. What is the probable radical form of the indef. pronoun "*fawr?*"

123. Mention cases where "dim" may be translated *no* and *nothing*, and where "neb" may be translated *nobody*.

124. What is the difference between *pob* and *pawb*; *rhyw* and *rhai*; *holl* and *oll*; *tipyn* and *ychydig?*

[PAGES 172–199.]

125. Translate, putting the nominatives before the verb: "you and I went;" "you and he went." Translate the same sentences, putting the verb first.

126. Correct the following sentences, and give your reason for the corrections. "Daeth ddyn dieithr ataf." "Gwnawn dyn." "Ceisio ddyfod." "Efe a ddywed darllen o hono y llyfr."

127. "*Daeth* y disgyblion." "*Daethant* hwy." "Crynodd y ceidwaid, ac *aethant* megys yn feirw." Explain these constructions.

128. When a personal pronoun is the object of the verb, and immediately follows it, what must precede the verb?

129. What tenses of the Indicative are accompanied by the present Subjunctive?

130. Translate, "I came that I might see him."

131. "Myfi a *ysgrifenodd* y llythyr." Explain this construction, and give the force of it in English.

132. Name the clauses which have their verbs always in the Subjunctive.

133. Give a general rule as to the difference between *sydd*, *mae*, *yw*, and *oes*.

134. What effect has an intervenient word or phrase on a subject or object following it?

135. Translate: "I sent him to teach him;" "I sent him to be taught."

136. Give a list of the contracted forms of the possessive pronouns, as used before verbs.

137. Correct the following sentences, and state your reason. "Y dyn hwn yr wyf yn garu." "Y fenyw hon yr wyf yn garu." "Dyma'r bechgyn yr wyf yn ddysgu."

138. What is the force of *sydd*, and what are its component parts?

139. Prove that the following sentences are incorrect, and give their original forms. "Y neb sydd ganddo ddwy bais." "Beth sydd arnaf ei eisieu?"

140. Explain "*yn* apposition." How does it affect *ll* and *rh?*

141. Give the various uses of the Infinitive mood.

142. Distinguish between the participial signs *yn*, *gan*, and *dan*.

143. "Sometimes *sydd* is the negatived term." Give the different ways of negativing it.

144. "A'u tafodau sydd dwyllodrus." Why is "dwyllodrus" in the middle sound?

145. Translate: "a good man, having good children;" "industrious men, having industrious children."

146. When is the preposition "*i*" to be used before the Infinitive?

147. Correct the following sentences, and state your reason. "Cydseiniaid ydynt esgyrn geiriau." "Hwythau ydynt yn gwahanu'r Sacrament." "Tra yr ydyw hi yn ddydd."

148. "Tra yr elwyf a *gweddïo* acw." What is the rule for this construction?

149. Negative the following sentences. "Arthur sydd yn frenin." "Y mae Arthur yn y ty." "Yn y ty y mae Arthur." "Y mae genyf arian." "Y mae yr arian genyf." "Dyn doeth yw Arthur.".

[PAGES 199-229.]

150. Give a general statement as to the position of adverbs in a sentence.

151. What construction follows adverbs of doubting?

152. Explain the difference between the expletives *a* and *y*.

153. "Dyn neu *dd*ynes." "Dôs neu *t*yred." Explain the government of *neu*.

154. What are the different uses of the genitive pronoun *o honof?*

155. Some verbs in English are followed by two accusatives: what is the rule in Welsh?

156. What is the difference between *ni* and *nid; ni, nid, nis,* and *na, nad, nas; nad* and *nac?*

157. "Negatives do not destroy one another." Exemplify this rule.

158. What is peculiar in the government of *ni, na,* and *oni?*

159. Distinguish between the prepositions *mewn* and *ym; â* and *gyda; tua* and *tuag at; erbyn* and *yn erbyn; er* and *erys; o, oddi wrth, oddi ar, rhag.*

160. What preposition follows verbs beginning with the prefixes *cy, cyd, cym,* &c.?

161. Explain and exemplify the auxiliary adverbs *dim* and *mo.* From what is *mo* derived?

162. What sounds come after *na,* "that . . not," and *na,* "than?"

163. Is the sentence, "gwrendy eu llefain, ac a'u hachub hwynt," strictly correct?

164. What is the English of *prin* or *braidd,* when standing before a finite verb; and also of *prin na* or *braidd na,* when in the same position?

165. Name the circumstances in which the expletive *yr* does not precede the tenses *wyf* and *oeddwn.*

166. Translate: "he took the knives from the table;" "he went to London;" "I received a letter from an English friend;" "she ran from the wall to the door of the Church."

167. What is the difference in meaning between "byddaf yn cael llyfrau gan fy nhâd," and "byddaf yn cael llyfrau oddiwrth fy nhâd?"

168. Translate: "I walked nearly ten miles;" "he is not nearly so polite as his brother;" "they nearly fell."

169. What is the difference in meaning between *ac, ag, âg; nac* and *nag?*

170. Translate the following sentences. "What was she whispering to you?" "They are unkind to their children." "He chained the dog to a tree." "Did I not beg of you to remain with her?" "Do not envy your neighbour." "He is become an excellent scholar." "He upbraided them with their unbelief." "Such conduct does not become a gentleman." "Do not flatter me." "Will you pardon me?" "Obey your masters."

171. What sound does an interjection govern?

172. "Garedig gyfaill." Why is "garedig" in the middle sound?

[PAGES 230–287.]

173. How is a transitive clause converted into cause and concessive clauses?

174. Write down the conjunctions of time corresponding to *when; before; whilst; as long as; as soon as; since; until; whenever.*

175. What class of words does a time clause follow?

176. Name the tenses, in a transitive clause, which admit of the "infinitive construction," and give examples. Compare this construction with Latin and Greek.

177. Give examples of the "genitive" and "dative" constructions, and name the tenses expressed by them.

178. What is the negative of "dywed fy mod i wedi dysgu."

179. Give a list of the conjunctions of time which are followed by finite verbs.

180. Give a list of the interrogative particles.

181. How do you answer a question asked in the perfect indefinite?

182. Give examples of the use of *ïe* and *nage, aie* and *onide.* Give also the derivation of *nage, aie,* and *onide.*

183. Translate: "he took care of him till I came;" "when he came;" "I want to see her before I go away."

184. Define a motive clause, and give its headings in Greek, Latin, English, and Welsh.

185. What are the particles of negation in transitive, cause, and concessive clauses?

186. What tenses prefer the conjunction *y* or *yr* to express transitive clause?

187. Explain the difference in the order and signification between sentences introduced by the conjunction *y* and those introduced by *mai.*

188. Translate: "I hear that he is being taught;" "I hear that he has been taught;" "it was enacted in Parliament that both Testaments should be translated;" "they boast that their Church cannot fall;" "one may think that it was not to the image itself they prayed."

189. Define the explanatory cause clause, and give its most usual heading.

190. What mood does *fel*, "in order that," govern? also *i*, "to," *er*, "for," and *er mwyn*, "for the sake of?"

191. What is the difference between the interrogatives *a* and *ai?*

192. Translate: "as the subject is important;" "so great was his anger that he killed his brother;" "inasmuch as he hath suffered;" "although some rejoice;" "we went away that we might not see them;" "because they received no answer;" "he is so cruel that he would kill his brother, if he could;" "although Arthur has been taught."

193. Which are the proper *indefinite* relative pronouns?

194. Translate: "O na ddeuai y boreu," and explain "O na."

195. In what mood should the verb of the clause introduced by "canys" be put?

196. State the rules for using *os* and *pe*. When may *os* be followed by the imperfect Subjunctive?

197. Translate: "if ye be willing;" "if ye were Abraham's children."

198. How is the absolute clause expressed in Welsh?

199. Enumerate the words which govern the *nasal* sound.

200. When is the relative "yr hyn" to be used?

201. Translate into Welsh, omitting the relative pronoun: "he is the man, to whom I wrote a letter."

202. What is the form of the negative particle after *os* and *pe?*

203. Translate: "would that my head were waters;" "may he soon come."

204. When do vowel initials take the aspirate *h* before them?

205. Translate: "and He coming nigh, the multitude rejoiced;" "the king being there."

206. Enumerate the words which govern the *aspirate* sound.

207. State the rules for using the negative particles in relative sentences.

208. Translate "Whose power is infinite" in three different ways.

209. How do you account for the *nasal* sound coming after *pum; saith; wyth; naw; deng; ugain; can; fy;* and *yn?*

210. What sound do *pobl* and *pobloedd, dau* and *dwy*, assume after the article?

211. By what moods may *rhag* (lest) be followed? Give instances.

212. What is peculiar about the government of the article *y, yn* apposition, and *yn* adverbial, when followed by words beginning with *Ll* and *Rh?*

INDEX.

[The figures, unless *p.* or *pp.* be prefixed, refer to the Sections.]

A, aux. adv., 596, 700–705; omitted, 706.
A and *ai*, interr., 729; 819, 821–823.
A, not a relative pron., 205.
A, absolute, 878, 879.
A or *ag*, prep., 735, 750 (3).
Absolute clause, 878, 879.
Accentuation of words, 38–56.
Accusative case, position, 447, 448; how governed, 449–451; put absolutely, 452–454, 478.
Adjectives, 153–155; terminations, 156; 392, 393.
—— gender, 157, 158; how the fem. is formed, 159–162.
—— pl. number, 164, 165; how formed, 166, 167; adjectives having no pl., 169.
—— comparison, 170; how formed, 171–174; irregular, 175.
—— (syntax) gender, 463–466; number, 467; position, 468–472; government, 473; comparison, 481–487.
Adjective pronoun: *see* Indef. pron.
Adnabod and *adwaen* (irreg.), 317, 318.
Adverbs, how formed, 338–345; classification, 348–357.
—— (syntax) position, 676, 677; of negation, 678–689; of comparison, 690–692; of quality, 693–695; of doubting, 696; of showing, 697, 698; of quantity, 698 (1); of affirmation (aux.), 699–722; of interrogation, 818–836.
Adverbial numerals, 179, 180.
Adwaen, derivation of, *p.* 101 *f. n.*
Affixes, 387–393.
Ag, rel., 857–859; prep., 735, 750 (3).
Agos, 698 (1).
Ai: *see A*.
Ai and *onid*, 823–825.
Ai do? 830 (1).
Aie? 830 (1).
Am, "provided that," 846 (1).
Am danaf, 749.
An, prefix, 86, 87, *pp.* 124, 125.
Analysis of *wyf*, *wyt*, &c., 273 *f. n.*
—— of personal endings of verbs, 290 *f. n.*
—— of pronominal prep., 376.
Answers to questions, 826–831.
Antithetic pronouns, 185.
—— sentences, 578, 579, 615, 641, 642.
Apposition, 419–430; 525–527.
—— verbs, 645–657.
Ar, after verbs of praying, *p.* 221.
Ar and *ar fedr*, partic. signs, 269.
A'r, rel. pronoun, 857, 859.
Armoric (or Breton) compared with Welsh, 132, 174 *f. n.*, 177, 468, 490, 522, 600, 700.
Arnaf, with inflections of *Bôd*, 334 (1).
Arnold, T. K., quoted, 429, 445, 486, 758, 816, 817, 832, 839.
Article, 335–337; 394–415; before proper names, 416–418.
As, *es*, *ys*, prefixes, 93–95, *pp.* 125, 127, 128.
Aspirate sound, synopsis, 933–939.
At and *i*, distinction between, 736.
Au and *iau*, infin. term., 116.
Aufrecht, Dr., quoted, 99 *f. n.*, 172 *f. n.*, 932.
Auxiliary adverbs, 699–722.
—— pronouns, 519–521.
—— verbs, 281–288.

Aw changed into *o*, 22; 231; *p.* 133.
Awd or *od*=Portuguese *ada*, *pp.* 130, 131.

Bôd, conjugation of, 273–280; syntax of, 613, &c.
—— compounds of, 321.
Bôd and *fôd*, explained, 593.
Braidd, 698 (1).
Breton: *see* Armoric.
Bron, 698 (1).
Bŷth, 59; 350; 486 (*a*).
Byw, defective verb, 329, 330.

Cael or *caffael*, aux. verb, 286; 306; 612; main verb, 319, 320.
Can and *cant*, distinction between, 499.
Cardinal numbers, 177, 180; syntax of, 488–499.
Case absolute, 878, 879.
—— vocative, 455, 456.
Cases of nouns, 152.
Cause clause, how introduced, 774; expressed by infinitive, 777–781; by *y* and *yr*, *mai* and *taw*, 783; by *rhag*, 783 (1).
—— explanatory, 784–788.
Chwe and *chwech*, distinction between, 499.
Chwerthin, 322.
Clauses, 755–757.
Comparison of adjectives, 170, &c.; syntax of, 481–489.
Compound words, 76, 77.
—— nouns, pl. of, 130; gender of, 140.
—— adjectives, 154; gender of, 160; number of, 165, 169.
—— prepositions, 361, 370–373; 741, &c.
Concessive clause, definition of, 789; how introduced, 790; expressed by infinitive, 792–796; by *y* and *yr*, *mai* and *taw*, 797.
Conjunctional adverbs, 758, 759.
Conjunctions, classification of, 360; syntax of, 723–729.
Consonants, classified, 11–17.
—— mutations of, 23–26; syntactical, 28–33; etymological, 34–37; object of mutations, 29, 35; table and names of mutable, 31; further explanation, 880–886.
Cornish compared with Welsh, 177, 568 (*a*), 709.
Cy, *cym*, *cyn*, *cys*, prefixes, 89–92, *pp.* 125; 219.
Cyd, "although," 797.
Cyn and *mor*, 172; 691, 692.

Dan, partic. sign, 267; 673.
Darfod, aux. verb, 287.
Dau and *dwy*, 401; 493.
Davies, Dr., quoted, 440, 595, 700 *f.n.*
Defective verbs, 324–330.
"Definitive" and "indefinitive," explained, 617.
Deg and *deng*, distinction between, 499.
Degrees of comparison, 170, &c.
Demonstrative pronouns, 192–194; declension of, 195–200; with nouns, 202; position of, 203, 547.
Derivative consonants, 16.
—— words, 78.
—— nouns, pl. of, 121, &c.; gender of, 141, &c.
—— adjectives, 155; number, 165, 169.
Di and *dy*, prefixes, 88, *p.* 126.
Dianc, 322.
Dichon, aux. verb, 284.
Dim, 555, 689.
Diminutive terminations, 390.
Diphthongs, 19–22; quantity of, 63.
Dis and *dys*, prefixes, 88, 93, 95, *p.* 126.
Distance of place, 454, 740.
Do, in answers, 826, 830.
Double negatives, 688.
—— questions, 836.
Duration of time, 454, 740.
Dwyn, 322.
Dyfod, irreg. verb, 311, 312.
Dyfod yn, "to become," *p.* 224.
Dylwn, aux. verb, 283.
Dyma and *dyna*, demonstr. pron., 201, 551.
Dysgu, conjugated, 289–294; passive voice, 296–306.

Ebe, defective verb, 325.
Ef and *efe*, 514.
Effect clause, definition of, 813; headed by *fel*, &c., 814; by *oni*, *hyd oni*, &c., 815.
Eiddof, declension of, 210; syntax of, 535.
Ellipsis of copula, 644.
English compared with Welsh, 429, 485, 486, 580, 646.
Epithets in mid. sound, 422–425, 477.

Er and *erys*, distinction between, 737 (1).
Erbyn and *yn erbyn*, distinction, 737.
Erioed, 350.
Er pan, "since," 807.
Erys meityn and *erys talm*, distinction, 350.
Es, prefix, 93–95, *p.* 127; fem. suffix, 137, *p.* 130.
Eu, not *au*, in *angeu*, &c., 102.
Explanatory cause clause, 784–788.

Fawr, indef. pron., 568 (6).
Fe, aux. pron., 519.
Ff and *Ph*, 101.
Future tense, 3rd pers. sing., *p.* 79 *f. n.*

Gaelic compared with Welsh, 177, 468.
Gallu, aux. verb, 282.
Gan, partic. sign, 267, 672.
Gan, *â*, and *gyda* (prep.), distinguished, 735.
Gan and *oddi wrth* (prep.), distinguished, 742 (1).
Genitive case, 434–416.
—— mere apposition, 437–441.
—— equivalent to an adj., 408, 441.
—— preceded by *o*, 442, 443.
—— partitive, 444.
—— objective, 445.
—— of personal pronoun, 187 (*b*).
Genyf, with inflections of *Bôd*, 331–334.
Gilydd, 189.
Greek compared with Welsh, 134, 224, 225, 267 *f. n.*, 332, 350, 429, 478, 646, 659, 761.
Gwneyd or *gwneuthur*, aux. verb, 287; main verb (irreg.), 313, 314.
Gwybod (irreg.), 315, 316.
Gyda, *â*, and *gan*, distinguished, 735.

H, the use of, 40, 96, 96 (1); preceded by *yr*, not *y*, 394.
Hâd and *hau* (suffixes), accent, 40, 41.
"Have," its equivalents, 319, 320; 331, 332.
"Having," how expressed in Welsh, 333, 674.
Holl and *oll*, explained, 556.
Hughes, T. J., quoted, 190, 282, 445, 571, 659, 666, 672, 838.
Hun or *hunan*, 188, 600.
Hwde or *hwre*, defective verb, 327.
Hwy and *hwynt*, 517.
Hyn, *hyny*, 549, 550.

I, before infin. mood, 664.
I, as consonant, 69, 398.
I and *at*, distinction between, 736.
I and *u* (verbal endings), distinction between, 231.
Ië, in answers, 829–831.
Iff, *ith*, and *yth*, coll. verbal endings, *p.* 80 (*b*).
Ill, 212.
Immutable consonants, 14, 887.
Impersonal verb, 223; how rendered into English, 310 *f. n.*
Indefinite pronouns, 213–218; syntax of, 551–568.
Inference clause, defined, 840.
Infinitive, formation of, 226–231; government of, 590, 668.
—— passive, 304–306; 608–612.
—— various uses of, 658–661.
—— gender of, 148; preceded by *i*, 664.
—— as principal verb, 665; 761–768; 777–781; 792–796.
—— connected to a finite verb, 666, 667.
Interjections, 382–385; syntax of, 751–754.
Interrogative pronouns, 206–208.
Interrogative clause: predicative questions defined, 817; interr. particles, 818–825; answers to predicative questions, 826–831; nominal questions defined, 832; *pwy* and *pa*, 833; *pa* omitted, 834, 835; double questions, 836.
Intervenient word, 594, 595.
Irish compared with Welsh, 177, 273, 404, 418, 468, 474 (1), 542, 580.
Irregular verbs, 308–320.
—— adjectives, 175.
I'w, 209.

Johnes, A. J., quoted, *p.* 2 *f. n.*, *p.* 127 *f. n.*

Latin compared with Welsh, 134, 174 *f. n.*, 211, 332, 559.
Letters, sounds of, 2; foreign, 6; double, 7; classification of, 9–17.

Ll, after article, 401; after *un*, 493; after "*yn* apposition," 650; after "*yn* adverbial," 931.
Llâs=lluddwyd, 323.
Llewelyn, Dr., quoted, 28, 29.

Mae, syntax of, 621–632; 639 (1), 639 (2).
Mai and *taw* (conj.), 772, 773.
Marw, defective verb, 329, 330.
Mau (poss. pr.), 211, 534.
"May" and "might," how rendered, *pp.* 68, 69.
Measure, 454.
Medd, defective verb, 324.
Medru, aux. verb, 282.
Mewn and *yn*, distinction between, 732.
Mi, aux. pron., 520, 521.
Middle sound, synopsis, 888–930.
Mo, aux. negative, 689; 750 *c*).
Mo honof, 689; 750 *c*).
Moes, defective verb, 328.
Mood, definition of, 245–250.
—— formation of infinitive, 226–231.
—— formation of finite, 232–244.
Motive clause, definition of, 809; introduced by *fel*, &c., 810; by *i*, &c., 811; by *rhag*, 812.
Mp=mm, 99.
Mutable consonants, 15, 24–26, 31, 880–886; retaining rad. sound, 888, &c.; assuming middle, 888–930; assuming nasal, 931, 932; assuming aspirate, 933–939.
Myned (irreg.), 309, 310.
Myned yn, "to become," *p.* 226.
Mynu, aux. verb, 288.

Na, *nac*, 682; 724–726.
Na, *nad*, *nas*, 680; 687.
Na, *nag*, 724–726.
Na ddo, in answers, 826, 830 (1).
Nage, in answers, 829, 831 (1), 832.
Nasal sound, synopsis, 931, 932.
Nc and *ngc*, 100.
Neb, 568.
Ni, *na*, *oni*, government, 913.
Ni, *nid*, *nis*, 680, 681, 683.
Nid and *nad* before consonants, 683.
Nominative case, 431–433.
Nouns, terminations of, 387–391.
—— number of, 111; formation of pl., 112–130; pl. of derivative, 121, 122; pl. of compound, 130; sing. from pl., 132.
Nouns, gender of, 133–135; of animate objects, 136, 137; of inanimate objects, 138; of primitive nouns, 139; of compound, 140; of derivative, 141–146; of proper names, 147.
—— in apposition, 419–430.
Nt=nn, 99.
N. W. and S. W., difference between, 149, 238, 273 *f. n.*, 327, 332, 549, 735, 772.
Number of nouns, 111–132.
—— of adjectives, 164–169.
Numerals, cardinal, 177, 180; (syntax) gender of, 488; number of, 489; position of, 490; government of, 491–497.
—— ordinal, 178, 180; syntax of, 500–502.
—— adverbial, 179, 180.

O, *od*, *os*, 841–844, 846; 850, 851.
O and *io=aw* and *iaw* (verbal term.), 231.
O na (wish), 838.
Od (pl. suffix), 116.
O, *oddi ar*, *oddi wrth*, distinguished, 742.
Oddi wrth and *gan*, distinguished, 742 (1).
—— and *rhag*, distinguished, 742 (2).
Oddigerth and *oddi eithr*, 843, 845; 847; 852.
Oes, syntax of, 632, 633; 639 (2).
O honof, 187; 666, 667; 750.
Oi (verbal suffix), accent, 42.
On and *ion* (pl. term.), 116.
Oni, *onid*, *onis* (interr.), 820, 821, 824, 825; (supp.) 843, 844; 847; 852.
Onid do? 830.
Onide? 830.
Optative Mood, *pp.* 68, 69; 81–83; 90–92.
Ordinal numerals, 178, 180; syntax of, 500–502.
"Or not," how translated, 836.
Orthography, 79–104.

Pa and *pwy*, 206–208, 833.
Pa . . bynag and *pwy bynag*, 205, 855, 861.
Pan, 807.
Participles, formation of, 266–272; of *Bôd*, 277; of *Dysgu* (active) 295, (pass.) 307; syntax of, 669-675.

Passive voice of *Bôd*, 278–280.
—— of *Dysgu*, 296–306.
Pe, *ped*, *pes*, 847–849; 850–851.
Peidio, 285, 765 (1), 836, *p.* 227.
Perfect subjunctive, how expressed, *pp.* 69, 91.
Personal pronoun, forms of, 184–187.
—— connected with verbs, 504–518; with nouns, 522; with prepositions, 523, 524.
—— apposition and government of, 525–528.
—— reflective, 188, 529, 533.
—— reciprocal, 189.
—— auxiliary, 519–521.
Pettwn, &c., "if I were," *p.* 68 *f. n.*
Piau, defective verb, 326.
Pl. pron. for sing., 530.
Po, 486.
Pob and *Pawb*, 561, 562.
Pobl and *pobloedd*, 893, 902.
Point of time, 454, 740.
Possessive pronoun, 209–212; position, 531; emphatic, 532, 533; government, 537–545.
—— before verbs, 598–608; contracted forms, 599, 603 (*b*), 700, 719.
Prefixes, 86–95, 386.
Prepositions, classification of, 361.
—— government of simple, 362–369.
—— government of compound, 370–373.
—— syntax of, 730–746.
—— after verbs, &c., general rules, 750 (1), &c.; alphabetical list, 750 (4).
Primitive nouns, pl. of, 113, &c.; gender of, 139.
—— adjectives, 153; gender of, 158, 159; number of, 165–167.
Prin, 698 (1).
Progressive verbs, 265.
Pronominal prepositions, 361, 374–380; syntax of, 747–750.
Proper names, gender of, 147; how governed, 457–461.
Pughe, Dr. W. O., quoted, 5, 83, 161, 290 *f. n.*, *p.* 124, *p.* 132, 471, 504, 677, 689, 724.
Pum and *pump*, distinction between, 499.

Quantity of words, 57; of monosyllables, 58–62; of diphthongs, 63; of penults, 64–69.
Question: *see* Interr. clause.

Reciprocal pronouns, 189.
Reflective pronouns, 188; 529, 533.
—— verb, how formed, 224, *p.* 128.
Relative pronouns, 204, 205; (syntax) simple and indefinite, 853–856; *a'r* and *ag*, 857–859; *yr hyn*, 860; agreement, 861–863; position, 864–865; omission of antecedent, 866, 867; omission of relative, 868–872.
—— possessive case of, 873–876.
—— negative particles after, 877.
Rh, after article, 401; after *un*, 493; after "*yn* apposition," 650; after "*yn* adverbial," 931.
Rhag and *oddi wrth*, distinguished, 742 (2).
Rhag, "because," 783 (1).
Rhag, "lest," 812.
Rhai and *rhyw*, 563, 564.
Rhaid, aux. verb, 285.

"Should" = ought to, how expressed, *pp.* 69, 70.
Simple prepositions, 361–369.
Sing. from pl. nouns, 132.
Spelling of words, 79–104.
Subjunctive mood, 612 (1), &c.; 763–766 (1); 810–812; 837, 838; 848, 849.
Substantives: *see* Nouns.
Supposition clause, how divided, 839.
—— fact, 841, 842.
—— contingent, 843–846.
—— non-fact, 847–849.
Sydd, syntax of, 615–620, 639 (3), 643.
Syllables, 70–73.
Synopsis of *mae*, *sydd*, *yw*, *oes*, 631 (1), &c.

Tan, "until," 807.
Tau, poss. pron., 211; 534.
Terminations of infinitive verbs, 229, 230.
—— of finite verbs, active, 290.
—— of finite verbs, passive, 297.
—— nouns, 387–391.
—— adjectives, 392, 393.
Time clause, how introduced, 798; expressed by finite verb, 800; by finite or infinitive, 801–804.
Tra, "whilst," 806 *f. n.*
Transitive clause, defined, 758.
—— conjugation of, 273, 294, 306.
—— expressed by infinitive, 761–768.

Transitive clause, expressed by *y* or *yr* with finite verb, 769–771.
—— expressed by *mai* or *taw* with finite verb, 772, 773.
—— initial consonant in *mid.* sound, 592, 593.
Tua and *tuag at*, distinguished, 736 (1).

Un and *yr un*, 566.

Verbs, divisions of, 219–224; formation of finite tenses, 225, 232–244; definition of tenses, 251–265.
—— conjugation of *Bôd*, 273–280; aux. verbs, 281–288; *Dysgu*, 291–306; irregular verbs, 309–320; defective verbs, 324–330 (2).
—— (syntax) agreement with nom., 569–579; 640–643; position, 580–588; government, 589–593.
—— followed by particular prep., 750 (1)–750 (4).
Vocative case, 455, 456.
Vowels, 10; inflections of, 18, 22, 113, 118, 159, 166, 227, 234, 240, 241.
—— omission of (in tenses), 242–244.

W, as consonant, 69, 396.
"Whether or," how translated, 836.
Wish clause, various forms of, 837, 838.
Words, how divided, 71–73; primitive, 75; compound, 76, 77; derivative, 78.
Wrth, after verbs, &c., *pp.* 220, 221.
Wyf=ydwyf, &c., *p.* 65 *f. n.*

Y, sounds of, 2–4.
Y and *yr*, article, 335–337, 394–418.
Y and *yr*, aux. adv., 597, 707–722; 806.
Y and *yr*, conjunction, 770, 771.
Yd, in *ydwyf*, &c., *p.* 65 *f. n.*
Ym, prefix, 224, *p.* 128, *p.* 219.
Ym for *yn*, 97, 733.
Yn participial, 267; 671; 734.
Yn apposition, 426; 646–657; 734.
Yn adverbial, 345, 734.
Yn preposition, 97, 98, 734.
Yn and *mewn*, distinguished, 732.
Yng for *yn*, 98, 733.
Yr hyn (rel.), 205, 860.
Ys (verb), 278; (prefix), *p.* 128.
Ysgwyd, 322.
Yw or *ydyw*, syntax of, 634–639; 639 (4), 639 (5); 642; 644.

THE END.

RHESTR O LYFRAU

CYHOEDDEDIG

Gan Hughes & Son, Wrexham.

TRAETHODAU LLENYDDOL: gan LEWIS EDWARDS, D.D., Bala. *Mewn llian*, 8*s.* 6*c.*; *haner-rhwym*, 10*s.*

TRAETHODAU DUWINYDDOL: gan LEWIS EDWARDS, D.D., Bala. *Mewn llian*, 9*s.*; *haner-rhwym*, 10*s.* 6*c.*

CANWYLL Y CYMRU: gan y Parch. RHYS PRICHARD. Y Seren Foreu neu Ganwyll y Cymry; sef Gwaith Prydyddol y Parch. Rhys Prichard, M.A., gynt Ficer Llanymddyfri; gyda lluaws o Nodiadau eglurhaol a hanesyddol helaeth. Y mae yn cynnwys hefyd FYWGRAFFIAD YR AWDWR, gan y diweddar Barch RICE REES, o Goleg Dewi Sant; gyda darlun hardd o *Y Neuadd, Llanymddyfri*, gynt anneddle y Ficer Prichard, yn y flwyddyn 1644. Y Trydydd Argraffiad—*Mewn llian, pris* 5*s.* 6*c.*

EOS CEIRIOG: gan HUW MORUS. Casgliad o bêrganiadau yr hen brif-fardd o Bont-y-Meibion, Llanarmon-Dyffryn-Ceiriog, wedi ei ranu yn ddau lyfr; y mae ynddo gywyddau, mabinogion, hanesion, priodolion, moesolion, galar-gwynion, dwyfolion, ac englynion. Yn ychwanegol at hyn y mae Cynullydd y gwaith, sef y diweddar *Gwallter Mechain*, wedi rhoddi braslun o fuchedd a nodwedd yr awdwr, ac eglurhad ar y gwahanol fesurau arferedig yn nghorff y gwaith, gyda lluaws o nodiadau hanesyddol ac eglurhaol gwerthfawr. *Haner-rhwym, pris* 6*s.* *(pris cyntefig*, 12*s.)*

COLL GWYNFA: gan JOHN MILTON. Cyfieithiad o "*Paradise Lost*," John Milton. Gyda Chofiant, a sylwadau ar ei athrylith, ynghyda nodiadau eglurhaol. Gan I D. FFRAID. Y mae y llyfr wedi ei addurno â Cherfluniau prydferth. *Mewn llian hardd, pris* 5*s.*

Y DEONGLYDD BERNIADOL: gan y Parch. JOHN JONES *(Idrisyn)*. Y mae yn cynnwys eglurhad manwl ar bob adnod yn y TESTAMENT NEWYDD, er gwasanaeth yr Ysgolion Sabbothol ac addysg deuluaidd. Y mae wedi ei loffa o weithiau oddeutu 250 o brif Dduwinyddion a Berniaid y byd; megys Watson, Benson, Burns, Coke, Clarke, Pool, Macknight, Scott, Guyse, Doddridge, &c., &c. Argraffiad Newydd—*I'w gael mewn* 13*eg o Ranau am* 13*s.* 6*c.*; *neu mewn croen llo hardd*, 17*s.*

DEONGLYDD BERNIADOL AR YR HEN DESTAMENT: gan yr un Awdwr. Yn y Wasg.

GWYRTHIAU YR ARGLWYDD IESU: gan O. Evans, Llanbrynmair. Y mae ynddo DRAETHAWD ARWEINIOL, yn cynnwys Chwech o Bennodau dan y teitlau canlynol:—"Desgrifiad o Wyrth." "Y Gwyrthiau yn deilwng o bob crediniaeth." "Dybenion y Gwyrthiau." "Eu Dosbarthiad." "Y gwahaniaeth rhwng Gwyrthiau Crist a Gwyrthiau eraill." "Dilaniad y Doniau Gwyrthiol." Gyda Thair-ar-ddeg o Bregethau neu Ddarlithiau. *Mewn llian hardd*, 3*s.* 6*c.*

DAMMEGION YR ARGLWYDD IESU: gan O. Evans, Llanbrynmair. [*Awdwr y gyfrol ar "Wyrthiau Crist."*] Yn cynnwys TRAETHAWD ARWEINIOL, wedi ei ranu yn bennodau ar y materion canlynol:—"Natur a Nodwedd Dammeg." "Paham y llefarai yr Iesu ar Ddammegion." "Deongliad Dammegion." "Cipolwg ar drefn a chynnwysiad y Dammegion." "Dammegion y Rabbiniaid Iuddewig a'r Tadau Eglwysig." Gyda Deg-ar-hugain o Bregethau neu Ddarlithiau beirniadol, eglurhaol, ymarferol, ac addysgiadol. *Mewn llian hardd*, 3*s.* 6*c.*

ARWEINIAD I'R EFENGYLAU: gan y Parch. G. Parry. Y mae yn cynnwys Pennodau ar—Gwrthddrych yr Efengylau; Parotoadau Rhagluniaethol i'r Efengyl; Gweithrediadau Rhagluniaeth gyffredinol y byd, a Rhagluniaeth neilldluol yr Iachawdwriaeth; Tarddiad, Awduriaeth, Cyfansoddiad, Dilysrwydd, Gwiredd, Nodweddion Gwahaniaethol, a Chysondeb yr Efengylau. Gydag ATTODIAD: yr hwn a gynnwysa Nodiadau ar iaith gyffredin ein Harglwydd a'i Ddysgyblion, ac iaith wreiddiol Matthew; Parhad tymhor gweinidogaeth gyhoeddus ein Hiachawdwr, ac amser y Pasg diweddaf; Ymosodiadau diweddar ar yr Efengylau, yn nghydag Attebion iddynt. *Mewn llian, pris* 3*s.*

DYDD-LYFR Y FRENHINES: gan y Parch. J. Jones (*Idrisyn*). Dalenau o Ddydd-lyfr bywyd y Frenhines yn yr Ucheldiroedd, o 1848 hyd 1861, at y rhai y rhagddodwyd ac y chwanegwyd pigion o'r un Dydd-lyfr yn rhoddi hanes am Ymweliadau Blaenorol â'r Alban, a Theithiau yn Lloegr a'r Iwerddon. *Mewn amlen, pris* 1*s.* (250 o dudalenau—*pris cyntefig*, 2*s.* 6*c.*)

"CYMRU FU:" Yn cynnwys Hanesion, Traddodiadau, Chwedlau a Dammegion Cymreig, &c., &c. Wedi eu hysgrifenu gan Gwilym Hiraethog, Glasynys, Nicander, Cynddelw, Ceiriog, a'r Golygydd. *Yn Bedair Rhan, Swllt yr Un. Mewn llian*, 5*s.*

HANES PRYDAIN FAWR: gan y Parch. T. Levi. Sef ei hanes yn ei Chodiad, ei Chynydd, a'i Mawredd; yn nghyda Braslun o'i Chyfansoddiad, ei Llywodraeth, a'i Chyfreithiau. *Mewn llian, pris* 4*s.* 6*c.*—yn cynwys 585 o dudalenau.

Y LLYTHYR YSGRIFYDD Saesoneg a Chymraeg, at wasanaeth Boneddigion a Boneddigesau. Yn cynnwys esiamplau o Lythyrau ar—Gyfeillgarwch, Carwriaeth, Masnach, Sefyllfaoedd, ac amrywiol destunau ereill; Nodau Cyfarchiadol, Cyfarwyddiadau i wneuthur Ewyllysiau, Talysgrifau, Biliau; Cyfarwyddwr y Gohebydd, Talfyriadau defnyddiol, &c. Mae yr holl Lythyrau hyn yn gyfaddas i'r amser presenol. *Mewn amlen*, 1*s.*; *llian*, 1*s.* 6*c.*

DATE DUE

MAY 2 1 2004

JUN 2 2 2004

GAYLORD #3523PI Printed in USA

PB2121 .R88
A grammar of the Welsh language, based
Princeton Theological Seminary–Speer Library
1 1012 00027 1769